



## Terms and Conditions of Use of Digitised Theses from Trinity College Library Dublin

### Copyright statement

All material supplied by Trinity College Library is protected by copyright (under the Copyright and Related Rights Act, 2000 as amended) and other relevant Intellectual Property Rights. By accessing and using a Digitised Thesis from Trinity College Library you acknowledge that all Intellectual Property Rights in any Works supplied are the sole and exclusive property of the copyright and/or other IPR holder. Specific copyright holders may not be explicitly identified. Use of materials from other sources within a thesis should not be construed as a claim over them.

A non-exclusive, non-transferable licence is hereby granted to those using or reproducing, in whole or in part, the material for valid purposes, providing the copyright owners are acknowledged using the normal conventions. Where specific permission to use material is required, this is identified and such permission must be sought from the copyright holder or agency cited.

### Liability statement

By using a Digitised Thesis, I accept that Trinity College Dublin bears no legal responsibility for the accuracy, legality or comprehensiveness of materials contained within the thesis, and that Trinity College Dublin accepts no liability for indirect, consequential, or incidental, damages or losses arising from use of the thesis for whatever reason. Information located in a thesis may be subject to specific use constraints, details of which may not be explicitly described. It is the responsibility of potential and actual users to be aware of such constraints and to abide by them. By making use of material from a digitised thesis, you accept these copyright and disclaimer provisions. Where it is brought to the attention of Trinity College Library that there may be a breach of copyright or other restraint, it is the policy to withdraw or take down access to a thesis while the issue is being resolved.

### Access Agreement

By using a Digitised Thesis from Trinity College Library you are bound by the following Terms & Conditions. Please read them carefully.

I have read and I understand the following statement: All material supplied via a Digitised Thesis from Trinity College Library is protected by copyright and other intellectual property rights, and duplication or sale of all or part of any of a thesis is not permitted, except that material may be duplicated by you for your research use or for educational purposes in electronic or print form providing the copyright owners are acknowledged using the normal conventions. You must obtain permission for any other use. Electronic or print copies may not be offered, whether for sale or otherwise to anyone. This copy has been supplied on the understanding that it is copyright material and that no quotation from the thesis may be published without proper acknowledgement.



A  
BIOGRAPHICAL DICTIONARY  
OF THE  
MEMBERSHIP  
OF THE  
IRISH HOUSE OF COMMONS,  
1640-1641

Volume 1



# Trinity College Library Dublin



University of Dublin

THIS THESIS MAY BE READ ONLY  
IN THE LIBRARY

Trinity College Library College Street Dublin 2 Ireland

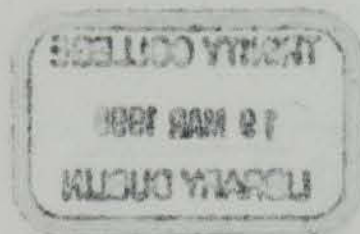
Bound by:  
THE  
THESIS CENTRE  
65 Camden St. Lwr.,  
Dublin 2. Ph. 4753616







A  
BIOGRAPHICAL DICTIONARY  
OF THE  
MEMBERSHIP  
OF THE  
IRISH HOUSE OF COMMONS,  
1640-1641



BRID MCGRATH  
B.A. Mod., M. Litt., D.L.I.S.

A Thesis submitted to the School of History  
in the University of Dublin for the  
Degree of *Philosophae Doctor*.

September 1997



A  
BIOGRAPHICAL DICTIONARY  
OF THE  
MEMBERSHIP  
OF THE  
IRISH HOUSE OF COMMONS



*Thesis*  
4991.1

FRID MCGRATH  
B.A. M.A., M.Litt., D.Lit.

A Thesis submitted to the School of Trinity  
in the University of Dublin for the  
Degree of Philosophiae Doctor

September 1997



# A BIOGRAPHICAL DICTIONARY OF THE MEMBERSHIP OF THE IRISH HOUSE OF COMMONS, 1801-1848

Brid McGrath

## SUMMARY

This thesis examines the membership of the 1801 Irish House of Commons up to November 1848. It identifies those who were members of the House at that time, matches them to their biographies, where appropriate, and provides biographical information on each of them. It provides similar information on those who were members of the House of Commons in the United Kingdom between 1801 and 1848.

## DECLARATION

This thesis was written under the direction of Aidan Clarke, M.A., Ph.D., F.T.C.D., M.R.I.A., during 1987 - 1997. It is entirely my own work, and has not been submitted as an exercise for a degree at this or any other university.

## METHODOLOGY

I agree that the Library may lend or copy this thesis on request.

The methodology involved drawing up the most complete list of MPs that was possible, consulting a wide range of published and unpublished sources (genealogical material, local histories, newspapers, collections of letters and papers, etc.) and using the Depositions to assist in such information. The information was collated into a biographical sketch of each member and was analysed under a variety of headings (birth, origin, age and date of family, education, previous parliamentary experience and local connections) to provide composite information about the members. The appendix also includes an analysis of Irish parliamentary representation between 1800 and 1848, broken down by constituency, showing the way that representation changed in each area.

Brid McGrath

## FINDINGS

The major findings of the thesis are in the introduction, contained in each chapter, which outline in brief a picture of the Irish political environment on the eve of the outbreak of the 1848 revolution. It was possible to establish the identities of 90% of the members and the constituency of all of the members. This compares well with an earlier study of the 1801 House of Commons (which identified 80% of the members).

# **A BIOGRAPHICAL DICTIONARY OF THE MEMBERSHIP OF THE IRISH HOUSE OF COMMONS, 1640-1641**

**Brid M<sup>c</sup>Grath**

## **SUMMARY**

This thesis examines the membership of the 1640 Irish House of Commons up to November 1641. It identifies 288 men who were members of the House at that time, matches them to their constituencies, where appropriate, and provides biographical information on each of them. It provides similar information on three other men who were returned to the house but either did not take their seats, or the date of whose return remains unknown.

## **METHODOLOGY**

The methodology involved drawing up the most comprehensive list of m.p.s that was possible, consulting a wide range of published and unpublished sources (genealogical material, educational records, property transactions, collections of letters and papers, parliamentary records and other materials (e.g. the Depositions)) to locate as much information as possible about each m.p. This information was collated into a biographical sketch of each member and also analysed under a variety of headings (ethnic origins, age and place in family, education, previous parliamentary experience and local connections) to provide composite information about the members. The appendix also includes an analysis of Irish parliamentary representation between 1560 and 1640, broken down by constituency, showing the way that representation changed in each area.

## **FINDINGS**

The major findings of the thesis lie in the information collected on each member, which combine to form a picture of the Irish political community on the eve of the outbreak of the 1641 rebellion. It was possible to establish the identities of 96.9% of the members and the families of all of the others. This compares well with an earlier study of the 1613 Commons, in which two (0.8%)



m.p.s remained unidentified and 8 others (3%) for whom information was available on their families only.

It also provides some analysis of the groupings within the parliament e.g. the administration's clients and supporters, groups of m.p.s of Scottish or Gaelic origin, and groupings associated with other significant figures (e.g. the earl of Cork, Sir William Parsons and the Loftuses).

Finally, it was also possible to identify for the first time the constituencies for which a number of prominent m.p.s sat. Most significantly, these included Patrick Darcy, whose return indicates the extraordinary extent of co-operation between the new English and old English / Gaelic political communities in early 1641.

The study confirms the strong cohesion of the old English community and its growing closeness to the prominent Gaelic families, and also the developing and heterogeneous local protestant communities throughout Ireland, a phenomenon suggested also by the contents of the *Depositions*. The study shows high levels of local integration of the m.p.s and a surprisingly high level in the case of the protestants. An overwhelming 91.7% of catholic county members had two or more local connections (property / residence, family connections or local office) and 82.9% of the catholic burgesses had at least two local ties, compared with 91.3% of protestant county members and 42.4% of protestant burgesses.

## Appendix Volume Two

Depositions of James Hamilton and others	A1
Calendar of Depositions	A4
Index of Depositions and other material in Ireland	A50
Age and County Family	A56
Education	A58
Parliamentary Representation	A59
Local Connections	A61
References to the Depositions	A62
Index	A63

# CONTENTS

	Page
Dedication	2
Acknowledgements	3
Abbreviations	5
Biographical Abbreviations	6
Alphabetical List of M.P.s	7
Introduction	15
Chapter One	
Irish Parliaments	25
Chapter Two	
Biographies of M.P.s	48
 <b>Appendix (Volume Two)</b>	
Biographies of Karnes, Hamilton and Schout	A1
Constituency Profiles	A4
Ethnic Origin and date of arrival in Ireland	A66
Age and Place in Family	A76
Education	A94
Previous Parliamentary Experience	A106
Local Connections	A113
References to the biographies	A125
Bibliography	A192



## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

It gives me great pleasure to acknowledge the many types of assistance which I received in writing this thesis.

This thesis is dedicated to the postgraduate study award from the University of Dublin, which enabled me to resign my job in Liverpool and come back to Dublin to begin work on this study. This grant was worth more than money to my mother, Bernie McGrath, for all she has done for me, especially for the interest in history which she first inspired in me. The College also awarded me a bursary from the Grace Lawless Lot Fund which enabled me to spend my husband Simon Devilly, who did not even mind my visiting archives on our honeymoon and my research benefited greatly from the time I was able to spend in England that summer.

and to our beautiful son, Oisín Devilly.

I originally intended to study the members of both the 1634 and 1642 Irish House of Commons. The amount of information available on the members of these Houses was, however, far too much to be dealt with in one thesis. I am grateful to Prof. Geoffrey Parker who suggested the focusing on the later parliament only, and thus ensured that this work would actually be completed. The research for the 1634 Commons has, however, been used extensively in the biographies of all the members, as well as in the appendix.

I am grateful to the many librarians and archivists whose services I used in the research for this thesis including the staff of the library of Trinity College Dublin, especially Charles Berens, Keeper of Early Printed Books, and Felicity O'Mahony of the Manuscripts Department; the National Library of Ireland, the National Archives (Dublin), the Royal Irish Academy, especially Seamus O'Malley, Michael McCarthy of Archbishop Marsh's Library, the reverend fathers of St. Peter's College, Weston and St. Kieran's College, Kilmaley. I remember with particular pleasure and sadness my visits to the C. P. O. School Library in Cahel and my friendship with the late Rev. David MacDonagh, Dean of Cahel, a remarkable man whose appreciation for the value of his library greatly enhanced the pleasure of using that library.



## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

It gives me great pleasure to acknowledge the many types of assistance which I received in writing this thesis.

I wish firstly to acknowledge the postgraduate study award from the University of Dublin, which enabled me to resign my job in Limerick and come back to Dublin to begin work on this study. This grant was worth more than money to me, as it indicated confidence in my ability as a historian and I will always be grateful to Trinity College for making this award to me. The College also awarded me a bursary from the Grace Lawless Lee Fund which enabled me to spend the summer of 1988 in Cambridge, using the Bradshaw Collection and other resources; I know that my research benefited greatly from the time I was able to spend in England that summer.

I originally intended to study the members of both the 1634 and 1640-2 Irish House of Commons. The amount of information available on the members of these Houses was, however, far too much to be dealt with in one thesis. I am grateful to Prof. Geoffrey Parker who suggested concentrating on the later parliament only, and thus ensured that this work would actually be completed. The research for the 1634 Commons has, however, been used extensively in the biographies of all the members, as well as in the appendix.

I am grateful to the many librarians and archivists whose services I used in the research for this thesis, including the staff of the library of Trinity College Dublin, especially Charles Benson, Keeper of Early Printed Books, and Felicity O'Mahony of the Manuscripts Department; the National Library of Ireland, the National Archives (Dublin), the Royal Irish Academy, especially Siobhan O'Rafferty, Muriel McCarthy of Archbishop Marsh's Library, the reverend fathers in St. Peter's College, Wexford and St. Kieran's College, Kilkenny. I remember with particular pleasure and sadness my visits to the G.P.A. Bolton Library in Cashel and my friendship with the late Rev. David Woodworth, Dean of Cashel, a remarkable man whose appreciation for the treasures in his keeping greatly enhanced the pleasure of using that library.



In Britain, the staffs of the British Library, Public Records Office, London, the Bodleian Library Oxford, the University Library, Cambridge, the Lincolnshire Archives Office, Cheshire Records Office and the Advocates Library in Scotland all provided access to their collections.

It gives me particular pleasure to thank the very courteous and knowledgeable staff of the Nottinghamshire Records Office.

For accommodation in Britain, I am grateful to my sister Siobhan and to Danielle Byrne.

For encouragement and support I am very grateful to Dr. Jane Ohlmeyer, Charles Benson, Siobhan O'Rafferty, Danielle Byrne and my mother, Bernie McGrath, who even brought me to John Wandesford's *quondam* residence, Aleppo. Research can be a lonely path; I am especially grateful to David Hayton and especially Jane Ohlmeyer for the benefit of many stimulating conversations on the nature of early 17th. century Ireland and on sources.

My husband and son, Simon and Oisín Devilly, provided all the love and distractions that prevented this thesis's earlier submission. I am grateful to the last little Devilly for allowing me to finish it this time.

Finally, I am especially grateful to my supervisor, Prof. Aidan Clarke, for his unfailing wisdom, knowledge, support and especially his quiet confidence that this thesis would eventually be completed. Prof. Clarke has been my teacher for more than 20 years and I know how great is my debt to him for all his learning, kindness and constant good humour.



## BIBLIOGRAPHICAL ABBREVIATIONS

M.p.s returned to the 1640 parliament who are referred to in the text are denominated by an asterisk (\*), indicating that fuller information about them may be found in the biographies. The following abbreviations are used in the biographies:

s.	son (usually with a number, e.g. 2 s. (2nd. son) 3s. (3rd. son) &c.)
s.s.	surviving son (usually with a number, e.g. 2 s. (2nd. son) &c.)
e.s.	elder or eldest son
e.s.s.	eldest surviving son
o.s.	only son
coh.	co-heir(ess)
b.	born
m.	married
rem.	remarried
bur.	buried
w.	widow
unm.	unmarried
da.	daughter
o.s.p.	obivit vita patris (died before his father)
d.	died
+	(usually with date) after
-	(usually with date) before
c.	circa
ed.	educated
Kt.	knighted
Bart.	created baronet or succeeded to a baronetcy

In the list of m.p.s, protestants are denominated by italics.

A number of editions of the *Irish Commons Journals* was published in the eighteenth century; for simplicity, all references to the *Journals'* are given as dates of proceedings, rather than page numbers.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Gribbon, H.D., 'Journals of the Irish House of Commons.' in *An Leabharlann*, 2nd. ser., 2(2), (1985). pp 51-56.



## BIBLIOGRAPHICAL ABBREVIATIONS

- Hughes Hughes, J. *Patentee officers in Ireland, 1173-1826*. (Dublin, 1960).
- Cal. Clarendon *Calendar of the Clarendon state papers preserved in the Bodleian Library*. 5 vols. (Oxford, 1872-1970).
- Cal.S.P. Dom. *Calendar of state papers preserved in the Public Record Office, domestic series, 1547-1695*. 81 vols. (London, 1856-1972).
- Cal.S.P.Ire. *Calendar of the State papers relating to Ireland, 1509-1670*. 24 vols. (London, 1860-1912).
- Census Pender, S. (ed.), *A Census of Ireland circa 1659, with supplementary material from the poll money ordnances (1660-1661)*. (Dublin, 1939).
- Denization Shaw, W.A., (ed.), *Letters of denization and acts of naturalisation for aliens in England and Ireland, 1603-1700*. (Lymington, 1911).
- Gilbert, *Confederation*, Gilbert, J.T. (ed.), *History of the Irish confederation, and the war in Ireland, 1641-1653*. 7 vols., (Dublin, 1882-91).
- Hogan, *Letters and papers*, Hogan, J., *Letters and papers relating to the Irish rebellion. between 1642-46*. (Dublin, 1936).
- Jennings, *Wild Geese*, Jennings, B. (ed.), *Wild Geese in Spannish Flanders.*, (Dublin, 1964).
- Knowler, *Strafford letters*. Knowler, W. (ed.), *The Earl of Strafford's letters and dispatches*. 2 vols. (London, 1739).
- Lismore Papers Grossart, A.B., (ed.), *Lismore Papers.*, 10 vols. (London, 1886-8).
- McGrath, 1613. McGrath, B., *The membership of the Irish house of commons, 1613-15*. (M.Litt. thesis, University of Dublin, 1986).
- Cal. Inq. Lagenia *Inquisitionum in officio rotulorum cancellariae Hiberniae*  
Cal. Inq. Ultonia *asservatarum repertorium*. 2 vols. (Dublin, 1826-1829).
- Rot. Pat. Car., Morrin, J. (ed.), *Calendar of the patent and close rolls of chancery in Ireland*. vol. 3 (Charles) (Dublin, 1861).



## LIST OF M.P.S

Names given in italics denote m.p.s who were protestant at the time of their return to the Commons.

§ Denotes returned in by-election.

\$ Denotes left the house (died, resigned, inherited title of honour or was unseated or expelled) between March 1640 and November 1641.

Constituencies given in parentheses indicate that the identity of the m.p.'s seat has been assumed. See chapter one for the process of deduction.

This list is based on the following sources:

*Commons Journals* (Ireland).

ENGLAND: Parliament: House of Commons, *Lists of members' returns.*

*Members of Parliament, Part 1, Parliaments of England, 1213-1702, Part 2*

*Parliaments of Great Britain ...* (London, 1878).

Young, R.M., *The Town book of the corporation of Belfast, 1613-1816.* (Belfast, 1892). (Wenman's return).

N.L.I. MS. 19,171, f. 319 (Clonmel town book).

*H.M.C. Egmont* (Dobbin's return for Askeaton)

Clarke, A., *The Old English in Ireland, 1625-42.* (London, 1964).

Kearney, H.F., *Strafford, in Ireland, 1633-41: a study in absolutism.* (Manchester, 1959).

Biographical information on three other men is included in the appendix: John Karnes (elected for Augher, but unseated in a second election before the Commons met), John Hamilton, (returned for Down County, but died before the House met) and Theodore Schout (returned at some unknown date before June 1642, for an unidentified constituency).

*\$William Alford*

Henry Archer

*Richard Ashe*

*Ballinakill*

Kilkenny

*Belturbet*



<i>Robert Bailey</i>	<i>Cavan County</i>
<i>Peregrine Bannister</i>	<i>Clonakilty</i>
Nicholas Barnwall	Dublin County
Patrick Barnwall	Trim
§Patrick Barnwall	Kells
Peter Barnwall	Dublin County
Richard Barnwall	Meath
§Richard Barnwall	Tagmon
Andrew Barrett	Cork
John Barry	Tallow
<i>Richard Barry</i>	<i>Dublin</i>
Christopher Bellew	Louth
John Bellew	Louth
§Richard Bellings	Callan
<i>William Billingsley</i>	<i>Downpatrick</i>
<i>Henry Bingham</i>	<i>Castlebar</i>
<i>Robert Byron</i>	<i>Augher</i>
John Blake	Athenry
Richard Blake	Galway County
Valentine Blake	Galway
George Blakeney	Swords
<i>Richard Blayney</i>	<i>Monaghan County</i>
<i>George Blundell</i>	<i>Dingle</i>
<i>John Borlace</i>	<i>Belturbet</i>
<i>John Borlace</i>	<i>Enniskillen</i>
§ <i>Joshua Boyle</i>	<i>[Ardee]</i>
Patrick Boyton	Cashel
<i>Roger Brereton</i>	<i>Old Leighlin</i>
<i>Richard Brice</i>	<i>Drogheda</i>
§James Brien	<i>[Clonmines]</i>
<i>Henry Bringhurst</i>	<i>Tuam</i>
Chichester Brook	New Ross
<i>Henry Brome</i>	<i>Charlemont</i>
Geoffrey Browne	Athenry
<i>John Browne</i>	<i>Lismore</i>
Richard Browne	Athboy
§Valentine Browne	Kerry
§William Browne	<i>[Clonmines]</i>
<i>William Brownlow</i>	<i>Armagh County</i>
<i>Theobald Bourke</i>	<i>Mayo</i>
Thomas Bourke	Mayo
Ulick Bourke	Galway County
§Michael Burnell	Boyle
§ <i>Francis Butler</i>	<i>Londonderry</i>
§James Butler	Tipperary
§Peter Butler	Gowran
Pierce Butler	Kilkenny County
Richard Butler	Waterford



Thomas Butler  
Thomas Butler  
John Bysse  
Robert Bysse

William Cadogan  
§George Carleton  
§Joshua Carpenter  
George Carr  
§Patrick Casey  
§Robert Casey  
Oliver Cashell  
§Toby Caulfield  
Arthur Champion  
§Garrett Cheevers  
Arthur Chichester  
John Chichester  
William Cole  
Edward Comerford  
Henry Conway  
Allan Cooke  
Charles Coote  
Charles Coote  
Francis Cosbie  
Edmond Cossens  
John Coughlan  
Pierce Creagh  
George Crofton  
David Crosbie  
§Piers Crosbie  
Stephen Crowe  
§Walter Cruise  
Arthur Culme  
§Adam Cusack  
James Cusack  
Robert Cusack

§Patrick Darcy  
John Davies  
Paul Davies  
§Thomas Davills  
§Barnabas Dempsie  
§Walter Dennis  
Edward Denny  
§Matthew De Renzy  
Simon Digby  
§Geoffrey Dillon  
§Henry Dillon

Carlow County  
Tipperary  
Dublin  
Roscommon

Monaghan  
[Armagh/Donegal/Ballyshannon/Kilmallock]  
Carlingford  
Castlebar  
Sligo County  
Ennis  
Dundalk  
Tyrone  
Enniskillen  
Bannow  
Antrim County  
Dungannon  
Fermanagh  
Callan  
Londonderry County  
Cavan  
Queen's County  
Leitrim  
Carysfort  
Coleraine  
King's County  
Limerick  
Askeaton  
Ardfert  
Gowran  
Lismore

Monaghan  
[Fore]  
Ballyshannon / Old Leighlin  
Kells

[Tyrone]  
Carrickfergus  
Donegal County  
Old Leighlin  
Ballinakill  
Innistogue  
Kerry County

Philipstown  
Roscommon County  
Roscommon County



James Dillon  
*James Dillon*  
Lucas Dillon  
*Robert Dillon*  
*William Dixon*  
§*William Dobbins*  
§*John Dongan*  
*Anthony Dopping*  
Nicholas Dormer  
Walter Dowdall  
§*James Duff*

§*John Edgeworth*  
§*Thomas Esmond*  
*Maurice Eustace*  
Oliver Eustace

§*Richard Fanshaw*  
Faigney Farrell  
§*John Fitzgerald*  
Lucas Fitzgerald  
Maurice Fitzgerald  
§*Maurice Fitzgerald*  
*Richard Fitzgerald*  
§*Edward Fitzharris*  
§*Chichester Fortescue*  
*Faithful Fortescue*  
*Robert Forth*  
Patrick French  
John Furlong

*James Galbraith*  
*Richard Gethings*  
*Seaful Gibson*  
*John Gifford*  
*William Gilbert sr.*  
§*William Gilbert Jr.*  
*Ralph Gore*  
Edward Gough

§*Richard Haley*  
*Archibald Hamilton*  
*Francis Hamilton*  
§*James Hamilton*  
*John Hamilton*  
*Thomas Harman*  
Robert Harpole  
Thomas Henes

Westmeath County  
Longford County  
Roscommon County  
Trim  
*Armagh / Donegal*  
*Askeaton*  
Newcastle  
*Bandon*  
New Ross  
Athboy  
[Taghmon]

[*Armagh/Donegal/Ballyshannon/Kilmallock*]  
*Enniscorthy*  
*Kildare County*  
Carlow County

*Ballinakill*  
Longford County  
Inistiogue  
Westmeath  
Kildare County  
Kerry County  
*Strabane*  
Limerick County  
*Carlingford*  
*Armagh County*  
*Kilbeggan*  
Wexford  
Wexford

*Strabane*  
*Clonmel*  
*Thomastown*  
*Jamestown*  
*Maryborough*  
*Trinity College Dublin*  
*Donegal County*  
Youghal

Cashel  
*Armagh*  
*Jamestown*  
*Bangor*  
*Bangor*  
*Carlow / Coleraine*  
Carlow  
Fethard



§Arthur Hill  
§Thomas Hill  
John Hoey  
§Christopher Hollywood  
Alexander Hope  
John Hore

John Jackson  
§Thomas Johnson  
Brian Jones  
Oliver Jones  
§Robert King  
§William Kingsmill  
Henry Kniveton

§Edward Lake  
Roger Langford  
Ralph Leventhorpe  
§Thomas Little sr.  
§Thomas Little jr.  
Adam Loftus  
Arthur Loftus  
Dudley Loftus  
Nicholas Loftus  
§ §Robert Loftus  
§Walter Loftus  
James Lovell  
Robuck Lynch

§Donnough McCarthy  
§Thomas Madden  
Rory Maguire  
§Philip Mainwaring  
Henry Manning  
Patrick Manning  
John Martin  
§Richard Martin  
§Robert Maude  
Thomas Maule  
§James Melvin  
Robert Meredith  
Audley Mervyn  
Charles Moncke  
§George Montgomery  
§Hugh Montgomery  
James Montgomery  
§Henry Moore

[Carysfort]  
[Armagh/Donegal/Ballyshannon/Kilmallock]  
Wicklow  
Bannow  
Mullingar  
Dungarvan

Carrick-on-Shannon  
Carrick-on-Shannon  
Baltimore  
Athlone  
Boyle  
Mallow  
Baltimore

Cavan  
Antrim County  
Ennis  
Cashel  
Banagher  
Newborough  
Wexford County  
Johnstown  
Wexford County  
Inistiogue  
Carysfort / Roscommon  
Banagher  
Galway

Cork County  
Dungannon  
Fermanagh  
Carysfort  
Clogher  
Navan  
Charlemont  
Augher  
Inistiogue  
Tralee  
[Newtownards]  
Athy / Ballyshannon  
Tyrone  
Coleraine  
Newtownards  
Newtownards  
Down County  
Ardee



*John Moore*  
*§Roger Moynes*

*Philipstown*  
*[Cavan]*

*Thomas Nangle*  
*§George Nettleton*  
*Robert Nettleton*  
*§John Nugent*

*Navan*  
*Killyleagh*  
*Lifford*  
*Fore*

*Dermot O'Brien*  
*Donnough O'Brien*  
*John Ogle*  
*Kean O'Hara*  
*§Brian O'Neill*  
*§Phelim O'Neill*  
*Philip MacHugh O'Reilly*  
*§Henry Osbourne*  
*Richard Osbourne*  
*Richard Osbourne*

*Clare*  
*Clare*  
*Tallow*  
*Sligo*  
*[Killyleagh]*  
*Dungannon*  
*Cavan County*  
*Tralee*  
*Waterford County*  
*Dungarvan*

*§Robert Parke*  
*Richard Parsons*  
*William Parsons*  
*William Parsons*  
*§William Peisley*  
*§Thomas Peppard*  
*Edward Pettit*  
*§Dudley Philips*  
*John Piggott*  
*Thomas Piggott*  
*Nicholas Plunkett*  
*§Oliver Plunkett*  
*William Plunkett*  
*John Power*  
*§Toby Poyntz*

*[Roscommon]*  
*Wicklow*  
*King's County*  
*Wicklow County*  
*Augher*  
*Drogheda*  
*Mullingar*  
*Limavady*  
*Queen's County*  
*Mallow*  
*Meath*  
*Kells*  
*Newborough*  
*Waterford County / Kilmallock*  
*Newry*

*§George Radcliffe*  
*§Thomas Radcliffe*  
*George Rawdon*  
*§William Reading*  
*Humphrey Reynolds*  
*Paul Reynolds*  
*Dominic Roche*  
*Patrick Roche*  
*Philip Roche*  
*§Redmond Roche*  
*Hugh Rochford*  
*Theobald Ronane*  
*Christopher Roper*

*Sligo County*  
*Sligo*  
*Belfast*  
*Newry*  
*Leitrim*  
*Killyleagh*  
*Cork*  
*Kinsale*  
*Kinsale*  
*Cork County*  
*Fethard*  
*Youghal*  
*Dingle*



Pierce Rothe  
Thomas Rotherham  
Edward Rowley

George St. George  
William St. Leger  
§William St. Leger  
William Sambach  
§Patrick Sarsfield  
Bernard Saunders  
§Christopher Sherlock  
Francis Slingsby  
Nicholas Smith  
§Robert Smith  
William Smith  
Nicholas Stafford  
§Thomas Stanihurst  
§John Stanley  
Stephen Stephens  
§Oliver Stephenson  
Robert Stewart  
§William Stewart  
Anthony Stoughton  
William Summers  
§Nicholas Sutton  
William Swanton  
Nicholas Sympson

Theobald Taaffe  
§Henry Talbot  
Thomas Talles  
Edward Tarleton  
John Taylor  
§Simon Thoroughgood  
Robert Travers  
Edward Trevor  
§John Trevor  
Marcus Trevor

John Usher  
William Usher  
Patrick Vynes

§Randolph Waddington  
Hardress Waller  
John Walsh  
Walter Walsh  
§Christopher Wandesford

Kilkenny  
Tuam  
Londonderry County

Carrick-on-Shannon  
Cork County  
Kilmallock  
Carrickfergus  
Kildare  
Carlingford  
Naas  
Bandon  
Dundalk  
[Banagher]  
Clonmel  
Fethard (W.)  
Newry  
Drogheda  
Athy  
[Limerick County]  
Londonderry  
[Trinity College]  
Ardfert  
Athlone  
Naas  
Enniscorthy  
Monaghan County

Sligo County  
Newcastle  
Killybegs  
Killybegs  
Swords  
Ennis  
Clonakilty  
Down County  
Newtownards  
Downpatrick

Limavady  
Wicklow County  
Fethard

Enniscorthy  
Limerick County  
Waterford  
Kilkenny County  
Kildare



George Wandesford  
 \$John Wandesford  
 Michael Wandesford  
 William Wandesford  
 James Ware  
 John Ware  
 John Warren  
 Patrick Wemys  
 §Philip Wenman  
 \$George Wentworth  
 Thomas Wharton  
 Dominick Whyte  
 Nicholas White  
 §Nicholas Whyte  
 Andrew Willson  
 \$Maurice Williams  
 Richard Wingfield  
 \$William Wray

Clogher  
 Innistiogue  
 Thomastown  
 Lifford / Ballinakill  
 Trinity College Dublin  
 Johnstown  
 Kilbeggan  
 Gowran  
 Belfast  
 Kildare  
 Callan  
 Limerick  
 Maryborough  
 Kildare  
 Donegal  
 Askeaton  
 Boyle  
 Belfast

A number of other men of different names are also listed in the *Comons Journals*, but it is presumed that these were mistakes:

Henry Bingley (assumed to be mistake for Bingham (30/1/41)).  
 Richard Plunkett 13/10/40 (presumed mistake for one of the other men named Plunkett)  
 William Borlace Esq. (presumed mistake for Borlace jr.) 30/1/41 and 23/2/41, also listed as Edmond Borlace 27/2/41; Edward, 11/5/41  
 Richard White (assumed to be Nicholas) (28/3/40)  
 Joseph Edgeworth (17 June 1640) assumed to be John,  
 Richard Price (presumably Brice) 24/10/40, 24/10/40  
 Thomas Bringhurst (presumed to be Henry 4/2/41)  
 Serjeant Major Bailiffe (22/2/41) presumed to be Robert Bailey  
 Richard Boyle (presumably Joshua) 1/3/41  
 Henry Cusack (presumed to be a mistake for Adam or Robert) 2/3/41  
 Patrick Trench (presumed to be French) ) 2/3/41  
 Hugh Reynolds (presumed to be a mistake for Humphrey or Paul Reynolds or Hugh Rochford)  
 Sir John Dillon, presumed mistake for Sir James, 18/5/41  
 Edmond Roche, presumed mistake for Redmond, 20/5/41  
 Sir Joshua Browne (mistake for Sir John Browne, 5/6/41)  
 Mr. William Cooke (presumed mistake for William Cole or Allan Cooke)  
 Mr. William Brome, presumed mistake for Henry Brome or William Browne.



## INTRODUCTION

This thesis was originally intended as a study of the m.p.s of both the 1634 and the 1640 Irish Parliaments. The amount of information available on the members of both parliaments was so large that it became necessary to restrict its scope to the first 21 months (March 1640 to November 1641) of the 1640 parliament. The information gathered on the members of the 1634 Commons has, however, been used extensively in this thesis, especially in the constituency profiles in the Appendix.

This was an important parliament for a number of reasons. Firstly, it was Wentworth's second Irish parliament and, being held only 6 years after the previous one, its returns demonstrate his increased control in Ireland. Secondly, as it took place immediately before the 1641 'Rebellion', it provides an opportunity to consider the formal Irish political community on the eve of the enormous upheavals of the 1640s.

Finally, it was the last Irish parliament before the Union in which Catholics were able to play a substantial role and the last opportunity for Catholics to act as parliamentarians before 1829. After 1641, Catholics were excluded from the parliamentary structures, apart from a brief period under James II, and also from the institutional political process, so their role in this parliament is particularly interesting.

The upheavals of the 1640s and 1650s were so enormous that it is also useful to be able to view the membership of this parliament and to note the way in which m.p.s were able to co-operate across ethnic and religious lines and later to use their experience of the Commons within the Confederation or in later English or Commonwealth parliaments.

### Standard Sources

The range of primary sources, printed and manuscript, available for biographical studies of m.p.s is very wide and diverse; they comprise personal,



institutional records, official papers, property and other financial transactions local government and parliamentary records and other documents.

Personal papers include genealogies, visitations, family papers, letters, denization grants, inquisitions *post mortem*, wills, funeral entries, tombstones, parish registers or extracts from parish records and very occasionally, diaries.

Institutional records include educational records (generally admissions to educational institutions) and succession lists (e.g. for clergy); a unique type of institutional record is the documentation relating to the Confederation of Kilkenny. Official documents include patent rolls, the calendars of state papers, official letters, writs, reports, accounts, military records and the *Transplantation Papers*.

Property and other financial transactions include deeds, the *Civil Survey, Books of Survey and Distribution*, staple records and other bonds, mortgages, accounts and rentals.

Local government records generally consist of town books although these are few in number and often sparing of information. A major gap is the lack of information on the administration of the counties. Local government information may also be gleaned from other sources, including town charters, private papers and the *Depositions*.

Parliamentary records include journals and other proceedings and occasional copies of orders issued by the parliament.

The *Depositions* form a major general source of many types of very different information and collections of private papers, including the Egmont, Lismore and Ormond papers, provide a wide range of document types together including letters, deeds, bonds, reports and lists of various types. Other collections, including the Nicholas and Clarendon Papers, also provide useful information for m.p.s activities in the later 1640s and 1650s, especially on the continent.



Finally, considerable amounts of very diverse information are to be found in the large number of pamphlets and the smaller number of newsletters which were published in the 1640s and, to a lesser extent, 1650s. These contain military, political, administrative and personal information, although part of their content must be treated with caution, as they were not objective accounts of activities or views. The major collections include the Bradshaw collection in Cambridge, the Lough Fea and Thorpe Collections in the National Library of Ireland, the Royal Irish Academy's collection and other, more scattered collections in the British Library, G.P.A. Bolton Library and Trinity College Dublin.

In a number of cases, there are no Irish sources comparable to the known English ones. Unfortunately, there are no known Irish equivalents of the English parliamentary diaries, writs of return and lists of voters for this period. The available parish records are very scanty and relate only to the Church of Ireland in Dublin and, to a limited extent, Londonderry. This gap is only partly filled by the *Journal of the Irish Association for the preservation of the Memorials of the Dead* and funeral entries. In the case of some apparently comparable sources (e.g. education records, *Commons Journals*) the Irish sources are incomplete and therefore considerably less useful than the English versions. Disappointingly, the 1640 Irish *Commons Journals* are much less complete than those for 1613 and 1634. Ireland also lacks a network of well-established local archives so local information is gleaned from a small number of printed primary sources (e.g. the town records for Dublin, Cork, Youghal, Belfast and Galway). One notable exception is the manuscript book of the Corporation of Clonmel.<sup>1</sup>

The secondary sources include family and local histories, some biographies and general, political and military histories. A number of earlier historians compiled limited information on m.p.s from specific areas.<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> N.L.I. MS. 19,171. Most of the surviving town books deal with the period after 1660.

<sup>2</sup> e.g. Lord Belmore, *Parliamentary memoirs of Fermanagh and Tyrone, from 1613 to 1885*. (Dublin, 1887); J.D. Burtchael, *Genealogical memoirs of the members of parliament for the county and city of Kilkenny*. (Dublin, London, 1888); R. Malcolmson, *Carlow Parliamentary Roll*. (Dublin, 1872). T.U. Sadleir, 'Kildare Members of Parliament 1559-1800.' in *Kildare Arch. Soc. J.*, VI (1909-11), pp 398-406, 469-492; VII (1912-14), pp 41-4, 109-118, 154-167, 234-241, 311-6, 393-410; VIII, (1915-17), pp 71-75, 150-156, 197-204, 302-8, 399-403, 495-502; IX, (1918-21), pp 191-196, 376-80, 430-433; X, (1922-28), pp 37-40, 109-112, 163-173.



In the case of major figures, (e.g. Phelim O'Neill, George Radcliffe, Christopher Wandesford) relatively less attention has been given to their biographical information. This is partly because much of this information is generally relatively readily available and partly because a study which seeks to recreate a complete political community needs to concentrate on the lesser known figures. Less attention has also been given to the importance, in an English context, of the lives and actions of figures such as Radcliffe and Wandesford, and greater emphasis has been placed on their lives and actions in Ireland.

Most attention has been placed on m.p.s' activities before 1642, and while later information is included, their roles in the 1640 parliament dictate that greater emphasis should be placed on their earlier lives, which can help show the influences and experiences which may have shaped their actions after June 1642.

### Structure of the Thesis

This thesis follows the structure of other parliamentary biographies - this introduction, chapter one which sets out the brief history and context of the parliament and chapter two which consists of the biographies of the individual members.<sup>3</sup>

Like other biographical studies, it includes (in an appendix) collations of some significant characteristics of the members (origin, age / place in family, education, previous parliamentary experience and local connections). Uniquely, it also includes a lengthy analysis of the way that parliamentary representation changed or remained constant in each constituency between 1560 and 1640 (also in the appendix). Other studies also provide collations of data on social standing, military careers and relationships with members of the House of Lords. Those categories were omitted from this thesis for reasons which were unique to this

---

<sup>3</sup> The standard and pioneering work is M.F. Keeler, *The Long Parliament, 1640-1641: a biographical study of its members*. (Philadelphia, 1954); and other significant examples are the series of biographies produced by the History of Parliament Trust (e.g. B.D. Hennings (ed.), *The House of Commons, 1660-1690*. (London, 1983). 3 vols.) and D. Brunton and D.H. Pennington, *Members of the Long Parliament*. (Cambridge, 1954). One exception to the alphabetical organisation of biographies is B. McGrath, *The membership of the Irish house of commons, 1613-15*. (M.Litt. thesis, University of Dublin, 1986), in which biographies were arranged according to m.p.s' constituencies. The uncertainty of the identification of the constituencies of some of the members of the 1640 parliament made this arrangement impractical in this case.



study. Social standing was omitted because it was difficult to provide an accurate estimate of the m.p.s' standing, especially of the new English members. Military careers were omitted because so much of the information on their careers is available after 1641, rather than during the earlier period which was critical for this study. Finally, relations with members of the Upper House were not considered as the Irish peerage had changed so considerably over the previous 30 years that many peers had no genuine Irish connections and did not sit in the Irish Parliament. Thus, chronicling their connections would be meaningless.

Finally, the appendix also includes the biographies of three men who were returned to the Commons: two did not take their seats and the third's date of return is unknown. Their biographies are included for general interest only and are not included in the collations.

Within each biography, information is presented in roughly similar format. The initial information about their dates, parentage, marriage(s), education, honours (i.e. acquiring titles such as knight, baronet or peer) and other parliamentary experience, is codified, using abbreviations explained in the preliminaries. Any other information, including personal connections, family history, details of property or wealth, political, commercial, administrative or military activities, offices and their personal lives, follows in narrative form. While footnotes are used for some information, a general list of references for each m.p. is provided in the notes.

It should be emphasised that the listing of personal connections does not necessarily imply closeness between m.p.s. Many had a wide variety of connections and it is not possible to indicate which of a number of ties was more influential or important to any given member at any specific time.

### Standard references

A number of standard references is used throughout the thesis. These include:

1625 Commissions of the peace, based on *T.C.D. MS 672*;



1627 commissions in each county to raise money for the army (*Cal.S.P.Ire.*, 1625-32 pp 250-2);

1654 and 1657 assessments for Ireland (taken from *An Assessment for Ireland for three months ... 16 October 1654 to 7 January*; (Dublin: W. Bladen, 1654); *An Assessment for Ireland for six months, at thirteen thousand pounds per month for 24 June 1657 to 24 December 1657*. (Dublin, W. Bladen, 1657).

1640 Army List (from *T.C.D. MS. 672*)

1642 letter to Ormond from the rebels. (31 July 1642). Hogan, *Letters and papers*. pp 96-7.

1642 petition of the protestant subjects Humble petition of the protestant subjects in *The Propositions of the Roman Catholics of Ireland...* (Waterford, ?1644). p. 31;

1642 Confederation (from Gilbert's *Confederation*)

1648 General Assembly (from de Burgo, T., *Hibernia Dominicana*).

Transplantation, based on R.C. Simmington, (ed.), *The Transplantation to Connaught, 1654-58.*, (Dublin, 1970).

Census, S. Pender, (ed.), *A Census of Ireland circa 1659, with supplementary material from the poll money ordnances (1660-1661)*. (Dublin, 1939).

Notes of crown offices are based on J. Hughes, *Patentee officers in Ireland, 1173-1826*. (Dublin, 1960).

## Methodology

The methodology employed was firstly the creation of as comprehensive a list as possible of m.p.s in the Commons between 1640 and November 1641. As the standard lists are not entirely trustworthy or complete, it was necessary to consult a range of sources to create this list, including the official record of returns (and Bean's corrections), the lists in the *Irish Commons Journals*, Lodge's list in *Lib. Mun. Hib.*, and *T.C.D. MS. 843*, pp 477ff. Other names appeared in the proceedings in the *Journals*, especially committee lists, miscellaneous letters, local government records and the *Depositions*.<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>4</sup> The official record of returns, House of Commons, *Lists of members returns: members of Parliament, Part 1, 1213-1707, Part 2, Parliaments of Great Britain*. (London, 1878). (and Bean's corrections) *Commons Journals (Ireland)*; R. Lascelles, *Liber Munerum Publicorum Hiberniae*. Part 1. (London, 1824); *T.C.D. MS. 843*, pp 477ff. the *Depositions*. (*T.C.D. MSS. 810-840*).



The second stage was the consultation of standard sources, including the published registers of the Inns of Court and the King's Inns and the admission records of the Universities.

For new English m.p.s, the published and unpublished genealogies and family and local histories, including those published by the Harleian Society, were invaluable. The Irish equivalents are more scattered, but include the Genealogical Office Manuscripts and other papers, including some in Trinity College Dublin, and published sources including J. Burke, *Genealogical and heraldic history of the commoners of Great Britain and Ireland*. (London, 1838), 4 vols., B. Burke, *Irish Family Records*, 5th. ed. (London, 1976), B. Burke, *Landed gentry of Ireland*, (London, 1898), B. Burke, *Landed gentry of Ireland*, (London, 1912), B. Burke, *Landed gentry of Ireland*, 4th. ed. (London, 1958), funeral entries and lists of wills.

Standard sources for all members were the *Memorials of the dead*, and for protestant members, the wills in the probate collections in the Public Record Office in London.

For some Irish m.p.s, the only evidence of their lives and activities may be contained in their deeds or in land transactions, including the Inquisitions *Post Mortem*, the *Civil Survey* and *Books of Survey and Distribution*.

The *Depositions* have been used uncritically and without prejudice to the accuracy of their contents of the reasons for making or retaining the statements<sup>5</sup> and the same approach was taken to the printed pamphlets. As the majority of the pamphlets was produced in England for a protestant audience, their contents are necessarily partial.

The focus of the thesis is the m.p.s, their identities and characteristics, their place in their local society or political community and their position as representatives. The thesis does not attempt to write the political history of the 1640 Irish House of Commons, and it is not concerned with m.p.s activities or

---

<sup>5</sup> A. Clarke, The 1641 depositions, in P. Fox (ed.), *Treasures of the Library: Trinity College Dublin*. (Dublin, 1986). pp 111-22.



politics within the House.<sup>6</sup> For that reason, it has not systematically used strongly political collections of papers, such as the Wentworth-Woodhouse Papers. Instead, it seeks to identify all members and provide as much information as possible about their connections and activities. It is hoped that this study will assist other historians who may use its contents to support a deeper analysis of their political lives than is possible here.

The information on individual m.p.s was collated into biographies for each member. Composite information on various aspects of their lives (their ethnic origins, ages, place in family, education, previous parliamentary experience and local connections) was also collated, to give a broader picture of Irish political society, and this information is contained in an appendix, together with an analysis of Irish parliamentary representation, by constituency, between 1560 and 1640.

### Conclusion

The combined effect of this biographical study of m.p.s shows both their individual and their collective standing nationally and within their local communities. It is significant that it has been possible to locate and collate relatively detailed information about so many individuals. Only four (1.4% of the total 291) members (Walter Dennis, Geoffrey Dillon, Oliver Plunkett, Michael Wandesford) (3 catholics, 1 protestant) remain totally unknown; even in those cases, we have information on their families. We have minimal data on five others (1.7%) (Patrick Casey, James Lovell, Dominic Roche, Bernard Saunders, Simon Thoroughgood) (2 catholics and 3 protestants). In other words, it has been possible positively to identify 96.9% of the members and to establish the families of all of the others. This compares well with an earlier study of the 1613 Commons, in which two (0.8%) m.p.s remained unidentified and 8 others (3%) for whom information was available on their families only.<sup>7</sup>

The study confirms the strong cohesion of the old English community and its growing closeness to the prominent Gaelic families, and also the

---

<sup>6</sup> M. Perceval-Maxwell, *The Outbreak of the Irish rebellion of 1641*. (Dublin, 1994). analyses the parliament in his study of the development of the Irish rebellion.

<sup>7</sup> McGrath, 1613. p. 4.



developing and heterogeneous local protestant communities throughout Ireland, a phenomenon suggested also by the contents of the *Depositions*.

The study shows relatively high levels of local integration of the m.p.s, although the levels were lower than those in the Long Parliament or the 1613 Irish Commons. The figures suggest a very high level of local engagement on the part of all county members, but the level is surprisingly high in the case of the protestants. An overwhelming 91.7% of catholic county members had two or more local connections and 82.9% of the catholic burgesses had at least two local ties. These compare with 91.3% of the protestant county members and the much lower 42.4% for protestant burgesses.

Perhaps significantly, many of those with no known local links, or only tenuous ones, were the members of the Wentworth / Wandesford / Radcliffe Yorkshire cohort. Their rapid disengagement from Ireland after 1640 left space for the re-emergence of the new English settler families.

Equally interesting is the level of integration of the second generation settlers, especially in Ulster.

The study also indicates the continuity between m.p.s' lives and experiences before and within the parliament with their subsequent attitudes and activities. Significant numbers of the catholic m.p.s were later active and prominent in the Confederation - notably Bellings, Darcy, Nicholas Plunkett, and others were also members of the General Assemblies or Supreme Councils.

A rather smaller number of the protestant members played significant roles in Ireland and to a lesser extent in England throughout the 1640s and 1650s (e.g. Waller) or in Ireland after the restoration (Byssie, Coote, Eustace and Mervyn).

Overall, the study found high levels of local integration, with lower levels for protestant burgesses, especially those who were part of the Wentworth / Wandesford / Radcliffe network. This network was also larger than is generally understood, partly because so many of its members left Ireland shortly



after 1640. It also shows a greater evidence of a more widespread and heterogeneous protestant community throughout Ireland and a wider dispersal of men of Scottish origin than has generally been appreciated: a number of Scots were established outside the area of the Ulster plantation (e.g. Gibson, Maule, Wemys and possibly Lovell). These men, especially Wemys, also form part of a group of men with strong presbyterian or independent religious convictions in Ireland, including John Bysse, Wharton and Waller.

The thesis provides a basis for a further exploration of the role of some members in the later 1640s and 1650s, and specifically of the later lives of a number of the m.p.s. It also illuminates a large number of other minor figures, many of whom were only prominent within their boroughs but whose return indicates the type of political influence operating locally and their communities' high degree of political independence.

It also highlights the ease with which political cohesion was achieved between the new English and the old English communities, especially the key roles of Audley Mervyn and Darcy, and their commitment to parliament as a means of solving political problems.

In short, the thesis provides a picture of a heterogeneous community, coming to terms with considerable social and political change and able, at least in the short-term, to show flexibility, imagination, co-operation and sophisticated political thinking and trust. This picture of enlightened mutual support, albeit for limited political ends, makes the subsequent deep divisions even more tragic and regrettable.



## CHAPTER ONE

### THE 1640 PARLIAMENT

#### Parliaments in Ireland

Parliaments had been held in Ireland since at least 1264, and Irish parliaments, like their English counterparts, included separate houses for the Lords (peers and bishops of the established Church) and Commons.<sup>1</sup> The number of Irish peerages increased sharply in the early 17th. century, largely through patents awarded during Buckingham's influence, but many of the new peers were Englishmen resident in the neighbouring island who did not attend the parliament in person and cast their votes by proxy, generally through the lord chancellor. A number of these were also peers in England and Wales and received writs to attend both the 1640 Irish Parliament and the English Short Parliament.<sup>2</sup> Taken together with the presence of bishops of the Church of Ireland, the new Protestant peers provided an in-built (protestant) majority for the administration in the upper house.<sup>3</sup>

#### Composition of the Commons

The Irish Commons contained four types of constituencies with two representatives each, returned by different electorates and paid at varying rates

---

<sup>1</sup> B. Farrell (ed.), *The Irish parliamentary tradition*. (Dublin, 1973), provides a brief history of Irish parliaments; H.G. Richardson and G.O. Sayles, *The Irish parliament in the middle ages*. (London, 1952) and S.G. Ellis, *Parliament and community in Yorkist and Tudor Ireland*. in A. Cosgrove and J.I. McGuire (eds.), *Parliament & community. Historical Studies XIV*. (Belfast, 1983) pp 43-68 examine medieval and 15th. and 16th. century Irish Parliaments respectively. Individual parliaments were examined by V. Treadwell, *The Irish parliament of 1569-71*. in *R.I.A. Proc.*, lxxv, C, (1966-7) pp 55-89; V. Treadwell, *Sir John Perrott and the Irish parliament of 1585-6*. in *Proc.R.I.A.*, lxxxv, C., (1985). pp 259-308; T.W. Moody, *The Irish parliament under Elizabeth and James I*. in *R.I.A. Proc.*, xlv, C., no. 6, (1939) pp 41-81; and B. McGrath, *The Membership of the Irish House of Commons, 1613-1615*. M. Litt. dissertation, Trinity College Dublin, 1985.

<sup>2</sup> The expansion of the Irish peerage was examined in C.R. Mayes, 'The Early Stuarts and the Irish peerage.' in *E.H.R.*, 73, (1958) pp 227-251. Buckingham's creations had a similar effect on the English House of Lords, whose membership swelled from 55 temporal peers in 1603 to 80 in 1610 to 126 in 1628. C. Cook and J. Wroughton, *English historical facts 1603-1688*. (Totowa, 1980) p.89.

<sup>3</sup> Wentworth's agreement that Cork could absent himself from the 1640 parliament was conditional on his making Ormond his proxy. M. Perceval-Maxwell, *The Outbreak of the Irish rebellion of 1641*. (Dublin, 1994). p. 70. The Irish House of Lords objected to the use of proxies in the 1640 parliament and tried to restrict voting to peers with Irish property. By February 1641 the Lords had disallowed most proxies. *ibid.* p. 124.



for their attendance:<sup>4</sup> counties, with members known as knights of the shire, cities and boroughs, who returned citizens and burgesses respectively, and universities.<sup>5</sup>

The number and geographical location of the counties and boroughs was naturally closely related to the extent of the crown's control over Ireland (see map). Leinster was the province with the greatest parliamentary tradition, as it had for many centuries been the principal seat of the administration and the bastion of colonised Ireland. The counties closest to the capital, Dublin, Kildare, Meath and Louth, had the strongest tradition of parliamentary representation, but the 16th. century saw the administration's control expand beyond the Pale and the creation of a large number of new shires and boroughs, increasing the numbers attending the parliament by more than 150% over the 80 years between 1560 and 1640.

By 1560, 9 of the 20 counties entitled to send knights to the parliament were from Leinster (although only 10, 7 from Leinster, are listed as having done so), and 16 of the 29 boroughs were from that province. Another parliament was held in 1569-71, but no list of its members is known to exist and by the time of the final 16th. century parliament in 1585, these numbers had altered to 13 of the 27 counties (Ferns and Wexford were separate counties), and 20 of the 36 boroughs.

---

<sup>4</sup> Knights were paid 13s. 4d. *per diem*, citizens 10s. and burgesses 6s. 8d. for each day of the parliamentary session and for 10 days before and after the session (to allow for their travel to Dublin). Under Strafford, the English practice of m.p.s waiving their fees as an inducement to encourage constituencies to return them, was introduced into a number of constituencies in Ireland e.g. the Trinity College return of 1634 (Wentworth to the Provost and Fellow of Trinity College Dublin, 30 May 1634, J.W. Stubbs, *History of the University of Dublin*. (Dublin, 1889) p. 68). This distinction in rates of pay was maintained in fees, with knights always paying more than the representatives of urban constituencies, e.g. *C.J.(I.)*, 4 August 1641, where county members and burgesses paid two shillings and one shilling respectively towards the relief of poor people.

<sup>5</sup> The cities were Carrickfergus, Dublin, Cork, Galway, Kilkenny, Londonderry, Limerick, Cashel, Waterford and Clogher; Drogheda's status was unclear from the list of 1640 m.p.s included in the *Commons Journals*, although it had been regarded as a 'villa', with comparable status to Dundalk, in 1613. This composition reflected that of English and Welsh parliaments. Universities had been franchised since 1604 in England and 1613 in Ireland. Some London constituencies returned three members to the English parliament.

Scottish parliaments included nobles, clergy and crown officials, as well as knights of the shire and commissioners of the burghs; burghs sent single representatives, except Edinburgh, which sent two. D. Stevenson, *The Scottish revolution, 1637-44: the triumph of the covenanters*. (Newtown Abbot, 1973) pp 166-7. Further information on Scottish parliaments may be found in R.S. Rait, *The Parliaments of Scotland*. (Glasgow, 1924) and M.D. Young, *The Parliaments of Scotland: burgh and shire commissioners*. 2 vols. (Edinburgh, 1992-3).



**TABLE ONE**  
**CONSTITUENCIES IN THE IRISH PARLIAMENT,**  
**1560-1641**

	<u>Counties</u>	<u>Boroughs</u>	<u>Total</u>
1560	20	29	49
1585	27	36	63
1613a	33	84	116
1613b <sup>6</sup>	33	72	105
1634	33	94	128
1640	32	89	121
1641	32	95	127

**TABLE TWO**  
**GEOGRAPHICAL DISTRIBUTION OF THE**  
**CONSTITUENCIES IN THE IRISH PARLIAMENT,**  
**1560-1641**

	<u>Leinster</u>		<u>Munster</u>		<u>Connaught</u>		<u>Ulster</u>		<u>Total</u>
	<u>C</u>	<u>B</u>	<u>C</u>	<u>B</u>	<u>C</u>	<u>B</u>	<u>C</u>	<u>B</u>	
1560	10	16	6	9	1	2	3	2	49
1585	13	21	7	11	4	2	2	37	63
1613a	12	32	7	20	5	8	9	23	116
1613b	12	28	7	17	5	8	9	19	105
1634	12	41	7	21	5	9	9	24	128
1640	12	35	6	21	5	9	9	24	121
1641	12	41	6	21	5	9	9	24	127

<sup>6</sup> 1613a and 1613b refer to the numbers before and after the decision on the franchise of boroughs created after the parliament met.

<sup>7</sup> Downpatrick was entitled to send burgesses, but does not appear to have done so.



Leinster's numerical advantage continued to decline in the 17th century and by 1613 it returned 12 of the 33 counties and 32 of the 83 boroughs. Final adjustments led to a decrease of one in the number of counties through the amalgamation in 1637 of the historical church lands (which formed the County of Cross Tipperary) with the secular property in the same county and an overall increase of 12 in the number of boroughs, to a total of 95 by 1640.

Six Leinster boroughs, Bannow, Clonmines and Tagmon in Wexford, Newcastle in Dublin, Naas in Kildare and Fore in Westmeath were disfranchised between 1634 and 1640, reducing the province's representation to 12 counties, and 35 boroughs.<sup>8</sup> Strenuous attempts were made to restore the boroughs' franchise during the course of the Parliament and these were successful by January 1641.

### Electoral Process

Following the issuing of a Commission for the summoning of parliament, the Chancery issued writs for election to the sheriffs in each county ordering them to hold elections for the knights of the shire and to direct the chief magistrates of the cities and boroughs in their county (mayors, provosts, portreeves or sovereigns, depending on the boroughs' individual charters) to elect their citizens and burgesses. Returning officers were ineligible for election for their own constituencies.<sup>9</sup> Where seats became vacant during a parliament, the House would order the issuing of writs for the election of replacement m.p.s. The university members (in the Irish case, for Trinity College Dublin) were considered as burgesses and paid the same salary. Their electorates were different, as the University m.p.s were selected by the university's provost, fellows and scholars, with the provost acting as returning officer.<sup>10</sup>

The number of electors varied markedly between the different constituencies, although in few cases is it possible to estimate the electorate's

---

<sup>8</sup> Clarke, *Old English*, p. 126 for the process of disfranchisement and pressure on other seats to return protestants (e.g. Clonmel).

<sup>9</sup> Bramston, Belfast's sovereign was unseated in 1634 for that reason. *C.J. (I.)*, 19 July 1634. A number of m.p.s in 1613 were also returning officers, but not for their own constituencies, and they were not unseated although their elections were technically invalid. McGrath, 1613, p. 30.

<sup>10</sup> The provost was thus technically ineligible for election, as Provost Temple, who returned himself in 1613, was aware. *T.C.D. MS. Mun.P/1/5*.



exact size.<sup>11</sup> The extent of cities' or boroughs' electorates depended on the provisions of their charters which might franchise all inhabitants, all freemen or burgesses, or only the members of the corporation or common council. Throughout the first four decades of the 17th. century, the crown was examining and standardising town charters and this process brought some uniformity to the extent of their electorate.<sup>12</sup>

There was no single election day.<sup>13</sup> In the counties, returns were made at the monthly assizes in the county town and electors were required to have a property qualification, a freehold worth more than 40 shillings *per annum*.<sup>14</sup> Returns for the cities and boroughs were made as soon as practicable after the writs' receipt, allowing time to notify electors of the election's time and place. The speed of the returns depended on the distance from Dublin and the means of dispatch. It was regarded as suspicious that Inistiogue, 50 miles distant from Dublin, could make a return within five days of the writ's issue.<sup>15</sup>

The law required m.p.s to be Irish-born and resident in their constituencies protestants, especially the new English, were generally less likely

---

<sup>11</sup> The exceptions are Trinity College Dublin, which had a finite number of fellows and scholars and a single provost, Youghal, which counted the number of votes for each candidate, and boroughs whose charters defined their council as the electors for their parliamentary representation. The election returns for the county seats were supposed to include the signatures of the freeholders who had elected the m.p.s, but these have generally not survived, although Perceval-Maxwell cites the list of 94 freeholders in King's County (*ibid.* p.71). Copies of Irish borough charters are held in the Royal Irish Academy (MSS 24 Q 7-18, and N.A. 9ADD MS. R. Caulfield, (ed.), *Council book of the Corporation of Youghal*, (Guildford, 1878).

<sup>12</sup> For a fuller discussion on the types of seats, electorates and electoral procedures and practice, see McGrath, 1613 pp 6-25. For the process of uniformity, see B. Fitzpatrick, *Seventeenth century Ireland: the war of religions*. (Dublin, 1988) pp 15-22

<sup>13</sup> In 1613, the administration had used this fact as an element in its electoral strategy, creating new constituencies during the course of the election to ensure a protestant majority. McGrath, 1613. p. 34.

<sup>14</sup> This property qualification had been established in a 1430 British statute and did not imply the possession of substantial property. D. Hirst, *Representative of the people?* (Cambridge, 1975) p. 29. Sheriffs who acted as returning officers had, or assumed, considerable discretion in dealing with returns. In the by-election for the Tyrone seat in spring 1641, the sheriff attempted to hold the election away from the county town, Dungannon, presumably in an effort to influence the result and only an order from the Commons prevented this manoeuvre's being successful (see below). This consideration may also have influenced the determination of the residents of Naas to have that place confirmed as the county town for Kildare; presumably the *quo warranto* proceedings which called its franchise into question also affected its status as the county's administrative centre.

<sup>15</sup> e.g., the 1613 Trim election, when a second election was held because the first was poorly advertised, *Cal.S.P.Ire., 1611-14*, pp 363,442. For Inistiogue, see *C.J. (I.)*, 18 February 1641.



to conform to this standard,<sup>16</sup> but although it had previously been raised as a general objection to returns,<sup>17</sup> it was rare for a formal objection to be made to individual members on the grounds of non-residency or of not being born in Ireland, until the dispute about John Fitzgerald's return as replacement m.p. for Inistiogue on 11 November 1640. The defence of his return (Fitzgerald was a Kerryman), was that the borough was required to return "*idoneum et discretum Burgensem, which is here fulfilled; and should they be compelled to return men resident, there would often come from such poor Boroughs very ignorant, indigent, and unfit men to serve in the great Counsel of the King.*"<sup>18</sup>

### The 1640 Parliament

The 1640 Irish parliament was called to support Charles in his dispute with Scotland, by providing money to assist him in his political differences with his British and Scottish subjects, to permit the raising of a contingent of 9,000 soldiers in Ireland for service with the King in Scotland and to provide financial support for that force. The Irish parliament's willingness to provide this money was critical to Wentworth's plans, but it was equally important that it should set a good example to the subjects in Charles's other kingdoms by demonstrating its complete loyalty to the king.

Charles's commission to summon the parliament was issued on 29 January 1640 and elections took place in February and up to 16 March 1640, the first day of the first session. The elections were overseen by Radcliffe, as Strafford was in England. The first session<sup>19</sup> sat until 1 April, when it adjourned until 1 June, and again until 17 June when it was prorogued until 1 October. The second session lasted until its prorogation on 12 November 1640 and the third session from 26 January to 5 March 1641, when it was again prorogued. The fourth session sat from 11 May until 7 August when it was adjourned until 9 November 1641. The fifth session began on 11 January 1642 and the parliament continued to sit intermittently, and with very varying membership, until 9 February 1647, but

---

<sup>16</sup> see McGrath, 1613. pp 119-123, for the proportions of m.ps. in 1613 resident in their constituencies and with other local connections and the appendix (below) for this parliament.

<sup>17</sup> Clarke, *Old English*, p. 81.

<sup>18</sup> *C.J. (I.)*, 18 February 1641; the second replacement member, Dennis, was apparently a burgess of Inistiogue.

<sup>19</sup> The dates of the parliamentary sessions follow those listed in the *New History of Ireland*, VIII, pp 231-33 and differ from those used by Perceval-Maxwell, *1641 rebellion*.



this thesis is concerned only with the men who sat in the four sessions to November 1641, when a number of m.p.s were expelled for being in rebellion and the House ceased to function effectively as a representative body.

When the House first met on 16 March 1640, 235 men were included in its list of members. These included 161 protestants and 74 catholics, 64 county members (34 protestant, 30 catholic) and 171 borough members (127 protestant, 44 catholic).<sup>20</sup> The list shows a number of instances of readjustment, e.g. Peisley and Byron were listed as representing Augher (the result of a second election, which cancelled Karnes's return), Edward Trevor as m.p. for Down (replacing the deceased Hamilton) and Francis Cosbie and Cossens as replacements for the doubly returned Walter Loftus and Harman respectively. Further adjustments, including replacements for the other double returns, remained to be made.

While the overall proportions of protestant and catholic county members were relatively close (53% to 47%), there were considerable differences between the different provinces, as the following tables indicate:

**Table Three**  
**Original County Members**

	Protestants	Catholics	Total
Leinster	10	14	24
Munster	4	8	12
Ulster	16	2	18
Connaught	4	6	10
Total	34	30	64

The province with the most even level of representation at county level was Leinster; the disproportionately high level of protestants returned for Ulster was due to the wholesale transfer of property during its plantation.

<sup>20</sup> These figures exclude disfranchised boroughs, and double or disputed returns. The official list is included in the *Commons Journals*, before the account of the proceedings in the House. The figures also differ from those calculated by Perceval-Maxwell, *op. cit.*, (p. 70).



Munster had been partially planted and five catholic members represented Tipperary and part of Limerick, areas yet to be planted, and the altered religious allegiance of one branch of a settler family, the Brownes. The high level of catholic representation in Connaught tells the same story - the protestant county members were either members of new English families who had begun to acquire lands in Connaught through the plantation of Leitrim (Coote) or informal plantation (Radcliffe), or through the religious conformity of two Gaelic families, the Bourkes and Reynolds.

The proportions of protestant and catholic citizens and burgesses were quite different: 74% were protestant and 26% catholic. It was more difficult for the old English to ensure the return of catholics for boroughs, as the administration had power to issue and alter charters, and therefore electorates. This explains both the disfranchisement of a number of old constituencies and the willingness of a number of others (e.g. Clonmel) to return placemen. There were also dramatic differences between the boroughs in different provinces: in Ulster only one (2%) of the 46 burgesses was catholic, whereas 37% of the Munster burgesses were catholic. The proportions in Leinster and Connaught were 36% and 24% respectively.

**Table Four**  
**Original Urban Members**

	Protestants	Catholics	Total
Leinster	43	24	67
Munster	26	15	41
Ulster	45	1	46
Connaught	13	4	17
Total	127	44	171



## Interest Groups within the Parliament

The returns show a number of separate groupings of sectional interests. Unsurprisingly, Wentworth's Yorkshire connections and adherents formed one: at least 19 m.p.s were members of this group, including the Deputy's brother, his friends and cousins Christopher Wandesford and four other members of that family, Sir George Radcliffe, his son Thomas and half-brothers George and Robert Nettleton, cousin George Carr, another Yorkshireman, Robert Maude, Wentworth's physician Williams, secretaries or assistants, Cadogan and Thomas Little and his son, and other associates, Billingsley, Carpenter and Peisley.<sup>21</sup>

16 privy councillors (Borlace sr., Coote sr., Dillon, Forth, Adam Loftus, Mainwaring, Meredith, Parsons sr., Radcliffe, Rotherham, St. Leger, Stewart, Trevor, Wandesford, Ware and Wentworth) were later to be joined by another, William Stewart, in a by-election. Many were also officials and they managed to ensure the return of their adherents (e.g. Borlace, Coote, Dillon, Loftus, Meredith, Parsons, Radcliffe, St. Leger, Trevor, Wandesford all had sons and / or sons-in-law returned, Ware's brother was elected and several St. Leger associates, including his secretary Gethings and other clients, Ogle, Kingsmill and Kniveton). The Loftuses and Parsons had extensive, closely entwined, connections. Six Loftuses were returned and their family and other connections included Blayney, Cosbie, Gifford, Moore, O'Hara and Wentworth and the Parsons, Ussher and Ware families.

The Parsons' network included the three m.p.s of that name and their many cousins and in-laws, including the Loftuses, Hoey, Paul Davys and William Ussher. The Cootes also had a strong network comprising St. George, Francis Hamilton, Gifford, Slingsby, Phillips (and thus the Usshers) and the Moores. They were also old associates of Cork.

There were also leading members of the administration and their connections: advocate-general Lake, solicitor-general Sambach, Privy Council clerk Paul Davies, the Usshers, and minor officials like Richard Fitzgerald, Brian Jones, Moncke, William Plunkett, Stephens, Stoughton, Summers and Tallis.

---

<sup>21</sup> Thomas Edmonds, a Yorkshireman, Guildford Slingsby and Francis Windebank, all Strafford's secretaries, had been returned for Castlebar, Carysfort and Ennis respectively in 1634.



While it is generally assumed that Lord Cork paid relatively little attention to the elections, a number of his relatives (Barrett, John Browne, Crowe, Digby, Arthur Loftus, Moore, Travers) or associates (the Cootes, Osbornes and Waller<sup>22</sup>), and at least one tenant (Bannister) were returned and others would appear in by-elections.

Ormond's connections included his brother-in-law McCarthy, secretary William Smyth, agent Comerford and other clients and friends like Walter Walsh, Wemys, and Wharton.<sup>23</sup>

Men of Scottish ancestry formed another interest group: at least six<sup>24</sup> were of Scottish birth and a further 8 were second generation Scots.<sup>25</sup> Two others were originally returned to the House and a further two (William Stewart and Melvin) were returned in by-elections<sup>26</sup> and a number of other m.p.s may also have been Scottish.<sup>27</sup>

The Catholic m.p.s fall into distinct categories: old English gentry, gaelic families, merchants from old boroughs and lawyers.<sup>28</sup> The gentry included members of families who exercised considerable power within their own localities, such as the Barnwalls, Bellews, Butlers, Dillons and Walshes. The merchants represented the old cities and boroughs they traditionally ruled, such

---

<sup>22</sup> Perceval-Maxwell, *op. cit.*, p. 41, notes the Cork connection by 1640, but the link actually began much earlier: Waller's wife, Elizabeth Dowdall, was the granddaughter of Lady Southwell, a member of a new English settler family based at Rathkeale in Limerick, and had previously been contracted to John Browne\*, Cork's nephew. Her marriage agreement allocated her property in Kent and Waller's acquaintance with Cork stems from at least the time of that marriage in London in 1629. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., III, pp 312,327,329. Cork and Waller were both originally from Kent, as was the family of another connection, Crowe\*, and it is possible therefore that the Cork/Waller relationship extended further back than 1629.

<sup>23</sup> Poyntz was also a cousin, although he does not appear to have been part of Ormond's circle.

<sup>24</sup> Galbraith, Gibson, Maule, Reynolds, Stewart and Wemys.

<sup>25</sup> Bailey, four Hamiltons and three Montgomeries.

<sup>26</sup> Karnes's return for Augher was reversed within his own constituency and Hamilton died before the Commons met. Perceval-Maxwell's statement (*op. cit.* p. 69) that 13 Scots were returned, all for Ulster constituencies is incorrect: the minimum number is 14, with at least four sitting for constituencies outside that province. These figures exclude those returned in by-elections. For further information on this subject, see the section on ethnic origins (appendix, pp \_\_\_\_).

<sup>27</sup> e.g. Brome, Lovell and Willson. O'Grady's statement that Thomas Hill was a Scottish non-conformist is unsupported. H. O'Grady, *Strafford and Ireland*. 2 vols. (Dublin, 1923). II, p. 934.

<sup>28</sup> Further information is contained in the sections in the appendices on ethnic origin and education.



as Cork, Drogheda, Dundalk, Fethard, Galway, Kilkenny, Kinsale, Limerick, Navan and Youghal. The lawyers included Geoffrey Browne, Nicholas Plunkett, Rochford, Taylor and John Walsh perhaps as significant as their presence was the absence of two others who had been prominent members of the opposition in the 1634 parliament, Patrick Darcy\* and Richard Martin\* who were later to be returned in by-elections.

### The Changing Membership of the Commons

The House's membership altered very significantly between March 1640 and November 1641. There were 7 double<sup>29</sup> and three disputed returns,<sup>30</sup> at least 10 members died,<sup>31</sup> five were expelled,<sup>32</sup> three succeeded to titles of honour<sup>33</sup> and 21 resigned their seats<sup>34</sup> during the first four sessions; a number of by-elections was held to return replacements, although it is not always clear when these took place, for which constituencies and who was returned to the house as a result of them. There were at least 291 members of the Commons between March 1640 and November 1641, of whom 107 were catholic and 184 protestant. The vast majority of those recorded as leaving the Commons were protestants (32 compared to 7 catholics) and they were often replaced by catholics (33 catholics and 22 protestants), but while this altered the numbers significantly, it did not produce an actual or a working Catholic majority in the House, even when taken together with the members returned for the disfranchised boroughs.

The *Commons Journals* are very incomplete, generally recording decisions of the House and nominations to committees, with a small number of extracts from debates; they are inconsistent in their treatment of vacancies and

---

29 James Cusack, Dixon, Harman, Walter Loftus, Meredith, Power and William Wandesford.

30 Geoffrey Dillon's (Roscommon), (*C.J.(I.)* 28 March 1640), Karnes (Augher); Davis's return for Carrickfergus was the subject of an unsuccessful petition by a fellow citizen. *C.J. (I.)*, 23 March 1640.

31 6 Protestants Madden, Robert Loftus, Little sr., Christopher Wandesford, George Nettleton and Thoroughgood, and 4 Catholics Valentine Browne, Fitzharris, Peppard and Oliver Plunkett.

32 Carpenter, Lake, Little jr., Peisley and Thomas Radcliffe, all protestants.

33 James Butler, Caulfield and McCarthy (two catholics, one protestant).

34 20 Protestants, Alford, Francis Butler, Gilbert jr., King, Kingsmill, Walter Loftus, Mainwaring, Maude, George and Hugh Montgomery, Henry Osbourne, Audley Philips, Poyntz, George Radcliffe, Reading, St. Leger jr., John Wandesford, Wentworth, Williams and Wray and a single Catholic, Piers Butler. It may be assumed that others also resigned or ceased to attend, especially those who had been closely associated with Strafford's administration (e.g. the other members of the Wandesford family and Robert Nettleton), although their resignations are not recorded in the *Commons Journals*.



often fail to record the constituencies of members returned in by-elections.<sup>35</sup> Unlike the English Commons, there are no known private journals or records to supply this deficiency, although a number of other sources help to give a rather fuller picture of the House's membership.

The numbers known to have left the Commons do not match the number known to have joined it, so the list of 291 members is clearly incomplete and it is not possible to compile an authoritative list of all members, their constituencies and length of service. Nor is it possible to estimate the precise membership of the house at any point after its first assembly; the list included in pp 7-14 represents the best estimate possible. There is no evidence that unknown members played a significant role, and, as Perceval-Maxwell noted, the Irish parliamentary system in this period did not generally operate in a majoritarian way or divide along religious lines.<sup>36</sup>

### Replacement of M.P.s

The pattern of replacement of m.p.s was clearly influenced by the prevailing political climate. The House agreed on 20 March 1640 that writs should issue for fresh elections to deal with double or mistaken returns and absent members. On the following day it agreed that a writ should issue for the election of members for Ardee and on the 28 March that the disputed election for Roscommon should be dealt with. There was no return for Ardee by June, and a new writ was ordered on 10 of that month. On the following day, the Commons ordered the issue of writs for returns to Newcastle, Naas, Fore, Bannow, Taghmon and Clonmines and on 12 June it ordered new writs to deal with double returns or deceased members progress was slow and on 2 October the deputy clerk of the hanaper was questioned about the failure to issue writs. The following day, the subject of new elections was raised and given added urgency by Peppard's recent death, and a writ for his replacement was ordered. Two days later it was recorded that writs had not yet issued for Ardee, Newcastle, Naas, Fore, Bannow, Taghmon and Clonmines and the Commons wrote to the Lord

---

<sup>35</sup> For example, they do not record Williams's replacement by Dobbins, and note the return of John Fitzgerald as Robert Loftus's replacement only because it was the subject of a dispute about privilege with the House of Lords; they do not record that Loftus had replaced Wandesford or Maude and that Fitzgerald was accompanied by a fellow catholic, Dennis.

<sup>36</sup> Perceval-Maxwell, *op. cit.*, p. 69.



Chancellor who had prevented the writs' issue. This suggests that elections to replace double returns had taken place, a supposition confirmed by the presence in the House of three men absent from the list of original members: Edgeworth (appointed to a committee on 17 June 1640), Carleton and Thomas Hill who appear in the Commons on 24 October and 10 November respectively. None had identifiable links with any vacant seat (Kilmallock, Ballyshannon and Armagh or Donegal) but as all were government supporters, the identity of their individual constituencies is relatively unimportant.<sup>37</sup>

The Lord Chancellor's response was clearly unsatisfactory, as the Commons suspended all business on 7 October, and, reassembling two days later, dissolved into a grand committee "*to consider of the privileges of this House now in question.*" On 12 October the question of a new m.p. for Newtownards (replacing Hugh Montgomery) was raised. The House ordered the Speaker to re-issue writs for six disfranchised boroughs and referred the question of Fore's representation to the Committee of Privileges on 21 October.<sup>38</sup> A new election to replace Lake was ordered on 10 November. The session ended two days later and a number of new m.p.s entered the house for the third session on 26 January.

It is possible to identify their constituencies by matching their names to the seats known to be vacant before their appearance. M.p.s who first appear in this session included Cheevers and Hollywood (returned for Bannow), Richard Barnwall (Taghmon), William Browne (clearly a Wexford seat, presumed to be Taghmon or Clonmines), John Fitzgerald (Loftus's replacement for Inistiogue), Dongan and Talbot (Newcastle), Sutton (Naas), Nugent (Fore) and Henry Moore (Ardee). Other new m.p.s included Bryan O'Neill, Boyle and Adam Cusack. O'Neill, active in County Down, presumably replaced Nettleton in Killyleagh. A family link between Boyle and Moore, and Cusack's wife's family's influence, suggests that they represented Ardee and Fore respectively. Other m.p.s were also returned, although they are not recorded as having been active in the house; these include Dennis for Inistiogue and Sherlock for Naas, as well as Brien (presumably representing his former constituency of Clonmines) and Duff (presumably returned for either Taghmon or Clonmines).

---

<sup>37</sup> Dixon's choice of seat is unknown. Killyleagh was also vacant at this time.

<sup>38</sup> References may be found in *C.J.(I.)*.



Maurice Fitzgerald had also entered the Commons by this time, appearing first on a committee on 2 April, although he may well have been active in the House before that date.<sup>39</sup> Moynes, who had strong Cavan links and presumably replaced Lake, was first nominated to a committee on 4 February.

A new election to replace Caulfield for Tyrone, was ordered on 4 February 1641, when the subject of the fresh election for Newtownards was also raised. The Tyrone election clearly saw a contest with the sheriff exercising discretion about its course, and the Commons ordered on 1 March:

*"That Edward Maxwell, Esq., high Sheriff of the County of Tyrone, shall be forthwith sent for by the Serjeant at Arms attending this House, to answer unto such matters, as shall be objected against him, and to put in sufficient bail to the said Serjeant, to appear the first day of the next session of this Parliament, to attend and abide the censure of this House; and that the election of the Knights (sic) of the Shire for the said County shall be made in Dungannon, being the Shire-town of the aforesaid County of Tyrone, and if the election be otherwise, the same election to be void."*<sup>40</sup>

The clear inference is that the sheriff was not intending to hold the election at the county assizes, when its location and date would have been generally known, but in some other place and presumably at another time.

One of the final recorded acts of the Commons in the third session was to order writs for 10 other vacant seats (Ennis, Trinity College, Callan, Kildare, Carrick-on-Shannon, Askeaton, Newtownards, County Sligo, Carysfort and Cashell)<sup>41</sup> and these must have been filled by the beginning of the fourth session on 11 May when a number of new m.p.s first appeared in the House.

---

<sup>39</sup> Fitzgerald replaced Valentine Browne who died in April 1640. Fitzgerald is clearly identified as a committee member on 2 April 1641, but his namesake represented Kildare and his nomination to a committee on 24 October 1640 described him as Maurice Fitzgerald of Allon presumably to distinguish him from another m.p. of the same name.

<sup>40</sup> *C.J.(I.)*, 1 March 1641; the reference to the election of knights is misleading - Audley Mervyn was still clearly a member of the House and therefore only Caulfield's seat was vacant.

<sup>41</sup> *C.J.(I.)*, 5 March 1641.



The seats of a number of these m.p.s are known<sup>42</sup> and Melvin presumably represented Newtownards; three other constituencies (Tyrone, Carysfort and Trinity College Dublin) remain to be matched with new m.p.s and Darcy, Arthur Hill and William Stewart must have been returned for these seats.

The Parsons' influence in Wicklow suggests that Hill was returned for Carysfort, as his father-in-law was the county member and his brothers-in-law Richard Parsons and Hoey represented Wicklow town.

Had the Tyrone by-election been held during the first or second sessions, Stewart would have been the obvious replacement for Caulfield politics had altered dramatically during the second and third sessions, however, and the sheriff clearly experienced difficulty in ensuring the return of an acceptable candidate. The administration appointed sheriffs and Maxwell's surname suggests that he was Scottish.<sup>43</sup> It seems unlikely he would object to the return of a privy councillor and fellow-Scot who was also a substantial landholder in the county, implying that Stewart was the unsuccessful candidate for this seat, although he was clearly returned for another constituency.

William Gilbert's departure from the Trinity College seat is unexplained, but the order for his replacement came after the Commons's order to the sheriff of Tyrone and it could have been caused by the administration's desire for Stewart's return, especially as he, unlike Gilbert, became active in the House. Stewart's fellow privy-councillor, James Ware, was still influential in his university constituency and could have arranged for this return.

More importantly, if Stewart was the unsuccessful candidate for Tyrone, who was his rival? It was clearly someone the opposition wished to have in the Commons. The two other by-elections in Tyrone (Augher and Dungannon) returned Richard Martin and Phelim O'Neill between 29 May and 15 July and by 8 June respectively. The coincidence of their returns for a planted county and Maxwell's actions suggests that a man of considerable influence in Tyrone was using his position to ensure that men the opposition wanted were

---

<sup>42</sup> Casey, Bellings, Sarsfield, Johnson, Dobbins, Haley and Casey were returned for Ennis, Callan, Kildare, Carrick-on-Shannon, Askeaton, Cashel and County Sligo respectively.

<sup>43</sup> M. Perceval-Maxwell, *Scottish migration to Ulster in the reign of James I.* (London, 1973) pp 47, 288, notes the connections between the Maxwells and Hamiltons in Antrim.



returned to the parliament; Mervyn was in a unique position to play this role. His close working relationship with Darcy and Martin before and immediately after their return and his powerful position in Tyrone, suggests that Darcy was returned for Tyrone through Mervyn's influence.<sup>44</sup> The by-election for the county member, therefore, forms part of a pattern which saw Wentworth's supporters (e.g. Peisley) leave the Commons, and influential men such as the lawyers Darcy and Martin, who were already involved in supporting the opposition's work in the House, and O'Neill, returned to it. In considering their returns for Tyrone constituencies, it is clear that the other county member, and influential local landholder, Mervyn, must have played a crucial role, especially as he was the most prominent spokesman for the opposition at that time and brother-in-law of Maguire and also of John Clotworthy, who was so active against Wentworth in the Long Parliament.

Robert Smith appeared for the first time on 14 May, presumably returned in Cork's interest, with Moore support, for Banagher. Cruise appears for the first time on 19 May 1641; no other seat is known to have been vacant, but the Wandesford family was not participating in the House, so some or all of the boroughs they represented - Thomastown, Lifford and Clogher - may have been vacant;<sup>45</sup> if so, Cruise's return for Clogher would fit the pattern of the return of useful catholics for Tyrone constituencies.

Other members left and joined the Commons after these dates, but none played as significant a role as the men returned for the Tyrone constituencies. In some cases, the new members' seats are known or may be surmised; in other cases, members' constituencies are unknown.<sup>46</sup> It is not known whether other vacant seats were filled, or if so, by whom.

---

<sup>44</sup> N. O Muraile, 'Aspects of intellectual life in seventeenth century Galway.' in G. Moran and R. Gillespie, (eds.), *Galway: history and society; interdisciplinary essays on the history of an Irish County*. (Dublin, 1996) p.168, states that Darcy was returned for Bannow in May 1641. He adduces no evidence to support this statement. The identity of the m.p.s for Bannow (Cheevers and Hollywood) is well established and those seats were, in any case filled by 30 January 1641, when Cheevers was mentioned in the *Journals* and when Darcy was clearly not a member of the Commons.

<sup>45</sup> The deceased Christopher Wandesford was replaced by Whyte; John Wandesford was replaced for Inistiogue.

<sup>46</sup> Wenman, Burnell, Dempsie and Fanshaw, Chichester Fortescue, Redmond Roche, John Trevor, Esmond, P. Barnwall, Parke, Stephenson, Stanihurst and Piers Cosbie are known, or may reasonably be deduced to have sat for Belfast, Boyle, Ballinakill, Carlingford, Cork County, Newtownards, Enniscorthy, Kells, Roscommon, Tipperary, Newry and Gowran respectively. de Renzy and Cruise's constituencies are unknown.



## The Changing Political Climate in the Parliament

Wentworth's plans for the Irish parliament succeeded initially, with the Commons loyally voting four subsidies on 23 March 1640.

*"Upon serious consideration had by this House of his Majesty's great and pressing occasions for a present supply for defence of his Highness's Kingdoms, it is ordered upon question by the whole House, and by the free, ready, unanimous, and chearful consent of every Member thereof, not one man opposing, that this present Parliament his Majesty shall have granted unto him, by the laity and temporalty of this Kingdom, the number of four entire subsidies, with a further declaration, that the Kingdom will be ready with their lives, fortunes, and estates, to assist his Majesty as further occasion shall be offered."*

Following the dissolution of the Short Parliament and Wentworth's failure to replicate his successful dominance of politics in Ireland in England, his control in Ireland also began to slip, and from the Irish Parliament's reassembling in June 1640, political life became increasingly difficult for the administration under Wandesford.<sup>47</sup>

The changing membership of the Commons reflects this. Wentworth's friends were leaving, or no longer active in, the House - Wentworth, Williams, Maude, Carpenter, Peisley, and the Radcliffes, Nettletons, Littles, Wandesfords, were gone and others were no longer recorded as participating. St. Leger's circle was also inactive - he was not attending the Commons, his son and Kingsmill resigned their seats in May and Kniveton was licensed to be absent.

The Scottish faction was not significantly affected - Scottish m.p.s who left the Commons tended to be replaced by fellow Scots but other factions were

---

<sup>47</sup> Perceval-Maxwell, *Outbreak* pp 76-78. suggests that opposition alliances began to form after knowledge of the failure of the Short Parliament and that the first suggestions of resistance came on 8 June.



gaining strength and influence. Cork's and Parsons's friends began to be returned (Moore, Boyle, Smith, Arthur Hill, Redmond Roche and de Renzi).

M.p.s with connections in the Long Parliament were resurfacing or becoming more active. Mervyn's growing prominence in the House was accompanied by his increased activity outside, and King (a connection of Lord Saye and Sele) resigned his own seat to concentrate on his growing personal interests in England, but arranged for the return of his connections for Boyle and Roscommon.

Ormond's group also changed: McCarthy moved to the Lords and Wharton returned to England, but Bellings entered the Commons.

The number of m.p.s of Gaelic origin was also increasing: at least five replacements - the O'Neills, Caseys and Dempsie - were Gaelic. Interestingly, two of these were protestant, and the belief that religion was not a significant factor in the arrangement of returns went further than Mervyn's interventions in Tyrone. John Barry of Lisscarroll expected that Ormond would arrange for his return if requested:

*"It is thought that a new parliament will be summoned, and this dissolved. I intend to write by my now lord of Muskerie to my lord of Ormonde to get me a place and try ... if it be possible to make me a Commonwealthman, since my fortune had not been better in soldiery."*<sup>48</sup>

Bellings's return for Callan and the appearance of other catholics like Roche, (close to both Cork and his own nephew McCarthy), Phelim O'Neill and Dempsie (who had strong connections with the Digbys, Moores, de Renzy and Forth) lends credence to this expectation.

---

<sup>48</sup> John Barry of Lisscarroll to Philip Perceval, London, 8 March 1641. *B.M. Add. MS. 46925*, f. 210r. Barry had written to Perceval on 24 November 1640 that the English Parliament "is making an order to chastise all Papists in the army, and among the rest myself; they fall out bitterly against us all, and begin to banish us out of town and to remove all from Court ... I was never a factionary in religion, nor shall ever seek the ruin of any because he is not of my opinion. I have my end in this world if I can satisfy my own conscience." *B.M. Add. MS. 46924*, ff 144-5r. Barry's comment about his career as a soldier is also significant - Catholics, including men like James Dillon\*, had received commissions in the new Army in 1640 for the first time in several decades.



Opposition alliances began to form after knowledge of the failure of the Short Parliament reached Ireland. The first indications of resistance came on June 8, when the link was between Nicholas Plunkett and Nicholas Barnwall, and Parsons, Loftus, Coote, Borlace and Meredith and the Bysses working with the Catholics to oppose the subsidies.

If there is little firm evidence that the opposition in England and Scotland was working with that in Ireland, by the third session (i.e. from October) there is considerable circumstantial evidence, especially in the timing of the attack on Strafford and the family connections between the protagonists.<sup>49</sup> It may be significant, for example, that the only connection between the two seats for which Clotworthy was returned (Maldon and Bossiney) was a family connection of the Nettervilles<sup>50</sup> and that Percival met the three most prominent men with Irish connections in the Long Parliament - Clotworthy (a Boyle connection, who had been consulting with the Covenanters in Edinburgh in 1638), Dungarvan (Cork's son) and his brother-in-law Arthur Jones - in London in June 1640.<sup>51</sup> Jones and Clotworthy were m.p.s in 1634 and still had extensive and powerful connections with members of the present House - e.g. Mervyn and the Boyle, Parsons and Coote networks.

In the third session (October - November 1640), most committees had catholic majorities and sizable numbers of protestant opposition members working together on an agreed agenda, including a substantial reduction in the level of subsidies, the disappearance of the bill for the Plantation of Connaught, restoration of the disputed boroughs' franchise and the composition of the Remonstrance and its transmission to the King in England. Wandesford\* forbade the committee appointed to transmit the Remonstrance to leave Ireland, but two members, John Bellew and Cashell, travelled to London and their introduction to the Long Parliament by Clotworthy coincided with the English

---

<sup>49</sup> Perceval-Maxwell. *Outbreak*. pp 82ff.

<sup>50</sup> Clotworthy's return for two seats indicates a high level of anxiety to ensure that he was a member of the Long Parliament, and considerable planning. The only person to have represented both boroughs (in separate parliaments) was the late Earl of Portland whose son, the present earl, was brother-in-law of Luke Netterville, a prominent lawyer and opposition m.p. (for Swords) in 1634, whose brother was a member of the Irish House of Lords.

<sup>51</sup> Clotworthy, Dungarvan and Jones signed a bond with Perceval, witnessed by Wriothesley and others, in June 1640 in London. *B.M. Add. MS. 46924*, f. 35r.



Commons's attack on Strafford. The identity of the Protestant leaders in the third session can be seen in this committee, which included Richard Fitzgerald (a Perceval connection, but also linked to Cork and Parsons), Waller (also linked to Cork), Rowley (Clotworthy and Mervyn's brother-in-law), Digby (a Cork connection and Lord Bristol's cousin), Cole (formerly imprisoned by Wentworth) and Montgomery (supporter of the Covenant). Other protestant leaders were two government supporters, Robert Dillon and James Ware, but prominent administration members, like Loftus and Coote had joined other new English men like Cork's cousin Travers and Denny.<sup>52</sup>

### Full membership of the Commons

Of the 291 known m.p.s, 70 (36 catholics and 34 protestants) represented counties, 216 (69 catholic and 146 protestant), urban seats and the constituencies of a further 5 (Edgeworth, Carleton and Thomas Hill (returned for Armagh, Donegal, Ballyshannon or Kilmallock) Cruise and de Renzy) are unknown.

**Table Five**  
**Overall County Members**

	Protestants	Catholics	Total
Leinster	10	14	24
Munster	4	11	15
Ulster	16	3	19
Connaught	4	8	12
Total	34	36	70

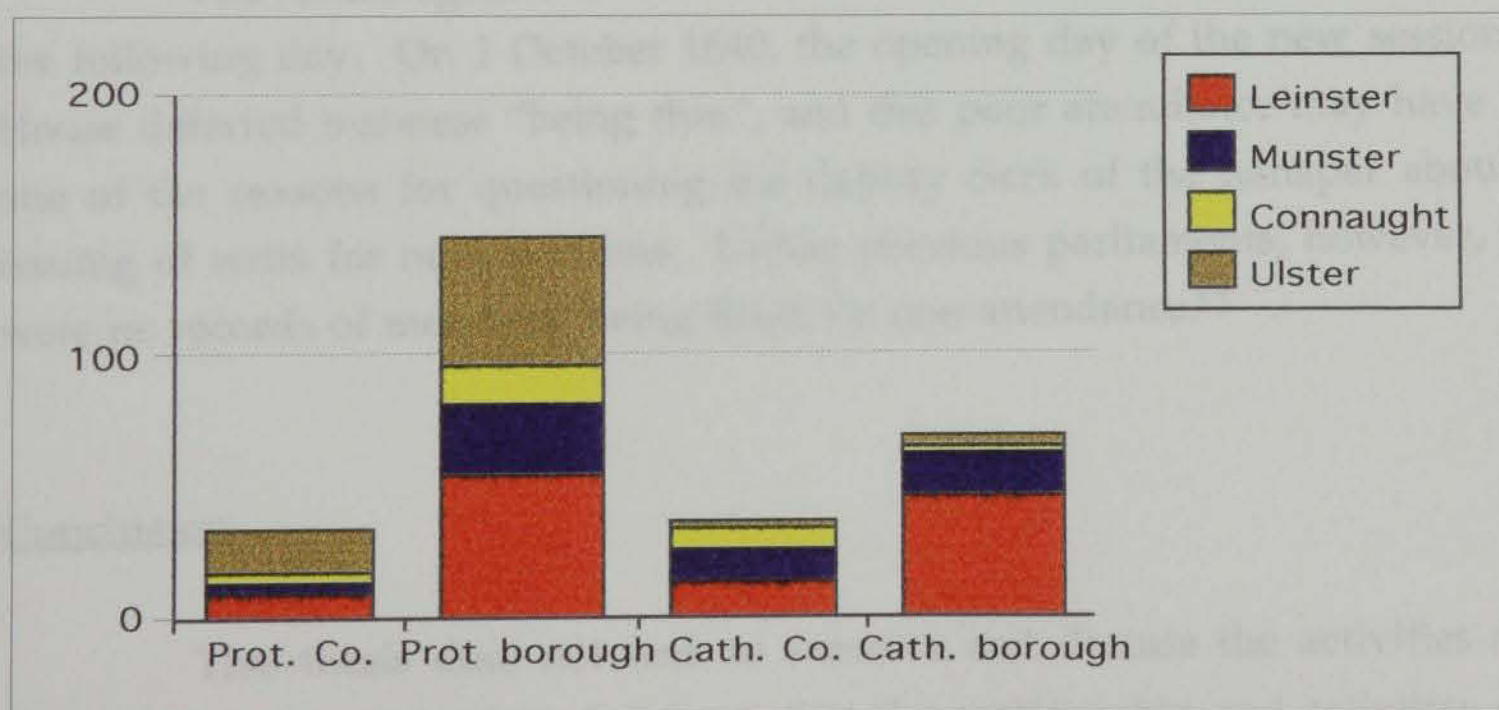
<sup>52</sup> Denny expressed the disquiet felt generally in Ireland at Wentworth's appointment "Ye lord Viscount Wentwort arrived in Irland to govern ye Kingdom as Deputy. Many men feare". Entry in Denny's diary, 23 July 1633, *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, VII, p. 371.



Ashe, Theobald Bourke, Piers Crosby, Esmond and Waddington changed religious allegiance or dropped their conformity after their returns. For the purpose of this thesis, M.P.s whose religious affiliation changed are classed by the religion they adhered to at the time of their return; Phelim O'Neill is therefore regarded as catholic and Ashe, Bourke, Crosby, Esmond and Waddington as protestants. Thus the figures in the collations in the Appendices are based on the following numbers:

**Table Six**  
**Overall Urban Members**

	Protestants	Catholics	Total
Leinster	53	45	98
Munster	28	16	44
Ulster	50	4	54
Connaught	15	5	20
Unknown	4	1	5
<b>Total</b>	<b>150</b>	<b>71</b>	<b>221</b>





	A	B	C	D	E	F
1		Prot. Co.	Prot borough	Cath. Co.	Cath. borough	Total
2	Leinster	10	53	14	45	122
3	Munster	4	28	11	16	59
4	Connaught	4	15	8	5	32
5	Ulster	16	50	3	4	73
6	Unknown		4		1	5
7	<b>Totals</b>	<b>34</b>	<b>150</b>	<b>36</b>	<b>71</b>	<b>291</b>

### Attendance

The level of members' attendance in the house is unclear. The general indication of attendance is through votes in the House or agreement to 'call' the House. There were very few divisions, and where they did occur, the numbers do not include the speaker, or, sometimes, the tellers. There were five divisions in the fourth session when attendance ranged between 175 and 100, excluding the speaker, and a number of m.p.s were licenced to be absent.

The House agreed to 'call itself' on 11 June 1640, and this happened on the following day. On 1 October 1640, the opening day of the new session, the House deferred business "being thin", and this poor attendance may have been one of the reasons for questioning the deputy clerk of the hanaper about the issuing of writs for new elections. Unlike previous parliaments, however, there were no records of members' being fined for non-attendance.<sup>53</sup>

### Conclusion

This thesis does not seek to examine and discuss the activities of the 1640 parliament. It is clear, however, that the membership and activities of the House reflected, affected and contributed to the prevailing political climate in Ireland in the early 1640s. Its proceedings demonstrated the shifting allegiances and loyalties of both the native inhabitants of Ireland and the more recent

<sup>53</sup> see McGrath, 1613. pp 196-202, for a discussion of levels of attendance and participation in the 1613 Commons.



settlers, members' commitment to parliament as a forum for solving their community's problems and, ultimately, the breakdown of consensus in Ireland.

In that context, therefore, the identities, backgrounds and connections of the m.p.s can provide valuable information about the men who formed the Irish political establishment at the time, many of whom also played a significant role in the following decades. Chapter Two examines the biographies of the individuals who made up the 1640 Irish House of Commons.







WILLIAM ALFORD (Aldford, Alfrey), Ballinakill  
s. William Alford; d. 1642

The Alfords were a Sussex family, and the Irish branch was established by Lancelot, who came to Ireland c1548. His brother Roger was Burley's secretary and Lancelot held a number of crown offices, including clerk of the hanaper (1561), surveyor general and chief remembrancer of the exchequer (1572). It is difficult to distinguish William from his father, but a William Alford was a member of a Kildare jury in 1625, and both Williams and their son and brother, Francis, leased lands from the Ridgeway family who controlled Ballinakill in 1629. Ballinakill was a garrison town and Lord Conway requested payment of a Captain Alford's wages in 1626. The depositions indicate the Alfords' prosperity - William sr. claimed losses of Stg.£3,200, including £1,200 in cattle, horses and sheep and £600 in annual rents and profits.<sup>1</sup> Their mill was burnt by protestant troops in April 1643. William jr. was killed in a battle with the County Kilkenny Irish in September 1642; his corpse was displayed on Ballinakill's market cross and his face allegedly mutilated by Mountgarrett's daughter Ellice.<sup>2</sup> He resigned his seat on 4 June 1641.

HENRY ARCHER (-1604-1644<sup>3</sup>), Kilkenny

e.s. Walter Archer (d. 1626) and Elizabeth, da. Henry Shee, Kilkenny; m. -1626, Elizabeth, da. Nicholas Fitzharris, New Ross.

A member of an old-established Kilkenny family, Henry, an alderman from 1628, was mayor of the city as his father and grandfather had been. The Shees, Archers and Rothes\* supplied Kilkenny members of every parliament between 1559 and 1634, and his wife's family (which included Fitzharris\*) represented New Ross in 1585 and 1613. He lived at Muckully, Kildare, and held over 4,743 acres in Kilkenny (as well as other property held jointly with Mountgarrett), and a further 519 acres in Carlow and Tipperary. He and his brother Patrick (who supplied vast quantities of money to Ormond) were listed as chief rebels in Kilkenny in January 1642. Patrick was a member of the

<sup>1</sup> Deposition of William Alfrey Esq., 22 December 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 814*, ff 84r,161r.

<sup>2</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 812*, ff 202v-203r; the context suggests that he was a soldier.

<sup>3</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 815*, f. 386v reports that Henry Archer murdered an Englishman at Brittas, Queen's County, in August 1652; this was presumably another man of the same name.



Confederation and Henry (who was regarded as a member of the 'peace party') was general treasurer and receiver of revenue for the Confederation in 1642. He was also active in providing arms and supplies valued at £6,954 to the Confederate army. Their brother-in-law Nicholas Fitzharris was collector of monies in Wexford.

RICHARD ASHE (Ash), (?1609-1659?), Belturbet

? e.s. Henry or ? 2 s. of Nicholas Ash, Newtown, Meath, and Cavan; ? m. Alice, da. Bishop Lewis Jones; m. Maud, da. William Dowdall and \_\_\_\_\_ Dempsie.

Ashe was presumably a member of the new English settler family which acquired lands in Meath (by the marriage of Sir Thomas<sup>4</sup> to a member of the old English Bailey family) and in Cavan by grants of land to Thomas and his brother Nicholas in 1603 and 1612. Both brothers' lands passed to Nicholas's eldest son Henry's son, presumably Richard; if so he was born in 1609.<sup>5</sup> His presumed marriage to Alice Jones would have strengthened his links with the establishment, and may have made him Oliver Jones's\* brother-in-law, and provided a connection with his neighbours, as Oliver's brother Henry married Culme's\* sister. Richard lived at Lissemaine, Cavan, on property leased from the Culmes\*. He was a former servant of Sir Stephen Butler.<sup>6</sup> He was involved in Cavan affairs, serving as a commissioner to inquire into the state of lands granted to William Bailey in 1628<sup>7</sup> and to reedify church buildings in Kilmore (1633), and as a j.p. He was a witness to a 1640 deed, signed in Belturbet, between the Waterhouses of Cavan and John Madden of Dublin. When Bedell finally dislodged Cooke\* as register of Kilmore, he replaced him with Ashe, whom the Bishop's son-in-law described as "*a man that entirely loved [Bedell], and would be governed and directed by him in the execution of that place.*"<sup>8</sup> This confidence was misplaced - on the outbreak of the rebellion Ashe turned to mass, and became a "*great advisor of rebels.*"<sup>9</sup> He besieged Francis Hamilton's\* castle

4 m.p. Trim 1613. McGrath, 1613. p. 59 and B. McGrath, County Meath members of parliament, 1560-1613. *Riocht na Midhe*, IX(2), 1996. pp 60-72.

5 *Chancel. Inq. Ultonia, Cavan*, Car. I (20) Henry's son's name is blank in the inquisition.

6 A local settler, and m.p. for Belturbet in 1634; Butler left Ashe 40 /- in his will.

7 This suggests an earlier birth date than 1609.

8 E.S. Shuckburgh (ed.), *Two biographies of William Bedell, Bishop of Kilmore*. (Cambridge, 1902). p. 51.

9 *T.C.D. MS. 832*, f. 1r.



at Croghan and gave quarter on its surrender in June 1642. According to Culme\*, he went "to Masse and was at the siege of Droghedagh, and at most of ye Rebells meetings within [Cavan]. And at a Sessions wch. the Rebells kept in the first weeke of ye last lente he wth severall others bound themselves publiquely wth an oath to maintain the cause they had in hand for the freedom of their religion."<sup>10</sup> He acted as host to Owen Roe O'Neill in the winter of 1648-9, which suggests that he may have played a role in forging Ormond's cease-fire with O'Neill.

ROBERT BAYLIE (BAILEY, BAILIFFE), Cavan County.

m. by 1641, Penelope (d. 1666), da. \_\_\_ Hartlib, London, and \_\_\_ who rem. Lucas Dillon, Trinity Island, Cavan.<sup>11</sup> d. 1650.

Robert was presumably related to the planter William Bailey of Finnylton (Finlaystown), Renfrewshire, who was granted denization in 1610 and 1,000 acres in Cavan in the following year. William was an effective planter and presented 34 or 35 men in the 1630 Cavan muster. Edward Bailey also settled in Cavan and was employed by Forth\* in his affairs there in January 1629. Robert may also have had other, more important connections - the Rev. Lewis Bailey accompanied James to England in 1603 and later married Anne, daughter of Sir Henry Bagnal of Newry. Lewis became chaplain to Prince Henry and preceptor to Charles. He left his property to his wife, her sister Magdalen, and his daughter Mary, wife of William Hill; his will does not mention other Irish connections.<sup>12</sup> He was granted 3 poles of land in Cavan in 1628 and his denization in May 1634. His personal wealth is unclear, but his property interests presumably yielded an adequate living and his wife's family was wealthy. Two depositions in the 1640s listed debts of £268 due from him.<sup>13</sup> His marriage provided a number of significant links, as his step-father-in-law belonged to the most prominent old English local families. Lucas was a catholic but many other Dillons, including his brother Robert\* and nephew James\*, were protestant. Penelope's father was a wealthy London merchant and her sister married William Bailey, future Bishop

<sup>10</sup> Deposition of Arthur Culme\*, 9 May 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 832*, f. 116v.

<sup>11</sup> Clogie, *Bedell*, p. 193; *T.C.D. MS. 833*, f. 213r; Lucas was m.p. for County Cavan in 1634.

<sup>12</sup> *P.R.O. L., Prob. 11/161/53*, will of Lewis Bailey.

<sup>13</sup> *T.C.D. MSS 810*, f. 136v, (Deposition of James Ellis of Dublin) and *832*, f. 2-5r (Deposition of the Rev. Alex Commine, Vicar of Kilkin and Kniukrridge, Cavan).



of Kilmore who acted with Cooke\* in his dispute with Robert's neighbour, Bishop Bedell in 1639. Moynes\* was another neighbour. Bailey was a soldier, variously described as captain, and as major (in Brome's\* regiment in the new army) by 1640. On the outbreak of the rebellion, he was reported to be preparing to resist the rebels at Cavan and was serjeant major by the following February. Seven months later he commanded 100 men under Ormond. He was again serjeant-major, this time under Crawford, in 1643, and his troops were quartered in Cooke Street, Dublin in the following year. As Colonel Bailey (a rank he retained to his death) he was at Castletowntara, Meath in January 1646 and part of Cadogan's\* garrison at Navan and Athboy from June 1647 to at least November 1648. Like Moyne's\* wife, Mrs. Bailey took refuge in Bishop Bedell's house in November 1641. Robert stayed with the Rev. George Crichton in Virginia in early 1642. He signed the 1644 *Humble petition of the protestant subjects*. His widow was granted 951 acres in Clenawley Barony, Cavan, to cover his arrears of £580 15s. 9d, due for service in England and Ireland. Robert devised these lands to her, William and Henry Bailey, in his will of 19 February 1650. Penelope sold them to Sir John Cole, William's\* son, eight years later, but she clearly retained some lands in Cavan, as her address was given as Gurtman, Cavan, on her death.

PEREGRINE BANNISTER (BANNASTRE, BANASTRE, BANESTER).

Clonakilty

m. ? Elizabeth \_\_\_\_\_; d. 1647-59.

Bannister's parentage is unknown but he spent his youth with his uncle Sir William Stanley in the Low Countries, as Spinola's page. His recusant connections were not limited to his own family - his wife's two sisters were nuns in Flanders and he remained in contact with many Catholics, including friars, who used him as a channel to pass messages to Lord Cork. While his main Irish connection was with Boyle, his original link may have been St. Leger\*, who was in the Low Countries at the same time as Peregrine. He settled in Cork, where he was Boyle's tenant and follower by 1614;<sup>14</sup> he regularly borrowed (and presumably repaid) money from Boyle and presented Lady Boyle with a "young

<sup>14</sup> Appleby, J.C., (ed.), *A Calendar of material relating to Ireland from the high court of admiralty examinations, 1536-1641*. (Dublin, 1992). p. 288.



*ambling graii nagg*" in August 1619.<sup>15</sup> He was well integrated into local society, having connections with the settler family of Clayton, acting as sheriff of Cork in 1619-20 and on the 1624-5 commission for the peace and submitting a proposal to free the Irish coasts from pirates. His conviction for the manslaughter of Herbert Nicholas was raised in the Commons on 22 June 1641. He was a witness to Perceval and Boyle deeds in 1632 and 1635 respectively. His November 1642 deposition claimed the loss of an estate worth £2,786, including £220 for 43 years of the lease of his farm at Ffarinsesry, Carbery Barony. He claimed to have spent £2,000 on improvements to his property.<sup>16</sup> He was very active in the defence of Munster in the 1640s, being chiefly associated with Inchiquin.<sup>17</sup> He was captain of a troop of dragoons quartered at Donneraile in 1641-2 and of the Munster Council of War by October 1642; he took depositions in Kerry and Clare in 1643-4. He held the rank of major and was granted £200 by Parliament for his services in Ireland in April 1646 and was in London in the following month. He was back in Cork by August, where he signed a letter supporting Inchiquin. In the following June he fought with him near Cappoquin and was still in the same company in September 1647, with the rank of serjeant major.

The Barnwalls were one of the most prominent old English families in Ireland, and most of their property was concentrated in counties Dublin and Meath, where they played an important part in local administration, although they also had some interests in Louth. The main branches were Trimblestown, Turvey, Crickstown and Kilbrew; less important ones were based at Drimnagh, Terenure and other places. The head of the family was Lord Trimbleston, but the family had intermarried with all the prominent old English families of the Pale and with some native Irish ones.

NICHOLAS BARNWALL, (1592-1663), Dublin County

e.s. Sir Patrick Barnwall (d. 1623), Turvey, Gracedieu and Fieldstown, Dublin, and

---

<sup>15</sup> *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., I, p. 228.

<sup>16</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 824*, ff 23-4; an Elizabeth Bannister, presumably his widow, was living at Farney Shesiry, Cork, in 1660. *Census*, p. 217.

<sup>17</sup> Another Banaster (Captain John) was also active in Munster, including the defence of Bandon in 1643, and it is not always possible to distinguish the activities of the two men. A Francis Bannister was minister in Cashel in 1642, (*T.C.D. MS. 821*, f. 30v).



Mary, da. Sir Nicholas Bagnall; m. 1617, Bridget, da. Henry Lord Kildare, and Frances Howard, da. Charles, Earl of Nottingham, w. of Rory O'Donnell, Earl of Tyrconnell; 5s., 4 da.;

ed. Douai; Grey's Inns, 1611;

Baron Turvey, Viscount Barnwall of Kingsland, 1646.<sup>18</sup>

M.P. Dublin County, 1634

Sir Patrick was one of the most respected members of the old English community.<sup>19</sup> Nicholas inherited substantial property and his personal connections were extensive. He had land deals with the Dowdals\* and Peppard\* in the 1620s and 1630s. Even before 1641 he held over 2,000 acres in Roscommon, which he retained in the 1650s. Like other landowners, he held advowsons, one of which (Donnapatrick, Meath) he sold to Richard Bolton in 1632. Apart from his links to other Barnwalls\*, he was related to the most prestigious Gaelic and old English families, the O'Neills\* and Fitzgeralds\*; his mother provided close connections with the new English Bagnall network. He was a brother-in-law of Piers Cosby\*, Lord Slane (who provided a link with Lord Antrim), and other influential men including Thomas Aylmer of Lyons and Rory O'More (a connection of Sarsfield\* and O'Reilly\*), father-in-law of Lords Gormanston and Fingall and Nugent's\* nephew. Lucas Fitzgerald\*, Bellings\*, Stanihurst\*, the Dillons\* and Lords Dunsany and Howth were cousins. He lived at Drimnagh, Dublin, and was heavily involved in local administration. He signed the 1625 petition of the lords of the Pale to the King and was a member of the Dublin commission of the peace. Two years later, he was a commissioner to raise money for the army in County Dublin and in that June was added to the committee to devise means of raising extra money for the army from the Great Assembly. He became a freeman of Dublin in 1629. With Clanricarde, Viscount Dillon, Lynch\*, T. Burke\*, Geoffrey Browne\*, Waller\* and John Walsh\*, he signed the petition and offer to Charles from the inhabitants of Connaught, Clare, Tipperary and Limerick, in April 1641. He had dealings on the Dublin Staple in 1639. The Commons considered a bill concerning his property in June 1640. He was an active m.p., especially in 1634 but also in 1640 and was a member of the committee sent to England in November 1640. In November 1641 he was

---

<sup>18</sup> He was also knighted in the 1640s.

<sup>19</sup> Sir Patrick's position may be judged by the administration's concern to keep him out of the 1613 Parliament, McGrath, 1613, pp 37-9 and *D.N.B.*



appointed governor of Dublin County, with a commission to raise and command forces to defend Dublin with 300 men; he took no part in the rebellion, giving shelter to Sir Thady Duff's wife at Christmas 1641, and his castle at Ballyloge, Roscommon, was used as a refuge by protestants from Longford in November 1641 and March 1642. He used his licence from the lords justice to travel to England, where he stayed to defend and promote Irish interests; in March 1642 the privy council recommended him to Lord Leicester and defended him from "*malicious rumours*". His son Patrick served as a colonel of horse in England from the 1640s. He returned to Ireland in March 1644. He was transplanted to 135 acres in Roscommon, although he was living at Turvey with his sons in 1659. He retained his Roscommon lands. His was clearly regarded as a special case: an 1656 affidavit in his favour declared that he was "*much troubled at the barbarousness of the rebels, and never said anything in their favour, or held any intelligence with them, or abetted them*".<sup>20</sup> He was in London in 1656-7, attempting to retain his estates and using his prominent connections (he wrote to his "cousin" Arthur Annesley, m.p. for Dublin in the Commonwealth and later Lord Anglesey) to that end.

PATRICK BARNWALL, (c1584-c1664), Trim

e.s. John Barnwall, Kilbrew (d. 1590) and Eleanor, (d. 1613+), da. Ald. Christopher Seagrave, Dublin, and Alison Humphrey; she rem. 1) Edward Aylmer, Lyons; 2) John, s. Christopher Cheevers, Macetown, (d. 1599); 3) Thomas Fitzwilliam; m. 1) Ellis (d. 1622), da. Sir Richard Barnwall, Crickstown, 3s., 8 da.; 2) Cecily, da. William Fleming, Lord Slane, w. Sir Patrick Barnwall, Crickstown; 3) by 1633, \_\_\_\_\_, w. Jasper Hurlestown, Drogheda, merchant.

The Barnwalls of Kilbrew were one of the most respected gentry families of the Pale because of their substantial property, the family's antiquity and extensive connections. Apart from his strong links with other Barnwalls (especially Crickstown), Patrick was, through his father's siblings, connected to the Trevors\*, Cusacks\* and Dowdalls\* and through his mother's marriages with three other influential Pale families. His links with Dublin merchant families were strengthened by the grant of his own wardship to his uncle, Ald. Walter Seagrave, in 1590. Patrick's son Richard was m.p. for Swords in 1634 and his

<sup>20</sup> *Cal. Clarendon*, III, p. 182.



other children all married into notable Meath families. He was active in Meath administration, serving as sheriff in 1610-1, 1613-4 and 1622, signing the petition of the lords of the Pale to Charles in 1625, and sitting on the Meath commission of the peace in that year. Two years later he was commissioner to raise money for the army there. He held extensive property in Meath, especially in Ratoath, Moyfenragh and Duleek Baronies, where he held over 1100 acres on his own and another 1162 acres jointly. He repaid an old debt to Lord Cork in June 1634 and February 1635 and he had dealings on the Dublin Staple with James Tuite of Dublin in June 1639 and with Nicholas Whyte\* in the following March. He was appointed to the committee to confer with the Irish on 16 November 1641. He attended meetings about the rebellion in Platin and the general meetings of the Meath gentry at Knocklofty and Tara (which appointed him and Sir Richard\* to raise money in Ratoath, and made Patrick a captain for the Ratoath and Dunboyne Baronies); he was a member of the Meath Council of War, and was raising troops in Ratoath Barony. With his step-son Sir Richard Barnwall\* he wrote to the Lords justice in November / December 1641 to inform them of events in Meath, when they were described as "*two principal gentlemen of the County of Meath*".<sup>21</sup> Like many of his fellow gentry, his chief concern on the outbreak of the rebellion seems to have been to keep the peace and to prevent the violence from spreading. However, in January 1642 he accepted Lord Gormanston and Col. Hugh Byrne's order to travel to Wexford to arrange the purchase of powder which was being imported from France and the Low Countries. Presumably because of these activities, his protests that he attempted to remain outside the rebellion were regarded as unconvincing by the administration, which ordered him to be racked. He surrendered to Ormond in March 1642 and was sent as a prisoner to the lords justice. On his release from prison, his person and estates were placed under special protection of the state. He was in Kilkenny for the establishment of the Confederation, taking the Oath of Association in May 1642. He exchanged letters with Cadogan\* in 1645, evidently acting as agent for other gentry after the cessation. About the same time, he petitioned to be restored to his place in the Commons; this request was granted in February 1646, but he did not take his seat. He received orders from the commissioners of trust to raise troops in Meath in December 1649. Under the Commonwealth, his lands were declared forfeit, but he was not transplanted, perhaps because of his age, or because he was judged then, as later, to have been

---

<sup>21</sup> Lords Justice and Council to Leicester, 3 December 1641. *H.M.C. Ormond*, N.S., II, p. 33.



"one who from the beginning [of the rebellion] lived inoffensively." He testified in the Court of Claims in 1663 and is presumed to have died in the following year, or shortly afterwards.

PATRICK BARNWALL, Kells

d. 1645.

Patrick replaced Oliver Plunkett\*. His identity is unclear. He may have been the son of Nicholas\* Barnwall, and Bridget Fitzgerald. If so, he was born after 1618, was colonel of a regiment in the West Country in the royalist army in the 1640s and died unmarried in Ireland. The fact that Nicholas\* held lands in Kells supports this tentative identification. Alternative identifications are the son of Sir Richard\* Barnwall of Crickstown who was transplanted with his father to Clare in 1656, or the eldest son of John Barnwall of Mouncton, Meath.<sup>22</sup>

PETER BARNWALL (c1580-1645), Dublin County

4, but e.s.s. Edward Barnwall, Drimnagh and Terenure, and Elizabeth, da. Sir Peter Barnwall, Gracedieu; m. 1) \_\_\_\_\_; 2) before 1635, Jane, da. Robert Barnwall, Dunbroe, and Kinborough, da. Dr. James Good, London; at least 2s., 1 da.

M.P. Dublin County 1634

Peter was a member of a junior but well-established branch of the family, based in County Dublin and his property was at Terenure (560 acres) and Balrothery; he also owned lands at Ardee and Stackallan, Louth. He inherited his father's property and took livery of his estates in December 1609 with a fine of £80. Apart from his numerous Barnwall\* connections, he was Richard's\* father and Stafford\*'s father-in-law and his second marriage connected him to Talbot\* and other Dublin families.

Sir RICHARD BARNWALL (1602-1679), Meath

e.s. Sir Patrick Barnwall, Bart., Crickstown, and Cecilia (d. 1628) or Catherine Fleming, da. William, Lord Slane, and Eleanor Fitzgerald; she rem. Patrick

<sup>22</sup> John Barnwall of Mouncton died on 18 May 1598. *Chancel. Inq. Lagenia*, Dublin, Jac. I (39).



Barnwall\*, Kilbrew; m. 1) 1621, Thomasine (d. 1629), da. Edward Dowdall, Athlumney; 2) Julia, da. Sir Gerald Aylmer, Donadea, Kildare, Bart., and Julia Nugent, da. Lord Delvin;  
2nd. Bart., 1624.  
M.P. Meath 1634

The Barnwalls were established at Crickstown since the time of Sir Christopher, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, who lived there in 1440, but they were still a junior branch of the main family. They had substantial property in Meath: Richard held 4,293 acres alone and a further 764 acres jointly. He succeeded his father in 1624, but only took livery of his estates in 1629, although he was of full age at his father's death. This may have been the reason for his exclusion from the 1624-5 commission of the peace for Dublin. His family connections were with many of the most prominent old English families, especially the Fitzgeralds\*. He was Patrick Barnwall's\* step-son, Lord Slane's cousin and father-in-law, and cousin of the Dillons\*, Nugent\* and Lucas Fitzgerald\*; his brother-in-law was Laurence Dowdall.<sup>23</sup> He signed a bond for £150 with Richard Fitzgerald\* in July 1640; part of this debt was assigned to Lucas Fitzgerald\* in 1655. He was a member of the parliamentary committees on Trinity College Dublin and of the committee formed in November 1641 to confer with the Irish. On the outbreak of the rebellion, he and Patrick Barnwall\* wrote to the lords justice, when they were described as "*two principal gentleman of the County of Meath*".<sup>24</sup> He was one of the Meath gentry attending the meetings at Tara and Knockrofty, when he was appointed to the council to advise Lord Gormanston on the defence of the county. He was appointed a captain for the baronies of Ratoath and Dunboyne, and a member of the Meath Council of War. He was indicted for rebellion in 1642. A supporter of the Confederation, he was a member of the 1642-3 Leinster provincial council and muster-master of the Confederate army in Leinster in 1642. He was named as a possible agent to meet Ormond to discuss the catholics' petition to Charles in February 1643, when he was based in Kilkenny and brought weekly intelligence from Dublin; he signed the proclamation for the cessation eight months later. His troops fought at Kinnegad that October. With Trimbleston, Lucas Fitzgerald\* and others, he was a commissioner to govern the Irish quarters of Meath in October 1645. He

---

<sup>23</sup> of Athlumney, m.p. for Navan in 1634.

<sup>24</sup> Lords Justice and Council to Leicester, 3 December 1641. *H.M.C. Ormond*, N.S., II, p. 33.



commanded 100 horse and was charged by the Supreme Council with command of its troops in Monasterevan in 1647, the year in which he is said to have compounded for his estates. About that time he met Cadogan\* and other troops from King's County at Kilbeggan. He was a member of the last Supreme Council, 1648-9 and a commissioner of Trust. In July 1649, with Sir Lucas Dillon\*, he made an agreement with Owen Roe O'Neill and he fought at Kilkenny in November 1649. In the following July he and Nicholas Plunkett\* dealt with Ormond about army supplies, and in September he was at Athlone to assure Clanricarde of the obedience of the Leinster forces; with Walter Bagnall, he was agent from the old Confederate party to deal with the English Parliament's forces in March 1652. He is recorded as being excluded from Cromwell's Act of Grace, but was, with his son Patrick, transplanted to 2,500 acres in Clare. He was included in Charles's 1660 declaration, and was granted £41 in June 1661, which was paid by the following March; he was included in a 1664 list of dispossessed landowners who might be restored to their lands.

RICHARD BARNWALL (?1610-1660), Tagmon

2 but ? e.s.s. Peter Barnwall\*, Drimnagh and Terenure, and his first wife, \_\_\_\_\_; m. - 1645 Ursula, da. Matthew Plunkett, 5th. Lord Louth and Mary, da. Sir Richard Fitzgerald.<sup>25</sup>

Richard's mother's name is unknown. Most of his close relatives were other Barnwalls\*, although his stepmother provided a connection with Talbot\*. Richard's return is explained by his relationship (as Stafford's\* brother-in-law) with a prominent Wexford family. In 1653 his only child Mary married Roger Bellew. He was a collector of money for the Confederation in Meath in 1645 and may also have signed a bond on the Dublin Staple in October 1646.

ANDREW BARRETT (1601-1617-1646), Cork

e.s. Sir James Barrett, Castlemore, and Jennett, da. Dominick Sarsfield, Lord Kilmallock; m. 1640, Barbara (1614-1685), da. John Boyle; she rem. before 1668 Heyward St. Leger;  
Kt. 1639.

<sup>25</sup> Mary remarried Gerald Aylmer. Lodge, *Peerage*, VI, p. 169.



Barrett was the head of an established Cork family and his grandfather and namesake had been recorder of Cork and m.p. for the city in 1613. His mother linked him to another prominent, but during Dominick Sarsfield's lifetime, conforming, old English family. The Sarsfields were also linked to the Roche\* and Loftus\* families, and the Tirries (which provided two Cork m.p.s in 1613 and the Catholic bishop for that diocese). Andrew's own marriage linked him closely to the extensive Munster Boyle\* network. He succeeded his father in 1629-30, but as a minor, his wardship was granted to his uncle William Sarsfield (m.p. for Cork in 1634) and other local gentry, including Randal Clayton and Perceval. Despite his marriage and the strong protestantism of some of his guardians, he was apparently a catholic. He was in arbitration with other family members in 1640, attempting to resolve land disputes. He was a member of the parliamentary committee on Trinity College in February 1641. He apparently played very little part in the upheavals of the 1640s and was included in St. Leger\*'s April 1642 list of those still loyal to the crown.

JOHN BARRY, Tallow

s. William Barry; m. \_\_\_\_\_;

d. -1651

John FitzWilliam Barry signed a bond for £3 with Philip Perceval before the King's Bench in 1631 and was still being pursued by his creditor for £1 three years later. He lived at Manor Barry,<sup>26</sup> Cork, and had at least two brothers, Nicholas and James. The Barrys of Orrery were one of the local families who suffered most from Perceval's efficient use of mortgages to acquire property, and he was presumably related to James FitzNicholas Barry of Annagh.<sup>27</sup> Perceval was still receiving rent from Nicholas and James Barry in 1651, but not from John, although the widowed Mrs. Barry whose rent was £5, may have been his relict. He may have been John Barry of Balliclogh, Orrery Barony, also known as MacRobertson,<sup>28</sup> whose servants attacked John Slade, a local protestant, early in 1642, although MacRobertson had submitted by 30 November 1641.

<sup>26</sup> Presumably the same as Barryscourt, between Cork and Youghal. *T.C.D. MS. 826*, f. 4v.

<sup>27</sup> M. MacCarthy-Morrogh, *The Munster plantation: English migration to southern Ireland, 1583-1641*. (Oxford, 1986). pp 165-6. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II, p. 54.

<sup>28</sup> *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II, p. 60.



MacRobertson was married. Alternatively, he could have been the John Barry of Dreinagh, also in Orrery, who fought at the battle of Liscarroll, where he was reported to have been one of the rebels killed. He should not be confused with his namesake, John Barry of Liscarroll, a close associate of Ormond and friend of Perceval.

RICHARD BARRY, Dublin

2 but e.s.s. Ald. James Barry, Dublin, and Catherine, da. Ald. Edmund Burn (Barraun), Dublin; m. Anne (d. 1667), da. Ald. James Cusack, Rathgar; 6s., 3 da.; d. 1648-9.

M.P. Dublin City 1613 and 1634.

The Barrys were an old English family, originally part of the Ballymore branch, who were settled in Dublin by 1577, when James Barry was sheriff. Richard was a merchant, and, like his father, served as both sheriff and mayor of Dublin, in Richard's case in 1604 and 1610 respectively. He was a member of the 1624-5 commission of the peace in County Dublin, and five years later became recorder of the City. He was very active in the city's administration, serving as its agent in England and, repeatedly, as treasurer. He also leased land from the Corporation. A firm protestant and a committed supporter of the administration, he was Wentworth's candidate for Dublin in 1634 (he may also have been returned for Dublin in 1628). Wentworth commended him to Coke in June 1634. He had considerable property in Dublin, and received a grant of rectories in Kilkenny in 1612, and lands in Kilcarne, Meath, in 1627. His deposition claimed losses of £2,526 for property in Dublin, Meath and Wicklow, and a further £3,253 16s. for stock, goods and crops.<sup>29</sup> His connections were mainly with other Dublin merchant families, and most of his children married into these families. The most noteworthy were James (m.p. for Lismore in 1634), who married William Parsons's\* daughter Catherine, and Mary, who married the protestant lawyer Donnellan.<sup>30</sup> He was an uncle of the Wares\* and the Cusacks\*.

<sup>29</sup> Deposition made by his brother Nicholas, 5 March 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 809*, ff 241-2; a further deposition, also made by Nicholas on the same date, claimed other losses, *T.C.D. M.S. 810*, f. 36v.

<sup>30</sup> m.p. for Trinity College in 1634.



JOHN BELLEW (1487-1627), Louth

The Bellews were one of the oldest and most influential old English families in Louth. They had been settled at CastleBellew since 1403 and had intermarried with most other old English families of the Pale.

CHRISTOPHER BELLEW (1602-c1660), Louth

CHRISTOPHER BELLEW (1602-c1660), Louth

e.s. John Bellew, Capletown (Castletown) Bellew, (d.1627) and Amanett Barnwall, Drogheda; m. by 1627, Frances, da. Matthew Plunkett, Lord Louth; Kt. 1628.

M.P. Louth 1634

Christopher inherited extensive lands in Louth and Meath (where he held 1680 acres) from his father. CastletownBellew lay one mile west of Dundalk.<sup>31</sup> His connections throughout the Pale were extensive: his father linked him to the Plunketts\*, Sarsfields\* and Nugents\* and his aunt's marriage provided a Taaffe\* connection. Through his grandmother he was a cousin of the Cusack\* network, including Barry\* and Forth\*. His sister married Lord Iveagh and Christopher's own marriage provided a close connection with Louth's leading titled family. He was a member of the committee which drew up charges against Wandesford\*, Radcliffe, Lowther and Bramhall, and of the committee appointed to treat with the Irish rebels. On the outbreak of the rebellion, he was given a commission to govern Louth, jointly with Lord Louth and John Bellew\*. He attended the meeting of Louth gentry at Tullaghesker, with his troops; the meeting appointed Louth colonel general of the forces in the county, and Christopher as substitute, in case of Louth's refusal. Christopher declined the commission, which was accepted by Christopher Barnwall of Rathesker. He seems to have kept out of the action in the rebellion, although he was accused of stealing property at Drumboate, Monaghan, in October 1641. He was indicted for rebellion in 1642 and his lands were declared forfeit but more than 5,800 acres was restored to his son (later Baron Duleek) after the restoration.

<sup>31</sup> for the Bellews' acquisition of Castletown see H. O'Sullivan, 'The March of south-east Ulster in the 15th. and 16th. centuries: a period of change' in R. Gillespie and H. O'Sullivan (eds.), *The Borderlands: essays on the history of the Ulster-Leinster borders*. (Belfast, 1989). pp 55-73.



JOHN BELLEW (1607-1679), Louth

e.s. Patrick Bellew (d. 1611), Lisraney, and Mary, da. James Waring, Waringstown (Anagassen); she rem. Patrick Russell; m. 1634 Mary, da. Robert Dillon, Clonbrock;

ed. Gray's Inns, 1627.

John lived at Lisraney, but is more usually described as of Willetstown (Willistown, which he purchased from George Gernon of Dunmoghlan in 1632), Greystone, Bellewstown or Barmeath, all properties which he owned in Louth. He may also have been Bellew of Stamidden, Meath, who guaranteed a bond for Mr. Draycott on the Drogheda Staple in July 1641, the same year that he bought 40 acres at Drumcar for £200, a 1,000 year lease of Branganstown for £442, and 60 acres at Drumcar, from Simon Opie. He took a 99 year lease of the lands of Thomas Dawe of Branganstown for £600 and a mortgage of William Moore's lands at Barmeath in 1644-5. He was a cousin of Christopher Bellew\*, and connected to the Dillons\*, Taaffe\*, Plunkett\* of Bewley, the Nugents\* and Sarsfields\*. He was a j.p. by 1639. An active member of the Parliament, he took the remonstrance to England in 1640, and returned with the commission for the continuation of Parliament. He was a member of the committee appointed on 16 November 1641 to confer with the Irish and was granted a commission to administer martial law in Louth in that month, presumably because he was also sheriff of the county. He attended the meeting of Louth gentry at Tullaghesker in early November, when he was one of the officers appointed for the county and was already reported as having joined the rebellion by November 25, although he was granted a safe conduct to travel to Dublin in December. He was listed as a rebel in a government proclamation in the following February. He took the Oath of Association in 1642 and joined the Confederate army in that October as a captain, with his brother Richard as his lieutenant. His company comprised 83 men in 1646, and he became commander of the Leinster army and commander of the artillery. In the following year he was Lieutenant General and took part in expeditions to Connaught and Cork; he was also a member of the 1647 General Assembly. His command was incorporated into the royalist army in 1649 and he was lieutenant of the ordnance when taken prisoner by Michael Jones at Bagotrath that August. He was released after the battle of Rathmines, on payment of a heavy fine. Stephens's\* widow petitioned Ormond for the



collection of a debt from him in the same year. He successfully petitioned Ormond for reprieve from a death sentence for robbing Sir Richard Butler's "people" in December 1649. He was based in Birr in the following month, and was in Loughrea in August 1650, from where he petitioned for his arrears. His lands in Louth were declared forfeit, despite a petition from Cecily Jones who had been given shelter at Willetstown, and he was assigned 800 acres in Galway. Consideration of his joint petition (with Richard Barnwall\* and his Louth neighbour Laurence Dowdall) against transplantation was deferred in July 1654 and rejected in April 1655. He was in Dublin in January 1655, when his interests were represented by Sir Robert Talbot and others. He regained some lands at Barmeath and Willistown after 1661, having travelled to London on Taaffe's\* business, with letters in his favour from Taaffe\*, Ormond and Sir Thomas Stanley, the latter at the request of Sir Robert Talbot.<sup>32</sup> Taaffe\* protected his connections and followers and, having had a grant of some of Bellew's lands, passed them on to John. He should not be confused with his namesake, Christopher's son.

RICHARD BELLINGS (BEALING), (c1603-1677), Callan  
 e.s. Sir Henry Bellings and Maud \_\_\_\_, Killussey, Kildare; m. 1625, Margaret, da. Lord Mountgarrett and Margaret O'Neill, da. Hugh, Lord Tyrone; 4s., 1 da.;  
 ed. Lincoln's Inns, 1619.

The Bellings were an old English family. Sir Henry (described as a corrupt sheriff) held considerable property in Dublin, Wicklow and Kildare which Richard inherited. His marriage brought a range of influential connections - especially lords Mountgarrett and Ormond and the English catholic peer, Castlehaven, and their network of Poyntz\*, James\* and Piers\* Butler, Mervyn\* and Piers Crosbie\*. He was also connected to the Barnwalls\* and Cheevers\*. He lived at Cryhelpe, Wicklow, and a private bill on his behalf was introduced in the Commons in October 1640. A well respected linguist, lawyer, poet and, later, historian,<sup>33</sup> his long-standing friendship with Ormond explains

<sup>32</sup> Talbot was the son of Sir William Talbot of Carton; he was m.p. for Wicklow in 1634 and a cousin of Henry Talbot\*.

<sup>33</sup> He produced a 6th. volume of the *Arcadia* (1626) and *The Eighth day*. (1661). As its title suggests, his history was an apologia for the old English. *Vindicae eversae catholicorum hiberniae*. (1654). His *Fragmentum historicum* is published in Lodge, *Des. Cur. Hib.*, II, pp 151-480.



his replacing Wharton\* as m.p. for Callan. In November 1641 he was a member of the commission appointed to confer with Ulster rebels. He was accused of treason and indicted for rebellion. On the establishment of the Confederation, he became secretary to the Supreme Council, where he played a key role in its operations. From 1643 he acted as an Ormondist. Although they were not generally on friendly terms, Antrim was to regard him as one of his supporters in 1644, the year in which he was admitted a freeman of Waterford and when he was one of the Confederate agents to treat with Clanricarde.<sup>34</sup> In the following year he travelled to Rome, to solicit funds for the Confederation, and was received by the pope; it was after this meeting, although not at his suggestion, that Innocent determined to send Rinuccini to Ireland as his representative. He and Rinuccini visited Paris where they met Mazarin in April 1645. In 1647, he was proposed as a possible secretary of state to Ormond. His friendship with Ormond made relations between the Marquis and the Council easier, and in December 1649 he was in Kilkenny acting for the Commissioners of Trust in their correspondence with Ormond. He was in Galway in June 1650 with Sir George Lane, on Ormond's business. He left Ireland shortly afterwards and lived on the continent under the pseudonym Kingston. He maintained his close contact with Ormond and corresponded with Inchiquin and James Sydenham. He was in Paris in 1654, where he was friendly with other emigrant Irish, protestant and catholic; in the following year he travelled to Poland with Muskerry\*, but was back in Paris by November 1656, bringing letters from Ormond and Sir Richard Browne, resident for the King in Paris. He accompanied Ormond on part of the way on his secret trip to England in 1658 to contact royalists there. He was still in Paris in 1659-60 and was included in Charles's declaration in the latter year. He also became a close friend of Clarendon, whose will he witnessed. He lived in London for much of the 1660s, where he was an important member of the Court. He wrote to Ormond in July 1675, from Dublin, concerning mistakes in accounts of proceedings in the 1640s and 1650s. His son and namesake was secretary to Catherine of Braganza and signatory to the 1670 Treaty of Dover.

---

<sup>34</sup> This was his first meeting with Clanricard, whom he much impressed. J. Lowe, (ed.), *The Letter book, of the earl of Clanricarde, 1643-7.* (Dublin, 1983). pp 77-9.



WILLIAM BILLINGSLEY, Downpatrick

4 s. Francis Billingsley, and Bridget (b. after 1580), da. Sir Thomas Vernon, Haslington, Nantwich, Cheshire, and Dorothy, da. William Egerton, Wrynhill, Betley.

? ed. Cambridge, 1615, B.A., M.A.

d. 1642-1647.

M.P. Downpatrick 1634.

Billingsley was an associate of Wentworth, and acted as agent in land purchases for the lord deputy and Lady Carlisle, especially in Wicklow. He also received a 31 year lease of crown lands near Navan in 1634 and held lands there with Robert Dillon\* and Lord Roscommon. He apparently lived in Fishamble Street, Dublin. He was a soldier, a cornet in Wentworth's regiment in the 1630s and captain in Robert Dillon's\* regiment in 1640 when his brother Edward (later trustee for the '49 Officers) was his lieutenant; in late 1641 and early 1642 he regularly received money to pay William Wentworth's troops. He became captain in Sir Henry Tichbourne's regiment in 1642 and his troops were garrisoned in Strangford. Another brother, John, was captain by 1644. It is sometimes difficult to disentangle the military activities of the three brothers; one was a captain in Sir Charles Coote's\* regiment in Wicklow in 1641-2.<sup>35</sup> His usefulness to the administration and his elections are explained not by his connections with his fellow Shropshire men, the local settler family of Kinaston, but through his links with Philip Mainwaring\*. The secretary of state's brother married Edward Trevor's\* daughter Eva, whose family had considerable influence in Down. Mainwaring\* was a cousin of the Egertons of Wrynhill, through the marriage of his aunt Anne Mainwaring to Sir Ralph Egerton, cousin of Dorothy Vernon, whose family was also a neighbour of the Mainwarings at Nantwich. Billingsley had other influential connections in England: his uncle, Sir George Vernon (c1578-1639), was one of the barons of the exchequer and a judge in Hampden's Ship Money Case.

HENRY BINGHAM (BINGLEY) (c1573-1642-9), Castlebar

e.s. Sir George Bingham (d. 1599, bur. Christ Church, Dublin), Dorset, and Cecily, da. Richard Martin, Athelhampton, Dorset (they m. 1569); m. by 1624, Catherine

---

35 *T.C.D. MS. 810, f. 108r.*



(d. 1673-4), da. John Byrne, Ballinclough, Wicklow, and Cabinteely, Dublin;  
ed. Oxford;  
Bart. 1634;  
d. 1642-49; Bur. Chapel in Castlebar.  
M.P. Castlebar 1634.<sup>36</sup>

The Bingham's connections with Ireland began with his uncle Richard, president of Connaught and m.p. for Roscommon in 1585, and his father, who was governor of Sligo in 1593. Henry served as captain in the army and acquired lands in Galway and Mayo. He sold his lands at Inisturk to Myles Bourke in 1613. He held over 7,700 acres in Mayo, although much of it was classed as "unprofitable". 726 acres were reserved for him in Aghlish, Mayo, in the transplantation. He and his uncle John<sup>37</sup> (whose property he inherited in 1632) were among Castlebar's original burgesses in 1613. He was sheriff of Galway in 1607 and of Mayo in 1639. He was a member of the Mayo commission for the peace in 1624-5 and a commissioner to raise money for the army there in 1627, when he was described as captain. With others, he signed a testimonial of the loyalty of the local man Laughlin O'Kelly in 1629. He was also connected with the new English Roscommon family of Ormsby and his daughter married Sir George Browne of the Neale. Not all of his relatives were new English, however; his wife was Irish, and his brother-in-law, Robert Kearnie, also lived in Mayo.

His castle at Castlebar was a refuge for local protestants in the early weeks of the rebellion; it was surrendered to Lord Mayo on quarter early in 1642 and some survivors of the siege were murdered at Shrule. The ease with which quarter was negotiated was perhaps facilitated by his following Mayo's example of attending mass and his decision to live among the Irish in Thomond at the turn of the year 1641-2, perhaps prompted by his wife.

ROBERT BYRON (BEROWNE, BIRONE), (1604-09-1673), Augher

6 s. Sir John Byron, Newstead, Nottinghamshire, and Anne, da. Sir Richard

---

<sup>36</sup> Henry was badly injured in a fall from a horse in November 1634 and requested that a new m.p. should be elected to replace him; the writ was issued, but Henry continued to sit in the Commons, and the Lords accepted his claim of privilege as an m.p. on 27 February 1635 in a land dispute with Richard Bourke Mac Thomas Roe.

<sup>37</sup> m.p. for Castlebar in 1613, McGrath, 1613. pp 90-1.



Molyneux, Sefton, Lancashire; m. by 1642, Lucy West, (d. 1682) da. Lord Delaware; Kt. 1644.

Byron was a member of a noted Nottinghamshire family; his father was created knight of the bath at James I's coronation. Robert's older brother, John, m.p. for Nottingham in 1624 and 1627-8, first Lord Byron, also married a daughter of Lord Delaware; Wenman\* and Wharton\* were other connections of that family. Robert came to Ireland c1636 when he purchased an Irish captaincy from Barnabas Bryan.<sup>38</sup> He was a captain in Sir Henry Tichbourne's regiment in the Irish standing army by 1638 and was still in that regiment two years later when he was serjeant major of brigades at a salary of 5s. *per diem*, and when he fought at Drogheda in February-April 1642. He resigned his Irish commission to join Charles in England late that year, but was back in Dublin by December, bringing letters to Ormond from the king in early 1643, asking for Irish troops to be sent to England. A royalist, he was presumably the serjeant-major Byron taken prisoner at Bristol in July 1643, although he is recorded as being with the army in Trim two months later. He was governor of Liverpool in 1644-5, commanded 100 men at Naseby, and was also governor of Drogheda in the same year. He returned to Ireland after the royalist defeat in England, and was imprisoned on his subsequent return to England. He was a member of the council of war at Drogheda in 1649, fighting with Ormond, whom he petitioned in April 1650 about Lord Netterville's failure to pay dues on crops from his lands in Meath. He returned to England shortly afterwards and compounded for his English estate in 1651, when he was fined £31, one third of its value. He was on the continent in 1655, when he was in contact with Thurloe and Henry Manning. At the restoration, he was a trustee for the '49 Officers, is listed as a captain of an Irish foot company 1660-8, and was master of the Ordnance in 1663 and 1670. He was appointed a privy councillor in 1664. In 1643 he was granted lands in Meath for his service in the siege of Drogheda and the Irish estates of Robert Wallop (worth £1,500 annually) in 1644, but when he tried to claim them on the restoration, they were found to be in the possession of Lord Southampton and others. He was subsequently granted other lands in England, but these were also in other hands, and in 1663 he petitioned Charles II for satisfaction, claiming 27 years service in Ireland. His dispute was referred to the Commissioner for Settlement and Charles directed that he should be paid one third of the money

---

<sup>38</sup> For Bryan, later Marquis of Billing, see the *Peerage* and McGrath, 1613. p. 98.



and granted lands valued at another third in 1664. He was also paid £400 in November 1664 - his belated reward for the capture of the MacMahons in 1641.

JOHN BLAKE (1595-1681), Athenry

e.s. Nicholas Blake, (d. 1621), and Julianna, da. Valentine French; m. before 1621, Mary French; 4 s., 4 da.

John inherited considerable property from his father and increased it by his purchases of lands in Galway, and, between 1616 and 1634, in Mayo. By 1640, he held over 2,600 acres, jointly or singly, in Galway alone. As a merchant he travelled outside Ireland and was in Lisbon in 1616 buying salt. He was an alderman of Galway and served as bailiff of the city in 1624; he was one of the original Council of Eight formed to govern Galway for the Confederation in spring 1642; in that year he and Geoffrey Browne\* were hostages to Clanricarde for Galway's good behaviour. He was described in the depositions as one of the chief rebels in Galway in 1642-3, and was mayor in 1646.<sup>39</sup> He was a collector of public dues in Galway c1650, and petitioned Ormond for help when he found himself in debt because of the difficulty in raising the money from the city. He was one of those negotiating with Ireton in November 1651, and was hostage for Galway's surrender to the Cromwellian officer. Despite his position as an alderman of Galway, he was an appropriate representative for Athenry, as his family had been granted lands there under Edward II which he still held in 1640. His submission to the Commission for the Plantation of Galway proved his title to his lands there and he retained the property until his estates were confiscated in 1655, and, as John Blake FitzNicholas, he was transplanted within Galway County to 668 acres at Mallaghmore (Tiaquinn).

RICHARD BLAKE (-1593-1663), Galway County

e.s. Robert Blake (d. 1615) and Katherine, da. Richard Darcy, Galway; m. after 1616, Gyles, da. Ald. Andrew Kirwin, Galway; 3s., 4 da.;  
ed. Middle Temple, 1612;

---

<sup>39</sup> A man of the same name was recorder in 1651, but this was probably the son of Robert Blake, a lawyer, and another founding member of the Council of Eight. John Blake the recorder was deposed in 1654. J. Hardiman, *History of the town and county of the town of Galway*. (Dublin, 1820, Galway, 1926, 1958). p. 136.



Kt. 1624;

M.P. Galway 1634

One of the most successful Galway merchants and a member of a noted Galway family, Richard played host to Wentworth on his visit to the town in 1635. His family's wealth may be measured by his father's will, in which stone houses in Galway were bequeathed to his widow and each of his seven sons. He was related to the other Blakes\*, and connected with Darcy\* both through his mother and through the marriage of his younger brother, Peter, to Mary French. Peter died in 1628, and Mary subsequently married Darcy\*. He was deeply engaged in the administration of the city and county, serving on the 1624-5 commission for the peace, acting as mayor and commissioner to raise money in Galway for the army in 1627. Falkland described him as "*how faithful a servant his majesty has ... at this frontier town, wherein he is a chief man and principal dependent of the Earl of Clanricarde.*"<sup>40</sup> Falkland was indebted to him and Sir Henry Lynch for information on Spanish plans to attack Ireland and England, transmitted from Galway in May 1626. Apart from his commercial activities, he had considerable property, mainly in Galway (where he lived at Ardfry) and Mayo, and some interests in Tipperary and Meath. His composition rent for lands in Mayo was established at 5s. per quarter in 1616; he was granted Ballintubber Abbey three years later. He was joint owner of 1,850 acres in Meath and sole owner of 426 acres in Athboy and near Navan, which he inherited from Martin Blake. His property in Connaught was inherited from his father, or purchased; by 1630 he was in possession of most of the lands of the Bishopric of Galway. Like his father-in-law, he was active in Clanrickard's business, both locally and also as his agent in England in July 1636. He was one of the most prominent supporters of the Confederation; he was one of the provincial council for Connaught in 1643, a member of the 8th. and 10th. Supreme Councils, an envoy to Spain in 1647 and Speaker of the General Assembly in 1648-9. His speech at the signing of peace with Ormond in 1649 was printed and translated into French. He had remained active in the government of Galway throughout the 1640s (although he was also made a freeman of Waterford in 1646), and, with Ulick Bourke\* and Lynch\*, was nominated by Darcy\* to hold a commission to execute martial law in Galway City and County in April 1649. Despite being reported dead of the plague at Galway in February 1650, he was still president of

<sup>40</sup> Falkland to Conway, 22 March 1627, *Cal.S.P.Ire.*, 1625-32, p. 106.



the Grand Council in February 1652, when he was in Galway, which the Cootes\* were besieging. He was transplanted to 10,293 acres in Galway and Mayo. On the restoration, he was one of those petitioning the lords justice for the restoration of catholics to their former rights in corporations. His restoration on the same terms as Bellings\* was ordered in June 1661, but was clearly not effected, as his petition for restoration of his property was particularly recommended to the lord Lieutenant by Charles c. December 1665.

VALENTINE BLAKE (1608-1652), Galway

e.s. Sir Thomas Blake, Galway, and Julian, da. Geoffrey Browne, Castlebrowne and Castlemagarrett; m. 1632, Eleanor, da. Sir Henry Lynch and Elizabeth, da. Richard Martin, Galway;  
ed. Middle Temple, 1628;  
Kt. 1629; 3rd. Bart., 1643.  
M.P. Tuam 1634.

Valentine's father and grandfather were m.p.s for Galway in 1634; all three were aldermen and mayors of Galway, Valentine holding the latter position in 1643-4; he was still a member of the corporation in 1651. He was a cousin of John and Richard Blake\*, and, through his mother, of Geoffrey Browne\*. His wife, Lynch\*'s sister, provided links with Darcy\* and Martin\*, and also with Clanricarde, as her father was the Earl's principal man of business. There was also a family connection with the Dunboyne Butlers\*. He succeeded his father in 1643, inheriting property at Menlough, including nearly 8,000 acres in Galway, (about half classed as unprofitable) and a further 2,300 acres in Mayo. He was a member of the Council of Eight in 1642 and in that December he and his father were reported as "*daily ... meeting & trading with the rebels*"; by the following August they, and John Blake\*, were included in an account of the chief rebels of Galway.<sup>41</sup> The petition of his eldest son, Thomas (later 4th. bart., who was in school in France on the outbreak of the rebellion) claimed that his father had worked for peace in 1646 and was imprisoned for holding this position. He submitted to the peaces of 1646 and 1648, and was commissary of musters in Connaught; he was also a member of the Provisional Council and a commissioner for Connaught in 1647. He was one of the hostages taken by Ireton

41 *T.C.D. MS. 830, ff 130r,134r,230v.*



for the surrender of Galway in 1651. His will was proved in 1654, and an order was made for the restoration of his estates in 1661.

GEORGE BLAKENEY (BLACKNEY) (1611-1650-4), Swords

e.s. William Blakeney (d. 1632), Rickenhore, and Eleanor da. Patrick Delafield, Co. Cork; m. Mabel, da. Dudley Bagnall, Dunleckney, Co. Carlow; 4 s.

The Blakeney family were an old Dublin merchant family which became gentrified in the sixteenth century and settled near Swords where they became influential in north county Dublin and south Louth. George's father was m.p. for Swords in 1613 and a Thomas Blakeney was alderman of Drogheda in 1640-1. He lived at Rickenhoe (Rickenhore / Blakeneyhall) on lands inherited from his father. He had over 400 acres near Swords and lands at Lusk, Sawcerstown and Blakeneyhall, worth roughly £200 annually. He also held church lands in Swords and the rent on this property increased by 40% in 1637. He had some dealings with the ecclesiastical courts in 1638-9. On the outbreak of the rebellion he met with Lucas Netterville and George King at Swords in December 1641 and was summoned to the lords justice, but, like many others, failed to appear and was indicted for rebellion. He signed the letter of the English gentlemen of the Pale to the Lord Justice and Council on 10 December 1641; a local Dutch settler, Anthony Huiberts, accused Blakeney of despoiling his goods later that month. He left Rickenore about that time and went to stay with his brother-in-law, Colonel Bagenal in Carlow, although he must have remained around Dublin, having been appointed sheriff of the county by his fellow catholics; he sat on a council administering justice at Killsallaghan in early 1642. A supporter of the Confederation, he was a member of the 1642 Leinster Provincial Council. His lands were declared forfeit and, in 1647, granted to Walter Plunkett\* and his father. He petitioned Ormond for his arrears of pay as Attorney General, in the absence of Sir James Ware\* in January 1650. His son William claimed that both he and his father had been loyal, and that William did not take lands in Connaught (George was presumably dead by that date). Despite his youth, he signed a testimonial of the loyalty of Laghlin O'Kelly in January 1629, with James\* and Lucas\* Dillon, St. George\*, Bingham\* and Crofton\*.



RICHARD BLAYNEY, Monaghan County

2.s. Lewis Blayney, Gregynogge Hall, Montgomeryshire, and Bridget, da. John Pryce, Newton, Montgomeryshire; m. Marie \_\_\_\_\_;  
d. 1641.

M.P. Monaghan Town, 1634.

Richard's father was the older brother of Edward, first Lord Blayney, and he was the present baron's seneschal. Edward Blayney married Anne, daughter of Archbishop Adam Loftus, and their children married into the Moore\* family, providing him with a wide range of parliamentary connections. Most of his local offices (sheriff of Monaghan in 1605, j.p., commissioner of King's subsidies and to inquire into lands there, and captain of a local troop of foot) were due to his position as Lord Blayney's seneschal; the Blayney estates were extensive, with an annual rental of £1,150, so he wielded some influence in the county. Lord Essex also retained large estates in Monaghan and there seems to have been a close connection between him and the Blayneys, which would have added to his local prestige. In 1635 he assisted a fellow Welshman, Herbert, in his dispute before the privy council about property in Kerry. He was hung by rebels, led by Art MacBrien Samhthach MacMahon, in November 1641, and his murder was one of the most publicised early atrocities in the region. His widow signed the petition of the distressed gentlewomen to the English Parliament in the following year.

GEORGE BLUNDELL, Dingle

3 but e.s.s. Sir Francis Blundell (d. 1625), and Joyce, da. William Sergeant, Waldridge, Buckinghamshire; m. ?1642, Sarah (d. 1670-1), da. William Colley and Elizabeth, (d. 1629), da. Sir Richard Gifford, Ballymagarrett, and Mary, da. Sir Henry Duke and \_\_\_\_\_ Moore;

2nd. Bart. 1625;

d. 1670+

Convention, King's County.

Francis Blundell came to Ireland in the first decade of the century and was m.p. for Lifford in 1613; he became Buckingham's Irish agent and secretary



for Irish affairs in England. George could not have anticipated succeeding his father in his title or lands, but his older brothers died young, leaving him as heir. He had already begun a military career and was a captain in the ill-fated Cadiz expedition, perhaps prompted to join by his father's connection with Buckingham. He was a lieutenant colonel in the following year, when his company was at Killybegs. He was, therefore, a member of a fleet company, rather than the Irish army, although he was to transfer to the latter. A namesake, his first cousin, died at the Ile de Rhe. He had been granted the reversion of Sir Roger Hope's pension in 1621 and was still pursuing payment in 1662.<sup>42</sup> Through his wife, he was Gifford's\* nephew; Sarah also provided connections to Wentworth\* and the Moores\* and Loftuses\*. He had property interests in Kildare and King's Counties. He was a commissioner for customs and excise, which may explain his return for Dingle; as a port town, he would be involved in its business and he had no other known links with the area. He remained in Ireland through the 1640s, living mainly in Dublin. In 1643 he became a captain in Ormond's regiment. He was very active in the 1650s, travelling from Belfast to Portumna on the administration's business in 1651, and taking examinations in Antrim, Down and Monaghan in 1653. He was a commissioner to raise the assessment for Ireland in the final quarter of 1654 in King's County, Leitrim and Down, and for the second half of 1657 in King's county, where he was sheriff, living at Monesterosis. He was a commissioner to raise money in Westmeath in 1660, commissioner of the poll money ordnance in Down, Kildare and King's Counties in 1660 and 1661, and was *custos rotullorum* of King's County and m.p. for Philipstown in 1661. He claimed command of a standing troop in Ireland in 1660, and in the following year was a commissioner for management of the customs and excise. His death is generally given as 1665, but he petitioned for restoration of his daily pension of 6s. (granted by James I), in 1670. He pleaded that it had been discontinued in 1669, when Lord Robartes came to Ireland and he enlisted Joseph Williamson's assistance in its restoration.

JOHN BORLACE, (BORLASE, BURLASEY) (c1576-1648), Belturbet  
b. Cornwall, e.s. Edward Borlace, London; m. Alice, da. \_\_\_\_\_;

---

<sup>42</sup> Hope (d. 1627) was a soldier, possibly originally from Wales, and m.p. for Carlingford in 1613. He formed part of the funeral processions of Chichester and Sir Francis Blundell. McGrath, 1613. pp 56-7 and *Some funeral entries of Ireland*. pp 123,126,136.



ed. Cambridge, 1591; Middle Temple, 1595;  
Kt. 1641.  
Bur. Great St. Bartholomew's, London.  
M.P. Enniskillen, 1634.

A soldier, Borlace fought in Holland before 1608 and again in 1626, and in the Palatinate in 1620. He came to Ireland in 1634 as master of the Ordnance; he was Wentworth's candidate for the office, for which he paid Lord Caulfield £3,000. He was active in the reform of the army. Four years later he became a member of the Privy Council. On Wentworth's recall to England, he was created joint Lord Justice (although his age prevented his being an active and effective lord justice) and served in that position until 1644, when he was replaced by Ormond; he remained master of the ordnance until 1648. He was very closely allied to Wentworth and one of his servants acted as a confidential courier for the lord Deputy. He was a witness at Strafford's trial. He may have had some links with Belturbet, as Dr. Teate of Ballihayes (Cavan) and other friends were protected by his troops there on the outbreak of the rebellion. He was still in charge of troops in Dublin in 1648.

JOHN BORLACE (c1611-1676-82), Enniskillen  
s. Sir John Borlace\* and Alice \_\_\_\_;  
d. Dublin.

John came to Ireland with his father in 1634. He was a soldier, like his father, and was captain in Wharton's\* regiment in 1640; he fought at Drogheda in 1641 and was with the army at Trim in September 1642. He petitioned Charles in the 1660s, citing his father's service and his own, in support of a request for the post of master of the Ordnance. The *Commons Journals* repeatedly list Edmund or Edward Borlace as a member of committees in 1640-2. Edmund was his brother, and it is unclear which of them was m.p., although Edmund would have been improbably young at the time of his election.<sup>43</sup>

---

<sup>43</sup> for information on Edmund, the author of *The History of the execrable Irish rebellion ...* (Dublin, 1680). see *D.N.B.*



JOSHUA BOYLE (1585+-1669+), [Ardee]

8 s. Michael Boyle and Jane, da. and co-h. William Peacock, mercer, London;  
m. by April 1638 (probably much earlier) \_\_\_\_; 2 s., at least 1 da.

Joshua's father was the first lord Cork's uncle, and his brothers Richard and Michael were Archbishop of Tuam and Bishop of Waterford, respectively. He was connected to the whole Boyle network in Munster, including Travers\*, and throughout the country, including Crowe\* and the Loftuses\*, Moores\* and Parsons\*. His return for Ardee (and Clonakilty in 1661) is, therefore, unsurprising. In 1639 he was appointed Cork's agent.; this brought him a great deal of work, but, initially, at least, he claimed to have suffered considerable financial distress. He lived at Castlelyons (home of Cork's son-in-law Barrymore) and rented 90 acres at Tercullinbeg, Waterford, from Cork at an annual rent of £15; he was living there in 1659. His cousin Sir Piercey Smith (m.p. for Dungarvan in 1634) asked Perceval to find him work in victualling the army in April 1642 and he remained in Munster throughout the 1640s, holding the rank of captain in the regiment of Sir William Fenton (another Boyle connection and an m.p. in 1634) by early 1642. When Cork's lands were sequestered, Inchiquin appointed him to administer them until they could be restored to the Boyles; he owned Broghil's letter book in 1655. He was recorder of Youghal between 1647 and 1668 at least, a position which suggests some legal qualifications.<sup>44</sup> In November 1649, together with the mayor of Youghal and the mayor of the staple, he wrote to the English parliament to request protection of the town's charter and privileges. He was a commissioner of the Poll Money Ordnance in Waterford in 1660 and 1661. He conducted a survey of the ecclesiastical possessions of the diocese of Waterford and Lismore in the 1660s. He made an unsuccessful bid for the post of town clerk of Waterford in 1669.

PATRICK BOYTON, Cashel

e.s. Ald. Edward Boyton, Cashel; m. \_\_\_\_\_; at least 1 da.

ed. Gray's Inns, 1628; King's Inns, 1639;

d. after 1666.

---

<sup>44</sup> He was described as a doctor of laws in 1661, although he does not appear in the lists of Alumni of Oxford, Cambridge or Dublin. *H.M.C. Ormond*, N.S., III, p. 390. and J.C. Walton, 'The Subsidy roll of County Waterford, 1662.' *An. Hib.*, XXX, (1982). pp 47-96.



The Boytons were a notable Cashel family, having settled there by 1384 and provided local officials from as early as 1463. The family is commemorated in the placename Boytonrath, near Cashel.<sup>45</sup> The Boytons had close connections with the local merchant Kearney and Conway families who represented Cashel in previous parliaments. Patrick lived at Thomastown, Tipperary. He had been given 750 acres there by his father<sup>46</sup> and bought a share in a further 2100 acres. He presumably also inherited the property at Ballytarsny (Ballyturneyhmacoris) which his father bought from Lord Dunboyne. In May 1637 he wrote to Perceval, seeking his favour towards his son-in-law's claim to lands in Tipperary. Several members of the family, including Patrick and Paul, sons of Alderman Alex. Boyton, and a Piers Boyton, took command of the Irish in Cashel after a number of murders there in the early days of the rebellion. Patrick and Piers escorted the local protestants to Clonmel, presumably for their safety.<sup>47</sup> He petitioned Ormond in January 1650 about overcharging of cesses in Cashel. He was transplanted to 537 acres in Roscommon and was living at Clonfee, Cluncraffe, there in 1659. In December 1660, the former inhabitants of Cashel sent for him, intending to elect him as m.p. when the parliament was summoned; this plan was frustrated by the town's protestant freemen who also refused to hand over the houses in the town to their former catholic owners. He signed the 1666 petition to Charles II.

ROGER BRERETON, Old Leighlin

5 s. Henry Brereton (d. 1627) , Loughtige and Shanemullen, Queen's County, and Margery, da. Robert Bowen, Queen's County; m. ? Bulkeley; Lincoln's Inns, 1632; King's Inns, 1638; d. after 1659.

The Breretons and Bowens settled in Queen's County in the mid-sixteenth century, and Roger's uncle Arthur represented Ballinakill in 1613. His

<sup>45</sup> E. Curtis (ed.), *Ormond Deeds*, II, p. 197; III, pp 195,270,327; V, p. 40, record Boytons in or near Cashel from 1384; a stone, probably 15 th. century, bearing the Boyton arms, is on display in the museum on the Rock of Cashel.

<sup>46</sup> Edward had dealings with Cork about Hore Abbey (on the outskirts of Cashel). E. Boyton to Cork, 23 June 1625. *N.L.I. MS. 13,237(10)*.

<sup>47</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 821*, ff 7,211v,221v, 227r,245r,259.



family connections were wide: he addressed Thomas Piggott\* as "worthy cozen" and claimed kinship with Lady Glamorgan, possibly through the Thomonds. If his wife was a Bulkeley, she provided links with the Aungiers and Bishop Spottswood, and his sons married members of his neighbouring settler family of Blount. He lived in Dublin and Tallaght (where the Bulkeleys also lived), and was resident in Fishamble Street in 1646, where he was one of those estimating the cess for the Parliament. At his time he was also helping transmit the imprisoned Glamorgan's letters - the Earl described him as "my cousin" - at Thomas Piggott's\* request. With Culme\* and Schout, he travelled to England on Parliament's business, returning in May 1647. Between 1649 and 1653 he was recorder of Drogheda. He was living in Templeogue in 1659. He should not be confused with his cousin and namesake, parson of Ballinakill.

RICHARD BRICE (-1613-1661+), Drogheda

s. Ald. John Brice (b. 1587), Dublin; m. Rose, da. Ald. John Malone, Dublin, and Mary, da. Ald. Michael Perkins, Dublin;

M.P. Drogheda 1634.

Richard was a merchant and an alderman of Drogheda. The Brices were more important in Dublin where his grandfather and namesake, a merchant with property interests in Santry in north Dublin, died in 1617. His father was mayor of Dublin and had property in High St., Merchant's Quay and Wood Quay (jointly with Matthew Handcock and Stephen Dowdall of Athboy) and other land in Crumlin and Kilmainham. There was a family link with the Usshers\* and presumably also some connection between him and Maria Brice, Hoey\*'s mother. He was expropriated in 1652 for revealing the informer Robert Ussher of Crumlin to Ormond; Ussher had informed Michael Jones of activities in the Irish camp before the battle of Rathmines. He claimed that he and his father (who commanded a trained band to defend Dublin from the rebels) had accepted no lands in Connaught. His petition was supported by Maurice Eustace\* and he received preferential treatment in the restoration. A Richard Brice was a juror in the survey of Drogheda corporation lands in March 1654.



JAMES BRIEN (1598-1642) [Clonmines]

e.s. Walter Brien (d. 1638), and Elizabeth Cullen; m. Catherine, da. Richard Whitty, Co. Wexford;  
M.P. Clonmines 1634.

Brien was elected by 10 June 1641 when he presented a petition against Arthur Loftus\* in the Commons. He was a member of the lesser Wexford gentry, whose families were based in the county since the Normans came to Ireland. He was described as "of Skarre" and inherited lands in Clonmines, Shelmaliere and Taghmon; his 200 acres were estimated at £36 annually. He was a member of the 1624-5 commission of the peace for the county. He was one of the chief rebels in Wexford, being one of "*the first that did rise in armes in [Wexford] and did plunder ye English at Fetherd & Dunbrody & elsewhere*"<sup>48</sup> He was killed in action in early 1642.

HENRY BRINGHURST (BRINKHURST) (c1586--1660), Tuam

m. \_\_\_\_\_ ;

ed. King's Inns, 1615 as attorney;

d. 1647-1660.

Henry may originally have been from Denbeighshire.<sup>49</sup> A Thomas Bringhurst was based in Dublin. His advancement in Connaught society was largely due to his position as brother-in-law of Archbishop William Daniel of Tuam, for whom he acted as administrator in 1621; this family connection also linked him to the prominent protestant lawyer, James Donnellan. He was escheator of Connaught from 1617 and Daniel petitioned Falkland for the post of attorney general of the province in 1626: "*[He] whose many good parts have heretofore procured manifold employments both in England and in this kingdom, his honesty and sufficiency is [sic] well knowen, and his experience, especially in all parts of this province ... I know, such is the poverty of the place, that he shall have few or no competitors*".<sup>50</sup> Daniel's confidence was misplaced and he was not appointed. It is, perhaps, significant that Daniel did not press his

---

48 T.C.D. MS. 819, f. 32r.

49 T.C.D. MS. 1217, f 85v.

50 Daniel to Falkland, 27 February 1626, B.L. MS. SL. 3827, f. 69.



claims as a lawyer, as his admission to the King's Inns as an attorney implies that his legal knowledge was gained through practical experience rather than formal study at the Inns of Court. He had other family members in Mayo, including his nephew Edward Elwood. He lived in Kilkenan, Mayo, close to, or sometimes with, Lord Mayo's family. He was with Mayo and Theobald Bourke\*, at the outbreak of the rebellion, and shared their vacillations over religion, attending mass with them. He was present at the murders in Shrute in late 1641, and his account is sympathetic to the Bourkes\*. His deposition claims losses of £1,100, including the profits from his office, worth £100 annually. He left Castlebar with the Bishop of Killalla's family in the following February, under Theobald Bourke's\* protection. He was settled in Dublin from 1643, where, two years later, he was acting for Bourke\*. He was still attending parliament in 1647.

CHICHESTER (CHRISTOPHER) BROOK (BROOKE, BOOK), New Ross

m. \_\_\_\_; at least 2 sons;

? ed. Trinity College Dublin, 1627;

d. after 1642.

Brooke lived at Horetown, Wexford; an alderman of New Ross, he was also a j.p. for Wexford County. With his sons, he was heavily involved in the rebellion, and, like them, was indicted for rebellion. Both his sons were captains of Wexford rebels in 1642. He was more involved in the administrative support of the rebellion, and in January 1642 came to Waterford city as a representative of Wexford, with representatives from Waterford, Kilkenny, and Tipperary, "to take the said Citty into [confederate] government, and to surprize and take all the goods of the English for the maintenance of their Warr".<sup>51</sup>

HENRY BROME (BROOME, BROWNE), Charlemont

d. ?1647.

Brome was colonel of brigades in 1640, at a daily wage of 15s., and was a captain in Sir James Dillon's\* regiment. He was presumably the Major Brome who was killed at the battle of Knockenosse in November 1647. He does

51 T.C.D. MS. 820, f. 15v.



not appear to have been an active m.p. His origins are unclear and a number of individuals may be identified with him, including Henry Brome, gent. of Great St. Bart's parish, London, who married Elizabeth, daughter of William Denton in 1620, when he was aged 37 (he may also have been the Henry Brome of London who entered Grey's Inns in 1612); the son of Henry Brome, Calveton, Nottinghamshire, by his second wife, Catherine, da. Gabriel Oddingsells, who were married in 1606; or he may have been related to John Brome (Brown) of Corgie (Georgie) Mill, Scotland, who received a grant of lands in Carrodownan, Cavan, and his denization in 1610. Some members of the Brome family were already settled in Dublin: the will of William Brome of Glasnevin was proved in 1617. Henry is unlikely to have been one of the Suffolk Bromes, as his entry in the *Commons Journals* describes him as "*generosus*", and as that family held a coat of arms, he would have been entitled to be called "*armiger*". Intriguingly, his entry in the army list of 1640 describes him as Sir Henry.<sup>52</sup>

GEOFFREY BROWNE, Athenry

e.s. Sir Dominic Browne, Carrowbrowne, and Anastasia, da. James Rivagh Darcy and Elizabeth, da. Richard Martin (she rem. Sir Henry Lynch, Galway); m. before 1633, Mary, da. Sir Henry Lynch, Galway;  
ed. Middle Temple, 1627; King's Inns, 1637;  
d. January 1668; bur. St. Nicholas's, Dublin.

Geoffrey had close connections with the Lynches\*, both through his grandmother, and his wife. He was Darcy's\* nephew and Lynch's\* cousin and brother-in-law; he also had family links with Martin\* and the Blakes\* and, through his sister Jennet's marriage, with the Dillons of Clonbrock. Like his father, m.p. for Athenry in 1634, he was an alderman of Galway but he was a lawyer as well as a merchant, having practised in England and Ireland. From 1638 he was regularly used as a "councillor" (legal advisor) to Galway Corporation. As an experienced and respected lawyer, he was an active m.p., sitting on many committees, including that to draft the declaration of support for the king, in the first session, and that appointed to bring the petition to Charles in 1640, when he remained in England, seeking to influence the king's policy

<sup>52</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 672*, ff 268v-9r; this title is also given in a deposition (*T.C.D. MS. 816*, f. 16v); this entry also supports the suggestion of Scottish origin, as his lieutenant was a Scotsman, John Reade.



towards Ireland. He and Digby\* were in London in April 1641, bringing a letter from the Commons to Charles. He was heavily involved in Confederation affairs throughout the 1640s, serving as a member of the first six supreme councils, (1642-6) and the tenth (1648-9). He was a resident member for Connaught in 1644 and a member of the 1644 and 1646-7 assemblies. In May 1642, he and John Blake\* were hostages to Clanricarde for the good behaviour of Galway City. He was an agent to meet Ormond at Kilcullen and Castlemartin, brought peace proposals from the General Assembly to Charles in 1643, and signed the Glamorgan peace in Oxford in 1645. He was an important link between the Confederation and Clanricarde and, with Darcy\*, drew up articles of peace with Ormond in 1646; Rinuccini had him arrested in Galway for his support of this agreement, but the citizens refused to hand him over to the nuncio. With Antrim, he was sent as a Confederate agent to France in November 1647, and they arrived in March 1648 to treat with the Queen and the Prince of Wales. Later in the same year he was back in Kilkenny, when he was one of the Connaught representatives selected to treat for peace with Ormond. He was in Kilkenny in June 1649 and was appointed a commissioner of Trust. He was incorrectly reported dead of the plague at Galway in February 1650. Five months later he and Darcy\* were commissioners to advise Ormond on petitions from Galway. With Taaffe\* and Nicholas Plunkett\*, he was a commissioner to treat with the Duke of Lorraine in 1651; Ormond and the king repudiated the deal they concluded. He recovered some of his property as early as 1655, but, although an order was issued for the restoration of his family estates in January 1661, when he had Ormond's support, the Brownes did not receive the property until after his death, when his personal property was estimated at £2,000. He was the only catholic returned (for Tuam) to the 1661 parliament but was unseated in a second election. He signed the 1666 petition to Charles.

JOHN BROWNE, (? 1598+-1643-59) Lismore

2 but e.s.s. Sir Thomas Browne, (d. 1640), Hospital, Limerick, and Mary, da. Capt. William Apsley, Any, Limerick and Pulborough, Sussex, and Anabel, da. John Browne and Catherine O'Ryan; she rem. Thomas Spring, Kerry; m. 1627, Barbara (b. 1614), da. Bishop John Boyle, Cork; she rem. Sir William King, Kilpecan, Limerick; 1s., 4 da.; Kt. 1630;



John came from a new English family with a strong parliamentary tradition. His grandfather Valentine Browne was m.p. for Sligo in 1585 and his father represented Limerick County in 1613. His double connection to Lord Cork explains his return for Lismore: his aunt Joan Apsley was Cork's first wife and his marriage to Boyle's niece and godchild reinforced the relationship; the marriage was partly negotiated by the second Lady Cork and the earl provided the dowry of 1,000 marks and stood godfather to his son.<sup>53</sup> As Lord Justice, Cork also knighted him. He was, therefore, Valentine Browne's\* cousin, and also linked to Crowe\*, Boyle\* and the rest of that powerful network. Not all his connections were with the settler community: his sister Anne married Donal O'Sullivan, Bearehaven in 1621, and his sister Thomasin's marriage to Edmund, Lord Castleconnell, made him uncle to the present peer. Sir Thomas Browne was a member of the Council of Munster from 1615; he held lands in Limerick, Clare, Kerry and Tipperary, which John eventually inherited. The Limerick property was particularly extensive, consisting of over 3,000 acres, worth more than £350. Barbara's deposition (taken by her cousin, Piercy Smith) claimed losses of £3,800, and lands worth £1,300 in the rebellion. He was a captain in St. Leger's regiment in 1640. His son, Thomas, claimed that he had been active in resisting the rebels in 1641, when their home was besieged and demolished. In the following year he was in action in Cork, Goldenbridge, and Collen, in Tipperary, and at Dromnyne Castle, Limerick; Urban Vigors described him as "*a dayntey brave spirited Gentleman and one the rebels doe more dread.*"<sup>54</sup> He delivered 20 barrells of beef to the army stores at Youghal in January 1643, but was later attached to Charles's regiment in England as lieut. colonel of horse in Cork's regiment. His son claimed he died in royal service, but other accounts allege that he was killed in a duel with Sir Richard Barnwall in London.

RICHARD BROWNE (?-1580-1643-4+), Athboy

m. \_\_\_\_; at least 1 s.

M.P. Athboy 1613, 1634

---

<sup>53</sup> John had originally been contracted to Elizabeth Dowdall, who later married Waller\*; Boyle also played a role in negotiating Waller's marriage. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II pp 64, 216.

<sup>54</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 840*, f. 75r.



Richard was one of the burgesses named in Athboy's new charter in 1608. A William Browne, possibly his father, was m.p. in 1585. His own son, William, entered Gray's Inn in 1617. He was a merchant, based in Athboy, and held property in and near the town, having received a grant of a castle and some other property from Barnaby Scurlock (Sherlock) in 1616. He also held other property in Trim and perhaps also in Navan. He was indicted for rebellion in 1642, and was still living in Athboy at the time of the cessation, when he was port-reeve. It was in this capacity that he led the inhabitants in refusing to support the protestant minister, declaring that "*they had a priest of their own to maintain.*"<sup>55</sup>

VALENTINE BROWNE (c.1615-1640), Kerry

e.s. Sir Valentine Browne, Molahiff, Kerry, and Lady Ellice (Elizabeth) Fitzgerald, da. Lord Desmond, and Eleanor, da. Edmund Butler, Lord Dunboyne; he rem. Julia, da. Charles McCarthy, 1st. Lord Muskerry, and Margaret O'Brien, da. Donough, 4th. Lord Thomond; m. 1635-7, Mary,<sup>56</sup> da. Charles McCarthy, 1st. Lord Muskerry, and Margaret O'Brien, da. Donough, 4th. Lord Thomond; she rem. Edward Fitzgerald, Ballymallon; 2 s., 2 da.,  
2nd. Bart. 1635;  
d. 25 April 1640; bur. 2 July 1640, Killarney.

Valentine was the great-grandson and namesake of the new English settler who was granted 6.560 acres at Molahiff in the previous century, and who was m.p. for Sligo in 1585. That Valentine's father came from Crofts, Lincolnshire and Hogesdon, Middlesex, and was auditor general of Ireland and his descendants settled in two main branches, one at Hospital, Limerick, and another in Kerry. There was, however, a considerable difference between the two branches; the Hospital branch married into local new English families and remained protestant, while the Molahiff Brownes married members of local Gaelic families, such as the O'Sullivans, McCarthys\* and O'Briens\*, and became catholic. Neither branch was connected with the important Galway merchant family of the same name. He was on good terms with other new English

---

<sup>55</sup> T.C.D. M.S. 816, f. 105r

<sup>56</sup> Boyle perfected the deed of jointure in May 1635. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II, p. 103; IV, p.206.



families, supporting the Herberts in their dispute with the Ropers\*. His father<sup>57</sup> and namesake was m.p. for Kerry in 1634, and he inherited his property and title in 1635 and received confirmation of his lands in 1637. He was a cousin of John Browne\*, and the O'Briens\* and Butlers\*; through his sister Mary's marriage to Walter Crosbie (m.p. for Maryborough, 1634) he was also connected to another local settler family, albeit one with very different origins to his own. His own marriage to his step-mother's sister provided strong links to McCarthy\*.

WILLIAM BROWNE, (1607-1666+) [?? Clonmines?]  
e.s. Patrick Browne (1580-1637), Mulrankin, Wexford and Honor Barry, (w. Gerald Fitzgerald, Decies) da. David, Lord Baltimore, and Ellen Roche, da. David, Lord Fermoy and Ellen, da. James Butler, Lord Dunboyne.<sup>58</sup>

Browne was elected before June 1641, when he appears in the *Journals*. His seat was presumably a Wexford one, perhaps Clonmines, which was relatively close to Mulrankin. The Mulrankin Brownes were direct descendants of the Norman Philip le Brun who settled there in the 12th. century and they had a long history of loyalty to the crown. William still occupied the ancestral lands, holding some 3,600 acres, worth £301, in Wexford, although some of it was mortgaged to local merchants in the 1630s, including the Mulrankin property of 959 acres in the Barony of Bargy. He was closely connected to other Wexford families, including the Hores\*. Through his mother, he was a cousin of Redmond Roche\*, the Roscommon Dillons\*, Fitzharris\* and the Ormond and Dunboyne Butlers\*. He had a protracted dispute in the Commons with Richard Wadding of Wexford, with whom he had land deals. He was indicted for rebellion and was active in the Confederate Army, raising a regiment of foot and contributing money and men to its service; he was a member of the Wexford County Council of War in 1641-2, took the Oath of Association, and was a member of the General Assembly. He commanded 200 soldiers at the siege of Duncannon in 1641-2, and was colonel by July 1642. His troops burnt Lowther's castle at St. John's, Enniscorthy, in the following year. He was lieutenant colonel in Richard Butler's regiment in 1646 and was included in a list of those soldiers

---

<sup>57</sup> The older Valentine was also on good terms with his new English neighbours, and although a catholic, stood godfather to one of Denny's\* children. *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, VII, pp 370-1.

<sup>58</sup> It is not known whether William married but Margaret Browne of Mulrankin was transplanted to 300 acres in Athlone Barony, Roscommon.



fit to be employed in Wexford; in the following November, he was one of the officers who signed an undertaking at Lucan to support the peace with Ormond. In August 1647 he was taken prisoner at Dunganshill, as an officer of the Leinster Army. He was in a "most distressed and sad condition"<sup>59</sup> when, in September 1649, he petitioned Ormond for his arrears of pay, claiming to have been imprisoned after the battle of Limerick. Ormond appointed commissioners to report on the case. He was "lett out of restraint on his poll and came into ye County of Wexford and from thence breaking his poll had his escape into France"<sup>60</sup> where he apparently remained during the 1650s. Ormond recommended his claims to Secretary Nicholas in 1659: "*Cum harum [latos] fidelis et dilectus subutus noster Gulielmus Browne, vir praenobilis eadem antiqua in Regno nostrae Hibernia familia (cujus et ipse caput est) oriundus intemerata usq. in nos fide fuerit, egregia tum bello tum pau operam navaverit, patria vero jam vi Rebellium nostrorum expulsus externas Regiones exiit, et opis indigens peragrae wallus sit*".<sup>61</sup> As Colonel William Browne he was included in Charles's declaration of November 1660, and was adjudged innocent three years later. With his uncle, Richard Browne, and brothers Walter and John, he appears on a 1666 list of dispossessed landowners who had served the king abroad, and his restoration to 600 acres at Mulrankin was ordered.

WILLIAM BROWNLOW (BROMLOE), (?c1589-1661) Armagh County  
 e.s. John Brownlow, Nottingham and Lincoln; m. Elinor, da. John O'Doherty,  
 Derry, Co. Armagh; at least 2 da.;  
 Kt. 1622;

John Brownlow was granted 1,500 acres worth £150 annually, in Oneilan, Armagh, as one of the earliest patentees in 1610, when William also received 1,000 acres. Both were active planters, although William's lands were declared forfeit because he broke the terms of his grant by accepting Irish tenants on his property; the lands were regranted in 1629. He inherited his father's lands and also acquired property in Down and fishing rights at Ardmore (Clanbrassil) in Armagh by 1638. He had a land dispute with Edward Trevor\*. He married a

<sup>59</sup> Petition to Ormond, 18 September 1649, *Ir. Gen.*, 6(5), (1984), p. 582.

<sup>60</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 819*, f. 73v.

<sup>61</sup> Ormond to Nicholas, 20 July 1659, *B.L. MS. Eg. 2542*, f. 292v.



member of a local Gaelic family which lived at Derry and his Lurgan property was called Brownlow's Derry. His daughters Eleanor and Lettice respectively married John Martin's\* son Fulke and a member of the old English Clinton family. As a member of an important local settler family, he formed part of Chichester's funeral procession in 1624. He was involved in local administration, serving as sheriff of Armagh in 1623 and as a member of the commission of the peace in 1624-5; he was one of the Armagh agents who chose agents to travel to England in 1628 and was also active in raising money to pay for their expenses. He was in Dublin in 1629, when he prevented Luke Netterville from killing Francis Moore. He was captured at Brownlow Derry in November 1641, and brought to Armagh as Sympson's\* fellow-prisoner. He was later transferred to Dungannon where he was kept until the following June at least, being released before January 1643, when he signed a bond on the Dublin Staple and when he held a commission in the army. He was in London that year (when he was assessed at £300 by the Committee for the Advancement of Money, and paid his first deposit; the final payment was in June 1644) and in 1645, for Lord Maguire's trial, when the defendant objected to him as a potential juror. He had a company in Ireland in 1648, although it was by then described as "*reduced*."<sup>62</sup> He remained in Ulster, acting as a commissioner to collect the assessment for Ireland in Armagh County in the final quarter of 1654 and witnessing Caulfield's bond at the Carrickfergus Staple in 1655. He was living in Clanbrassil in 1660.

THEOBALD BOURKE, (-1615-1654) Mayo

e.s. Miles Bourke, 2nd. Lord Mayo, and Honora, da. Sir John Bourke, Derrymaclaghntny, and Margaret Bourke, da. Ulick, 3rd. Lord Clanricarde; he rem. Isabella Freke, da. William Hodges, Ilchester, w. Sir John Benboe, England; m. 1) c1638, Elizabeth Talbot, w. \_\_\_\_\_ Lewis, Yorkshire, 2 s., 2 da.; 2) Eleanor, w. of H. O'Neill, da. Sir Lucas Fitzgerald\*, Tecroghan, and Mary, da. Lord Netterville, and Eleanor, da. Sir John Bath, Drumcondra; 1 s.

ed. Oxford;

Bart. 1638; 3rd. Viscount Mayo, 1649.

As Mayo's son and Clanricarde's cousin, Theobald was in the first rank

<sup>62</sup> T.C.D. MS. 844, f. 48v.



of Gaelic Connaught society. His connections were not all Gaelic, however, and his father's second marriage and his own first marriage show the changing inclinations of his family, as does Wentworth's attitude to his uncle, David Bourke, m.p. for Mayo in 1634, of whom he wrote to Wandesford "*you will confine [him], & so being divided from his brother, & kept out of Connaught, his nailes will be sufficiently paired for scratching to any great purpose.*"<sup>63</sup> His father's religious conformity on his second marriage is underlined by his education, under Laud's supervision, at Oxford. He or his uncle and namesake was engaged in a land dispute with Thomond in 1637, which was referred to arbitrators. He and his father vacillated on the outbreak of the rebellion, leading local protestants, including Brighthurst\*, to mass, and protecting protestant settlers until the first cessation, escorting some from Castlebar to presumed safety in Shrule in 1642, although they were unable to prevent their murder there. Miles and his family reverted to their original religion about this time; he was one of the signatories of the letter to Ormond in July 1642. He was elected to represent Mayo in the 1642 and 1644 General Assemblies; in 1646 he was selected as one of the Connaught agents for the Confederation, to treat with Ormond for peace. His marriage to Eleanor Fitzgerald indicates his closeness to his political associates. He was involved in military activity in Connaught, capturing Sligo in 1645 and commanding troops near Castlebar in 1647, although his opponent, Coote\*, claimed that Bourke did not fight himself. He was one of those named by Darcy\* to operate martial law in Mayo in April 1649. He was specifically excluded from the 1652 *Act for the Settlement of Ireland*, and was tried in December 1652-January 1653 for the murders committed at Shrule in 1642, "*by a court consisting of eleven officers, amongst whom there was not one lawyer, whereof five did acquit him ... The said Lord was a protestant, had no command amongst the Irish, and urged at his tryal by good proofs, that he escaped the Murthers with his life by great providence.*"<sup>64</sup> He was executed at Galway.

THOMAS BOURKE, Mayo

3 s. Walter Bourke, Turlough, Mayo; m. Ann da. Josias Browne and Joanne, da. Edward Bermingham;

---

<sup>63</sup> Bodl. Carte MS. I, f. 120r.

<sup>64</sup> R.S., *Collection of some of the murthers and massacres committed on the Irish in Ireland since the 23rd. of October 1641.* (London, 1662). p. 12.



ed. Middle Temple, 1629;

d. 1644+<sup>65</sup>

Thomas "of Anbally" was a nephew of Clanricarde and his father possessed considerable property in Mayo; as a younger son, his return was presumably due both to his legal training, and to his involvement in Clanricarde's business affairs. He was connected to Theobald Bourke\*, through his sister's marriage to his uncle and namesake. He was an active m.p., sitting on a number of important committees, including those to draft the declaration to Charles in the first session, to deliver the petition to Charles in late 1640 (when he and Plunkett\* were believed to have private access to the King) and to treat with the rebels in November 1641. In May 1641 he had been used as a messenger from Charles to Ormond and Antrim, and the King continued to use him as a messenger even after the outbreak of the rebellion. He was soliciting in favour of the Irish rebels in London in January 1642. He was one of the original supporters of the Confederation, as a member of the 1642 Connaught provincial council, and representative for Galway County in the General Assembly of that year; he was a member of the committee which drew up the model of civil government for Ireland. He was, however, also reported as being involved in more military activity, besieging Galway in that year, and was described as one of the chief rebels of the county in 1643. He was one of the Confederation's agents at the meeting at Trim in March 1643 and visited England c1643-4, returning with a commission. He was presumably not the sheriff of Galway in 1627-8.

ULICK BOURKE (BURKE), (1594-1666+) Galway County

e.s. Edmund Burke, Imlaghrodagh, Roscommon, and Ellis, da. Iriall O'Farrell Boy; m. 1) Katherine, da. Theobald Dillon, first Viscount Dillon of Costello-Gallen, and Eleanor, da. William Tuite, Tuitestown, Westmeath; 2) Jennet Browne (d. 1679);

ed. Trinity College Dublin; Bart. 1628.

Ulick was the grandson of Hubert Bourke of Glinsk, County Galway, whose extensive property in Galway and Roscommon he inherited. He was

---

<sup>65</sup> His date of death is unknown. There are many references to Thomas Bourkes in the *Transplantation Papers* and the *Books of Survey and Distribution*, none can be identified with him.



James Dillon\* and Pettit's brother-in-law\*, Clanricarde and Farrell's\* cousin and linked to all the Dillons\*, and to Edgeworth\* and the Bysses\*, through the Tuites. He was active in local affairs, serving on the 1624-5 commission of the peace for Galway and three years later as one of the Galway electors choosing agents for Connaught to travel to England to treat with Charles about the Graces. He attended the general meeting of Roscommon gentry at Ballintubber early in 1642, and was elected to represent Galway County in the 1642 General Assembly. In April 1643, with other members of the Galway gentry, he responded to Col. John Bourke's appeal to raise forces in the county and to march to the city. That November he was a commissioner for the treaty of the cessation in Galway and in the following year was in Ballinalee (Ulster) with Sir Lucas Dillon\*, representing Connaught's miseries to Castlehaven. His sons Edmund and Riccard were both involved in Galway affairs with Clanricarde in the 1640s. Darcy\* nominated him to operate martial law in Roscommon and Galway City and County in April 1649; later that year he petitioned Ormond for the Ormsbys' lands in Roscommon and in the following May was himself the subject of a petition by Nicholas French, who was trying to recover debts from him and others. He later claimed to have fought with Ormond and Clanricarde. He was transplanted to 3,533 acres at Ballymoe, Galway. He went to Flanders and stayed there with Lord Dillon until the restoration. His loyalty to the crown was recognised by his inclusion in Charles's declaration of November 1660; Ormond supported his petition for restoration. He signed the 1666 petition to Charles.

MICHAEL BURNELL, Boyle  
d. 1660+

Burnell was a member of the noted Castleknock family which produced the prominent recusant lawyer and leading m.p. in 1585, Henry Burnell. His own parentage is unestablished, but he may well have been a younger son of Henry Burnell; if so, he was born after 1583. A cousin of Christopher Dowdall,<sup>66</sup> he held property at Dromiskin and lived at Callaghstowne, (Caliaghstown), Louth and Drogheda. The Burnells had property in Louth since the sixteenth century and Robert Burnell was m.p. for Drogheda in 1560. He signed a bond with the Drogheda merchant Robert Moore at the

<sup>66</sup> m.p. for Louth in 1634.



Dublin Staple in November 1639. He did, however, have a family connection with Roscommon, in that Henry Burnell of Castleknock, son of Christopher, possibly Michael's brother,<sup>67</sup> married Frances (d. 29 May 1640), daughter of James, Earl of Roscommon, sister of Robert\* and Lucas\* Dillon. Another Burnell married Conor O'Brien of Corcumroe; Conor's sister married Henry Mostyn of Athlone, providing another connection with the Roscommon constituency. In 1642 and 1643 he was at Birr, as a Captain in the Confederate army, where he had the "*setting and disposing of all the houses in Birr yett standing.*"<sup>68</sup> He was still captain of 94 foot in 1646, this time at Castle Jordan, King's County; in that August was at Duncannon, apparently keeping the peace. His confiscated property was not restored in the 1660s.

FRANCIS BUTLER (BOTELER), (c.1602-1690), Londonderry  
o.s.s. Ralph Boteler, Queen Hoo Hall, Tewin, and Hatfield, Woodhall, Hants.,  
and Susana, da. Francis Saunders, Welford, Northants.; m. 1) c. 1634, Anne, (d.  
1644), da. Thomas Cockayne, Ashbourne, Derbys., 1 s., 2 da.; 2) Elizabeth, (d. 1684),  
da. Richard Corbet, Edgemon, Salop.;  
ed. Isleworth Grammar School, Middlesex; Sidney Sussex, Cambridge, 1628-9;  
Kt. 1642-3.  
M.P. Old Leighlin 1661.

Francis should not be confused with the Irish Butlers. His Boteler family was firmly based in England, where he was a neighbour and friend of Fanshawe\*. He had a dispute with Dopping\* in 1636. He came to Ireland as an ensign in Wentworth's own regiment in the 1630s and was made captain in 1639, paying £250, and assisted by his uncle, an old Yorkshire acquaintance of the Deputy's. His company was at Athlone in December 1640 and he was serjeant major in Henry Tichbourne's regiment by the following April and became a major in the next year. He was knighted for good service against the Irish and granted the lands of some Kildare outlaws in 1643. He was commander of one of the "Irish" regiments in Wales and Cheshire and was at Hawarden Castle in November 1643. Two months later he was taken prisoner at Nantwich, by which

<sup>67</sup> The merchant, John Ridge of the Abbey, Roscommon, claimed a debt of £440 from Christopher Burnell of Castleknock, who was then in rebellion. Ridge's widow married James Dillon\*. Ridge's deposition, *T.C.D. MS. 830*, f. 15r.

<sup>68</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 814*, f. 106r.



time he was lieutenant colonel in John Byron's royalist regiment. He was still commanding an Irish foot company in November 1660, and was also a trustee of the '49 Officers. Like many other younger sons, he presumably came to Ireland to improve his fortunes. In fact, all his older brothers died before him, and he became not merely his father's heir, and succeeded to his estates in 1645, but also inherited those of his uncle Edward Boteler eight years later. As a man of such property (he had compounded in 1649 for very little) he was a j.p. in Hertfordshire in 1660, and held a number of local offices there, representing Hertford in the 1685 parliament.

**JAMES BUTLER (1615-1662), Tipperary**

e.s. Edmund, 3rd. Lord Dunboyne, and Margaret Butler, (d. 1632), da. Thomas, Lord Cahir, and Eleanor, da. Richard Butler, Lord Mountgarrett; m. by 1640, Ellen, da. Piers Butler, Lord Ikerrin, and Ellen, da. Walter, Lord Ormond; o.s.p.m.; 4th. Lord Dunboyne, July 1641.  
Bur. St. James's, Dublin.

James lived at Ballydoyle, Tipperary, and held over 6,000 acres (valued at over £375), in the Barony of Middlethird, and a further 40 acres elsewhere in the county. He was closely related to all the other Butlers\* although his strongest links were with the Ikerrin Butlers\* and the Fitzpatricks of Upper Ossory; through the Cahirs he was also linked to Esmond\*. James's step-mother, Ellen, daughter of Lord Desmond, provided links with the O'Connors of Sligo. With his cousins Mountgarrett, Ikerrin, Cahir and Theobald Purcell, Baron of Loughmoe, he was one of the Munster leaders to come out in rebellion in Tipperary and Cork in December 1641; three months later he took Kingsmill's\* castle at Ballyowen. He signed the petition to Ormond in July 1642, fought at Liscarroll, was at Kilkenny that November and fought with Preston at the siege of Ballinakill in the following year. He was a member of the 1644 General Assembly and the 10th. Supreme Council (1648-9). He lived on the continent until the restoration, and was included in Charles's declaration; he had not, however, received his property at the time of his death, and his widow was still petitioning for restoration in May 1663.



PETER BUTLER (-1609-1670+), Gowran

only s. Richard Butler, Callan, and Katherine Audley; m. ? Anstace, da. Michael Hore, Dungarvan, and Anstace, da. Ald. Robert Walsh, Waterford;

Peter succeeded his grandfather and namesake in 1630. His lands were at Courtneboly and Maylerstown (Maylardstown), Kilkenny (687 acres), and 2,525 acres in Tipperary, part of which was jointly held with Ormond. His grandmother Katherine Butler left him most of her estate on her death in 1646.<sup>69</sup> He had close connections with the Cahir Butlers. He was licensed to go abroad in July 1641 and replaced by Piers Crosbie.\* As he was abroad throughout the 1640s and not indicted for rebellion, his lands were not declared forfeit. He received a commission as a captain in an Irish regiment recruited for services in the Low Countries by Col. John Morfi in Brussels in 1646. He was reported dead by December 1652, clearly inaccurately, as he signed the 1666 Remonstrance to Charles as Peter Butler of Callan. A man of the same name was ordered to have his estates restored by the Court of Claims, but this had not happened by September 1670, when Charles wrote to support his petitions.

PIERCE BUTLER,<sup>70</sup> Kilkenny County

e.s. Sir Edward Butler (c1586-1650), Old Abbey (Duiske), and Lowgrange, first Lord Galmoy (1646), and Anne, da. Edmund, 2nd. Lord Mountgarrett, and Grania, da. Brian Fitzpatrick, 1st. Lord of Upper Ossory; Edward rem. by 1651, Eleanor, da. Sir Nicholas Whyte and Ursula, da. Lord Moore; m. (?1614, Katherine Fleming, da. Lord Slane); 1626, Margaret, da. Nicholas, Lord Netterville, and Eleanor, da. Sir John Bath, Drumcondra; 12 children; ed. Gray's Inns, 1623.

Pierce lived at Barrowmount, Kilkenny. His grandfather, Pierse FitzThomas Butler, was the illegitimate son of Thomas, Earl of Ormond who granted him the lands of Duiske Abbey. He was a cousin of Ormond, Slane,

<sup>69</sup> Will of Katherine Butler, J. Ainsworth, Abstracts of 17th. century Irish wills in the prerogative court of Canterbury. *J.R.S.A.I.*, LXXVIII(1), (July 1948). pp 24-37. The will was proved in 1651.

<sup>70</sup> He was presumably not the friend of Buckingham, whose career is detailed in the *Acts of the Privy Council, 1625-6*, p. 450; *Acts of the Privy Council, June 1626-December 1626*, p. 56.



James\* Butler and Walter Walsh\*. His mother connected him to Bellings\* and his own marriage made him Lucas Fitzgerald\*, Davills\* and Lord Trimblestown's brother-in-law and also linked him to Theobald Bourke\*. He may have married his cousin, Katherine Fleming. His father's second marriage provided a connection with Nicholas Whyte\* and the Moores\*, but it may not have taken place until after Pierce's death. His father had extensive property in Kilkenny and Pierce had a land dispute with his neighbour Oliver Grace of Insycryhan, Kilkenny. He was visited in September 1641 by his cousins, Lucas Fitzgerald\*, Lucas Netterville and Sir Richard Talbot,<sup>71</sup> and it is reported that, during a lengthy discussion on politics, they apprised him of the likelihood of a rising in the North before Christmas, supported by a commission from the King. On the outbreak of the rebellion, he raised a foot company in Kilkenny County. He signed the letter to Ormond in July 1642, enclosing the petition of the Irish catholics to Charles, and was one of the first to take the Oath of Association. He was a captain in Castleconnell's regiment of the Confederate army and was part of the latter's expedition to Ulster in 1644, when he was also a member of the General Assembly. He was in North Wales in January 1646, *en route* for Ireland, when he was described as a "servant in ordinary of the Queen". He was a member of the 7th. and 8th. Supreme Councils (1646-7), and was in Kilkenny in the Spring and Summer of 1647, and in Wexford in the same year. With Darcy\*, he was an agent from the Confederation to Owen Roe O'Neill in August of that year. He was the subject of a number of petitions to Ormond in 1649, when he was provost marshal of Munster. As a captain of dragoons in England, he fought at Worcester in 1650, when he was taken prisoner and shot by Captain William Bolton, despite having been given quarter.

RICHARD BUTLER, Waterford (?d. 1649-1654)

s. Thomas Fitzgerald, Waterford; m. by 1640, \_\_\_\_\_ ; at least 3 s.

ed. Inner Temple, 1595, King's Inns, 1607;

Richard held lands in Waterford County and City, and lived at Ringogona and Ballykene, Waterford and like, his father, was a freeman of Waterford. He returned to Ireland in 1602 from his legal studies, and, as a

<sup>71</sup> Netterville and Talbot were members of the 1634 Parliament.



nephew of Richard Aylward, was recommended to Carew by Sir George Buckhurst. He was a member of the 1624-5 commission of the peace for Waterford County. He was presumably not the former mayor of Clonmel who was fined in the Court of Castle Chamber in 1618 (the debt remained unpaid four years later). He was recorder of Waterford, sheriff of the city in 1611 and mayor in 1636; as agent for the recusants in England in 1628, he also presented a petition concerning Waterford's Charter. In 1642 he was active in persuading the city to join the rebellion, and, with his sons John and Thomas was listed as a rebel. He may have been a member of the 1644 General Assembly. Two Richard Butlers (of Knocktopher and Carrickythoerricke) took the oath of association. He was presumably the Waterford merchant who, with Stephen Everard, petitioned Ormond on behalf of Nicholas Everard of Limerick in 1649. His son, Sir James, was an m.p. in England in 1685.

#### THOMAS BUTLER, Carlow County

illeg. s. Sir Edmund Butler, Cloghgreennan and Roscrea; m. c1618, Anne, da. Sir Thomas Colclough, Tintern Abbey, Wexford, and Martha, da. Archbishop Adam Loftus and Alice Purdon; w. Nicholas (or Richard) Bagnal, Dunleckeny, Carlow; Bart. 1628;

d. after September 1642.

M.P. Carlow County 1634

Thomas was the grandson of James, 9th. Earl of Ormond, and his father was m.p. for Carlow in 1560. Thomas inherited his brother's (Lord Tullophelim, Ormond's heir until his death in 1613) lands. This property was claimed by Elizabeth Butler and the subject of the lengthy dispute with Ormond. He was sheriff of Carlow in 1612 and 1622, and *custos rotullorum* in 1624-5, when he was also included in the commission for the peace for the county. As might have been expected from his marriage, he was a protestant. Through his wife, the widow of a new English settler in Carlow (albeit from a family which was, by then, catholic), he was connected to the entire Loftus\* network, and to John Piggott\*, but also to Esmond\*, Blakeney\* and the Barnwalls\*. His daughter married Sir John Willson, Andrew's\* brother. The Bagnalls were also linked to the Ormonds, but Thomas was not on good terms with that family, and had



protracted disputes with them about his property, when Darcy\* acted for Ormond. The dispute became so intractable that Wentworth sent the papers to England for the opinion of judges there. He was a soldier, and a captain in the army by 1615. His cousin, Sir James Perrott, requested a foot company for him, and a joint command with him of the regiment at Newry in February 1627. The lords justice appointed him and Walter Bagnall joint governors of Carlow on the outbreak of the rebellion, but a meeting of local gentry later replaced him with Sir Morgan Cavanagh. His castle at Rathellin became a refuge for local protestants, but it was besieged, and he and his family were imprisoned in Leighlinbridge Castle for two weeks, before being brought to Kilkenny, where they were tried before Lord Mountgarrett, who resisted calls for their execution. Ann Butler blamed Davills\* and Oliver Eustace\* for their misfortunes and her deposition claimed losses of £4,906 5s. 4d., including £1,542 worth of stock, and £750 in rents.<sup>72</sup>

THOMAS BUTLER, Tipperary

? s. Lord Dunboyne;

d. after 1660.

M.P. Tipperary 1634.

Thomas lived at Kilconnell (Ballyconnell), Tipperary, and had inherited 5130 acres there, valued at £412, principally in the Barony of Middlethird. In November 1641, with other Munster gentry, he went to St. Leger\* at Clonmel, to remonstrate about the effects of the president's actions against local catholics. He joined the rebellion in its first year and took the Oath of Association. With his presumed relative, Lord Dunboyne, he was one of the chief officers of the Catholic army in Munster by February 1643. He was a member of the 1644 General Assembly. He may have been the Captain Thomas Butler who was taken prisoner at the battle of Knockenosse (November 1647), and later (May 1650) petitioned Ormond for maintenance. A Captain Thomas Butler of Gormanstowne, Tipperary was the subject of another petition to Ormond in 1649. He was included in Charles's Declaration of November 1660.

---

72 Deposition of Dame Ann Butler, *T.C.D. MS. 812*, f. 69r;



JOHN BYSSE (1602-1680), Dublin

e.s. Christopher Bysse (d. 1614), Dublin, and Margaret (d. 1641), da. Ald. John Foster, Dublin; m. Margaret, da. Francis Edgeworth, w. John King;

ed. Trinity College, Dublin; Lincoln's Inns, 1624; bar; King's Inns, 1632;

Bur. St. Audeon's, Dublin.

M.P. Charlemont, 1634, Dublin County, 1656, Convention, Dublin City.

John was still a minor when his father died and his wardship was granted to Sir Francis Annesley, Lord Mountnorris. He received livery of his father's estate in 1623; he held 579 acres in Dublin, including Preston's Inns in the city and some property at Swords, and in Philipstown, King's County, as well as some tithes in Dublin and Meath. He was a lawyer with a large legal practice, and he succeeded Catlin as recorder of Dublin in 1634 (the year in which he was made freeman), a position he held until the 1660s at least. He was a justice of assize in Munster from 1636. He was well-connected with other prominent Dublin families, especially through his mother. His marriage made him Edgeworth's\* brother-in-law and also connected him to King\*. An older connection was through his uncle Robert Bysse of Ballyowen, King's County, who married a daughter of the Dublin alderman, John Lany, father-in-law of Sir William Parsons\*. He was reported to be collecting money for Trinity College Dublin in England in the 1640s; he was also working hard to defend Perceval's Irish interests in 1647. He remained in Ireland in the 1650s, serving on the 1651 Leinster commission of the peace and collecting the Dublin contributions for the Assessment for Ireland in the last quarter of 1654. Fleetwood proposed him as a judge for Leinster in that year, a suggestion repeated three years later by Richard Pepys who described him as "*a man of learninge and integrity*".<sup>73</sup> Neither proposal, nor Henry Cromwell's recommendation that he be made a puisne judge, was acted on and he worked as an assistant in the courts rather than as a judge, although he seems to have acted as a justice of assize in Ulster in 1655. He was one of the original trustees of the Erasmus Smith Schools in the 1657 and was reappointed 12 years later by Charles. He was living in Castle Street, Dublin, in 1660. He was a commissioner for the Poll Money Ordnance in Dublin City and County in 1660 and in the county in the following year. At the restoration, he became chief baron of the exchequer, with a salary of £600, and a privy councillor. He was made a freeman of Waterford in 1662. He was generally under Ormond's

---

73 *Bodl. Carte MS. 63, f. 618.*



protection in the 1660s and 1670s, and Ormond saved him from dismissal for insufficiency more than once; he felt himself to be in disfavour in 1663, but three years later he was made commissioner of prizes. He continued as a justice of assize in Leinster to 1679. His attendance at the funeral of the nonconformist preacher Joseph Teate in 1666 indicates that he retained his puritan inclinations after the restoration.

ROBERT BYSSE (1607+-1643), Roscommon

2.s. Christopher Bysse (d. 1615), Dublin, and Margaret (d. 1641), da. Ald. John Foster, Dublin; m. 1) Mary, da. Stephen Ussher, merchant; 2) Eleanor, da. Ald. Thomas Axter, Dublin; at least 1 s.

ed. Lincoln's Inns, 1627, King's Inns, 1636;

Robert lived at Piletstown, Castleknock, Dublin, where he held 97 inherited acres, estimated as being worth between £26 and £40; in February 1642 he claimed of £242 for loss of stock, crops and rent there. He was second remembrancer in Chancery in 1627 jointly with Nicholas Loftus\*, and became recorder of Drogheda, a post he held at his death. He was also sheriff of Dublin County in 1641-2. His parents' connections were firmly among the capital's ruling merchant families and his own marriages, especially to Mary Ussher, strengthened these links. His links with other m.p.s were strong - the Usshers\* and Parsons\* provided extensive networks of connections, quite apart from his brother John\*. He may also have been John Taylor's\* cousin.<sup>74</sup> With such strong Leinster connections and especially his post in Drogheda, his return for a Connaught constituency appears strange. He did, however, have family links with Roscommon: his cousin Dorothy (daughter of his uncle and namesake, Robert) married Michael Pinnock of Turnich, a member of a settler family with close Dublin connections, and his sister-in-law Margaret Edgeworth was the widow of John King, from another important Roscommon settler family. The Pinnock also had ties to the Yorkshire network within the administration, as Michael Pinnock's grandson, who lived with him, was called Talbot Osbaldstone, and was presumably related to the attorney general, Radcliffe's\* brother-in-law.<sup>75</sup>

<sup>74</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 840*, ff 7r-10v, account of the rebellion in a letter to his brother John\*, 16 February 1642, refers to his "uncle Taylor" and John.

<sup>75</sup> Deposition of Michael Pinnock, 19 April 1643, *T.C.D. MS. 830*, f. 20r.



WILLIAM CADOGAN (CADWGAN, CADOWGAN) (1601-1661)

Monaghan

e.s. Henry Cadogan, Llanbeter, and Catherine, da. Thomas Stradling; b. Dunster, Somerset; m. Elizabeth \_\_\_\_\_;

bur. Christ Church, Dublin.

M.P. Meath and Louth, 1654, Convention, Meath.

Cadogan is said to have come to Ireland with Wentworth, but he was already established in Dublin before April 1630, as Sir George Sexton's tenant of the Black Anchor, Wood Quay, and he is included in the 1631 Irish army lists as a commissary of the musters, a post he held jointly with Talles\*.<sup>76</sup> At Strafford's request, but apparently against Lord Chancellor Loftus's wishes, Wandesford\* made him his secretary in 1636. In parliament, he was a member of the committee which drew up impeachment charges against Radcliffe\* and others. He lived near the Castle Gate, Dublin and at Gailmulston, Meath. In 1641, he was a captain in Piers Crosbie's\* regiment. He was part of Sir Henry Tichbourne's forces during the 1641-2 siege, travelling to Drogheda on the outbreak of the rebellion, staying at Laurence Dowdall's castle of Athlumney *en route*. He was based in Drogheda and Trim until 1660, being appointed provost marshal of Meath, Louth and Drogheda in 1642, when still a captain under Tichbourne, and commander of Trim. He was licensed to go to Dublin in January 1643 on royal business, and in the following year obtained a letter of recommendation from Ormond to the Archbishop of York, as he planned to bring his troops to serve Charles in England. He remained in Ireland, however, as commander of Trim, coming to Dublin to take part in musters in 1646 and 1647, by which time he held the rank of major; his Dublin residence was then in Staple Alley. In December 1646 he borrowed 262 oxen and cows from Lucas Fitzgerald\*. He brought troops from Trim to assist Tichbourne and Michael Jones at Dunganhill in August 1647. Despite his earlier royalist sympathies, he held out against Ormond in June 1649 and continued to command Trim through the 1650s, serving as a member of the 1653 Dublin Commission of the Peace and taking examinations in Meath and Louth. In the following year he certified Wharton's\* service to the parliamentary side. He was a commissioner for raising the assessments for Ireland in Meath and Louth in the last quarter of 1654 and Meath in the second

<sup>76</sup> N.L.I. MS. 2541, f. 1; T.C.D. MS. 672, f. 227v.



half of 1657. He was classed as a '49 Officer. He was commissioner for the poll money ordnance for Meath and Navan (of which he was portreeve) in 1660 and 1661; in the latter year he was also commissioner for Kells. Despite his Somerset birth, he considered himself Welsh, and was so regarded by others. He had no known connection with Monaghan (although the Blayneys were also Welsh) and his return was presumably due to his position as Wandesford's\* secretary.

GEORGE CARLETON (1597+-1670),

e.s. George Carleton, Huntercombe, Oxfordshire, and his second wife, Katherine, da. Thomas Harrison, Finchamsted, Berkshire, w. Thomas Spyer, Huntercombe; m. by 1639, Mary;<sup>77</sup> at least 2 s., 1 da.

bur. St. Michan's, Dublin.

M.P. Enniscorthy, 1661.<sup>78</sup>

Carleton was returned c. July 1641 for an unidentified constituency. He may have taken part in the 1625 expedition to Cadiz and in 1627 he was employed on the King's business and presented a petition to Buckingham requesting letters of marque to recover damages of 140,000 ducats for non-performance of a sentence obtained by him against the town of St. Jean de Luz.

His older half-brother John succeeded to the estates of their uncle, Dudley Carlton, Viscount Dorchester, but Dudley also used his influence to advance George's career. In 1630 he wrote to Cork to solicit his interest and in the following year he received the reversion of the office of clerk of the hanaper and moved to Ireland, where he lived in St. Michan's parish on the north side of Dublin city. The grant of the office followed in January 1632, and was renewed in 1636 and 1641, and he or his son and namesake still held the position in 1670. He was in Oxford with Charles in 1644, and was ordered to return to Dublin with Nicholas Loftus\*. In 1660 he was living in Bull Lane, Dublin. He also had other influential connections, including his grandfather Thomas Harrison, an official of the royal stable.

---

<sup>77</sup> A report of 1625 claimed that Dudley Carleton's nephew (possibly George) was to marry a Dutch lady, widow of Mr. Throckmorton, who was worth £10,000. *H.M.C. Rep. 13, App. II, p. 116.*

<sup>78</sup> although as clerk of the hanaper he also fulfilled another parliamentary function - issuing and receiving writs of returns and forwarding them to the clerk of the commons.



JOSHUA CARPENTER (1585-1656), Carlingford

b. Lyme, Dorset; m. by 1639, Ursula, da. Richard Vinegar, Sackfield Hall, Suffolk;  
4 s., 5 da.;

d. Elsinore, bur. Naas;

M.P. Carlingford 1634.

Carpenter lived in Dublin where he was a close associate of Wentworth, acting for him in many commercial dealings, including the tobacco monopoly, and land purchases, especially in Wicklow and Monaghan, although he also acquired lands in Wexford. He had a joint lease of lands in Dublin with Bartholomew Peisley. His involvement in the tobacco monopoly, with Little\* and Carr\*, caused his expulsion from the Commons on 24 February 1641 and arrest. Not all of his commercial dealings were with the administration; he signed a bond with Nicholas Osborne<sup>79</sup> in 1635, and with Davills\* in 1640, the latter bond being on the Dublin Staple. He was commissary general for victuals in 1640 and was in Amsterdam in June 1642, buying arms for the Privy Council. He was back in Dublin in the following month, and was still commissary in October 1643. With Carr\* and Guildford Slingsby,<sup>80</sup> he received a grant of Strafford's lands after his attainder and execution, and Carpenter lived at Gigginstown in the 1650s. He was a commissioner for the collection of the Assessment for Ireland in Kildare in the last quarter of 1654.

GEORGE CARR, (1603-1662)

Castlebar

e.s. William Carr and Mary Marsh, Southay, Yorkshire; m. 1637, Griselda, da. Robert Meredith\* and Anne, da. Sir William Ussher and Isabella, da. Archbishop Adam Loftus and Alice Purdon;

ed. Oxford, 1620; Gray's Inns, 1622; King's Inns, 1656;

Kt. 1662.

M.P. Roscommon 1634, Naas 1661.

Carr's close connections with the administration explain his appointments as cranner of all ports (1633), cursitor in Chancery and clerk of the Council of Connaught (1635-7), clerk of the musters (1636) and clerk of the

<sup>79</sup> son and brother of the Richard Osbournes\*.

<sup>80</sup> cousin of Slingsby\*, Wentworth's secretary and m.p. for Carysfort in 1634.



council of Munster (1637, renewed 1643 and 1660). His chief official links were his cousins, the Radcliffes\* and Nettletons\*, and his father-in-law who connected him with the entire Loftus\* and Ussher\* network. He also acted as one of Wentworth's secretaries<sup>81</sup> and was heavily involved, both as an official and as a personal friend of the chief men in the administration, in all the activities of government from 1633. With Billingsley\* and Carpenter\* he was involved in Wentworth's land dealings in Wicklow in the late 1630s and was active with Carpenter\* and Little\* in the tobacco monopoly. He stood surety for Bramhall in 1641, with a bail of £6,700. In 1650 he was a beneficiary under the will of Garrett Nugent of Dublin, husband of Anne Ussher. Unlike most other Yorkshiremen in the government, he remained active in the Irish administration in the 1640s and afterwards; he was commissioner for collecting the assessment for Ireland in Kildare in the second half of 1657. He maintained his connections with the Wentworths; with Carpenter\* and Guildford Slingsby he received a grant of Strafford's lands after his attainder and execution, part of the profits of which were to go to Wentworth's widow, and he was claiming lands in Kildare on behalf of Strafford's son in the 1650s. He also held lands of his own in Kildare. With William Ussher\*, Paul Davys\*, King\* and others he presented a petition to the Committee for Relief upon Articles Given in England and Ireland.

PATRICK CASEY                      Sligo County

Patrick replaced Radcliffe\*. He lived at Grange. If he was a member of the 1653 commission of the peace for Dublin, he was a protestant. He was presumably not the soldier whose banns were published at Derry in July 1660.

ROBERT CASEY,                      Ennis  
 m. by 1641, Mary \_\_\_\_\_; at least 1s., 1 da.;  
 d. 1669; bur. St. Michan's, Dublin, April 1669.

Casey lived in Dublin where he was comptroller of Robert Dillon's\* household by 1638; he may have been settled there earlier and he was witness to

<sup>81</sup> He may also have been related to Wentworth's chaplain, Dr. Carr, rector of Aycliffe. *H.M.C. Report 5, App., p. 20.*



a Perceval deed in 1634. He was clearly protestant, as he took the oath of supremacy.<sup>82</sup> As a resident of Corduff, County Dublin, he was robbed by rebels within the first months of the rebellion. He was a soldier in the 1640s, and was mustering a troop of horse in Tallaght in 1647. He was enrolled in the decree of innocents, and is listed as a '49 officer. His return was presumably due at least in part to his connections with the privy councillor Dillon\*, but he may also have had some local connections. The Caseys were an important merchant family in Limerick, where Henry Casie was constable of the staple in 1640-1. Other members of the family were settled at Rathcannon, Limerick (they were connected to Redmond Roche\* and Waller\*) who may have been influential in his return, and in County Clare.<sup>83</sup>

OLIVER CASHELL, Dundalk

e.s. John Cashell, Louth;

ed. Grey's Inns, 1624.

d. 1666+

M.P. Dundalk 1634.

Cashell was an important landowner and lawyer in Louth. His property included lands at Ballymascanlon outside Dundalk. With Bellew\*, he brought the Commons's remonstrance to England in 1640. He was declared a rebel in February 1642 and his lands were declared forfeit. In 1647 he was paid £15 by the Confederation. In October 1660 an order was made for the restoration of his lands in Carlingford and Dundalk, and he signed the 1666 petition of the catholics to Charles II.

TOBY CAULFIELD (October 1621-January 1642), Tyrone

e.s. William Caulfield, Lord Charlemont, and Mary, da. Sir John King and Catherine, da. Robert Drury; d. unmarried;

ed. Henley, Lincoln's Inns (1637), Cambridge (1637), Exeter College, Oxford (1638)

3rd. Lord Charlemont, December 1640.<sup>84</sup>

<sup>82</sup> *C.J.(Ire.)*, 1 August 1642.

<sup>83</sup> Inquisition of Morrough O'Cashie of Clare, d. 1623; refers to his sons John and James. *N.A. MS. RC 4/1*, pp 137-8.

<sup>84</sup> William Caulfield's will was drawn up by Sambach\*.



The first Caulfield to come to Ireland was the soldier Sir Toby, first Lord Charlemont, (m.p. Armagh County, 1613) whose considerable property and title were inherited by his nephew, Toby's father.<sup>85</sup> He was King's\* nephew and the Moores\* and John Martin's\* cousin (Martin\* linked him to Brownlow\*); his aunt Lettice and sister Anne married Peisley\* and Gore\* respectively. He held extensive property in Armagh, Tyrone, Monaghan, Derry and Antrim, but especially at Charlemont, and was appointed governor of the fort in 1640. His possessions included over 4,000 acres at Dungannon, valued at £366, and a lease of 640 acres of church lands in Tyrone, valued at £20. Charlemont was captured by Phelim O'Neill\* on 22nd. October 1641 and he was held as a prisoner until his murder on 6 January 1642 at Kinnard by Phelim's foster brothers. The incident took place during Phelim's\* absence and he caused the murders to be hanged.

ARTHUR CHAMPION (CHAPMAN, CHAMPEN), Enniskillen  
 m. 1) \_\_\_\_\_; 2) 1621, Alice Allen (d. 1651), Dublin; she rem. 1645, Henry, s. Sir William Gilbert\*; d. 1641.

Champion was an English merchant who settled in Dublin before 1618; in 1639 he purchased the lands of Roger Atkinson<sup>86</sup> at Coole in Fermanagh and lived there at Shannock (Shanoge), serving as j.p. and sheriff, although he also maintained his commercial contacts in Dublin. He also had property in Dublin and Munster. His substantial fortune was built up through his activities as a merchant, specialising in cloth, but he also acted as Cork's agent and bill-discounter.<sup>87</sup> His wealth may be judged by his wife's claimed losses in the rebellion, which included £829 for jewels and plate, £500 in household goods, 100 cattle and 112 sheep, £110 for crops and £440 in rents, as well as £5,000 in debts.<sup>88</sup> These statements are supported by the conditions she was able to include in her 1645 marriage settlement, to which Edgeworth\* was a party.<sup>89</sup> His murder (with

<sup>85</sup> McGrath, 1613. p. 98 and *Peerage*.

<sup>86</sup> Atkinson (m.p. for Enniskillen 1613); the purchase included an agreement that Atkinson and his wife Edith could remain there for their lives. McGrath, 1613. pp 111-2; *T.C.D. MS. 835*, f. 233.

<sup>87</sup> In 1618 Boyle guaranteed Champion's debt of £20 incurred in the tobacco trade. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., I, p. 200. Champion was fined for dealing as a merchant in Dublin without admission.

<sup>88</sup> She claimed total losses of £10,577, Deposition of Alice Champin, 14 April 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 835*, ff 26r, 200r.

<sup>89</sup> *P.R.O.L. Prob. 11/220/29*.



others, including his brother, the sub-sheriff of Fermanagh and the clerk of the peace in Cavan) by his tenant Redmond MacGuier on 23 October 1641 at Shannock was one of the most publicised incidents of the outbreak of the rebellion. His wife escaped from Fermanagh and apparently settled in Dublin. Edgeworth\* and Simpson\* (who received a legacy of £20) oversaw her will.

GARRETT (GERALD) CHEEVERS, Bannow

3 s. Christopher Cheevers,<sup>90</sup> Macetown, Meath, and Anne (or Eleanor) Plunkett, da. Lord Delvin; m. Katherine Anne, da. Hamon Cheevers, Killyan, Wexford, and Elizabeth Masterson;

ed. Middle Temple, 1628, King's Inns, 1635;

d. 1642+

The Cheevers were a respected old English family, based originally in Meath, but a 15th. century marriage brought lands in Wexford and the family was thereafter divided between those two counties, but with considerable contact and inter-marriage between the two branches. Hence the return of a member of the Meath branch for a Wexford constituency. Two members of the Wexford branch provided m.p.s for that county and town in 1634. Garrett was a lawyer and a member of the parliamentary committee which drew up charges of impeachment against Radcliffe\* and others. He may also have been mayor of Wexford. He married his cousin, whose family owned extensive lands in Bannow Parish, which explains his return. Through his mother, he was Nugent's\* cousin and connected with Dempsey\*, Forth\* and Lords Inchiquin and Kildare. His older brother John married Bellings's\* sister. His brother-in-law Arthur<sup>91</sup> was a member of the 1644 General Assembly.

The Chichester family's Irish connections began with the arrival of Sir Arthur Chichester in 1599. He became lord deputy in 1604 and laid the foundations of the family fortune by building up estates in Antrim and Tyrone, chiefly around Belfast, Carrickfergus and Dungannon. Sir Arthur's sons predeceased him and his estates and titles (he was created Lord Chichester of

---

90 Christopher received a patent for a baronetcy in 1623, but it was never enrolled.

91 Katherine Cheevers's brother Arthur married Garrett's sister. *T.C.D. MS. 819*, f. 4r.



Belfast) were inherited by his brother Edward and the latter's sons Arthur\* and John\*. Their returns to parliament reflect the continuing family influence in Tyrone and Antrim. Arthur and John had close connections with several m.p.s: they were brothers-in-law of Wray\* and John Clotworthy, cousins of the Fortescues\* and Culme\*, and were connected to the Moores\* and to Digby\* through Arthur's marriage to his cousin, sister of Sir George Digby, like Clotworthy a member of the committee drawing up charges against Strafford, and a prominent member of the early opposition to the crown in the Long Parliament. Another sister married Sir William St. Leger's\* son John.

ARTHUR CHICHESTER (1606-1675), Antrim County

e.s. Edward Chichester (d. 1648), Viscount Chichester of Belfast, and Anne, da. John Coplestone; m. 1) Dorcas, (d. 1630), da. John Hill, Warwickshire; 2) (1630-8) Mary Digby (d. 1648), da. 1st. Lord Bristol; 3) 1651, Laetitia, da. Sir William Hicks, Bart.;

Earl of Donegal, 1647; 3rd. Viscount Chichester 1648.

M.P. Antrim County 1634.<sup>92</sup>

Arthur lived at Joymount and had extensive land holdings and influence in Tyrone and Antrim, especially in Belfast and Carrickfergus; he was governor of Carrickfergus in 1627, with the rank of captain, and his foot company was still part of the standing army in 1631.<sup>93</sup> He held 5,146 acres in Donegal, nearly 1,000 acres in Derry and later acquired lands in Waterford. On the outbreak of the rebellion he was appointed governor of Carrickfergus, with a commission to defend it against the rebels<sup>94</sup> and with Cole\*, Arthur Hill\* and Montgomery\*, commanded troops assigned to Leven's Ulster campaign in September 1642. In February 1644, with Marcus Trevor\* and James Montgomery\* he wrote from Newtownards to the Irish Parliament about resources for their army and in the same year was appointed a privy councillor and governor of Belfast. At Ormond's request, he was created Earl. He remained in Ireland in the 1650s and is recorded as lending £800 through the Carrickfergus

<sup>92</sup> Arthur was replaced in November 1634, as he was absent in England. An Arthur Chichester represented Tyrone in the Convention; it is not clear if this was the same man.

<sup>93</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 672*, f. 230r.

<sup>94</sup> This was a joint appointment with Sir Arthur Tyrriugham, m.p. for Newry in 1634. *T.C.D. MS. 838*, f. 121r.



Staple in 1655-7. He was a commissioner to raise the assessment for Ireland in Antrim in the final quarter of 1654 and the second half of 1657. A commissioner for the Poll Money Ordnance in Antrim in 1660, and *custos rotullorum* there and in Down, he was reappointed privy councillor and governor of Carrickfergus on the restoration. He was also empowered to grant gunpowder licences in Antrim in 1661. He had an annual pension of £183 8s.

JOHN CHICHESTER (1609-1644), Dungannon

2 s. Edward Chichester, Viscount Chichester of Belfast, and Anne, da. John Coplestone; m. 1635, Mary, da. Roger Jones, Lord Ranelagh, and Mary, da. Garrett Moore, Lord Drogheda, and Anne, da. Sir Henry Colley and Anne Loftus; she rem. Col. Christopher Copley.

John was brother-in-law of Wray\*, John Clotworthy and Lord Ranelagh and closely connected to the Moores\* (both through his own marriage and through his cousins the Fortescues\* and Culme\*), St. Legers\* and the Boyle network (Cork stood surety for part of his marriage settlement). He trailed the cornet at the funeral of his uncle Sir Arthur Chichester. His will was executed by his brother Arthur\*, Ranelagh and Clotworthy, and witnessed by Ranelagh's man of business, Summers\*. He lived on family property at Dungannon, where he held 1,620 acres; these were valued at £206 in the *Civil Survey*, (although he estimated their annual worth at £550) but they incurred an annual crown rent of only £13 15s. 7d. He also held leases of 646 acres of church lands there. His father agreed to settle lands worth £1,000 *per annum* on him on his marriage. A captain in the new army, he was living in his house in Carrickfergus in July 1640. His troop was sent to Dromore on the outbreak of the rebellion, and he was a serjeant-major of troops by 1642. His troops were assigned to attend the army sent out of Scotland in July 1643, and he fought at the battle of Roconnell in the following February; his foot company was in Belfast Castle that May, although he was in Dublin. The English Commons responded to his widow's petition (which gave his rank as Colonel) by granting her £150 in 1644; his will, written in November 1643, was proved in February 1649.



WILLIAM COLE, Fermanagh

e.s. Emmanuel Cole, London, and Margaret Ingram; m. Susan, da. J. Croft, Lancashire, w. S. Segar, Lieutenant of Dublin Castle; 3 s., at least 2 da.

? ed. Cambridge;

Kt. 1617;

d. 1653; bur. St. Michan's, Dublin.

M.P. Fermanagh 1634.

Cole, a soldier, came to Ireland before 1600, having fought in Holland. He was captain of boats at Ballyshannon and Erne in 1607, at 3s. 4d. *per diem*, and was captain of Enniskillen Castle and first provost of that borough, which he controlled, and which he could, presumably, have represented in 1613 had he wished. He benefited from the plantation, being granted 1,000 acres in Fermanagh and purchasing at least as much again from other grantees. He was regarded as a good planter, building a bawn and introducing tenants, and sat on a 1629 commission investigating the condition of plantation lands in Omey, Tyrone. He was granted a licence to make and sell *aqua vitae* in Enniskillen in 1617. He was well integrated into local society, being sheriff in 1615, 1623 and 1626-7, and a j.p., and collector of fines in Fermanagh in 1616. Falkland summoned him as a witness between the Deputy and Sir Arthur Savage and Walter Weldon in a 1630 Star Chamber case.<sup>95</sup> His record of loyalty was somewhat tarnished by his refusal, with his neighbour Lord Balfour, to pay contributions after the end of the subsidies in 1633, for which he was imprisoned and threatened with the removal of his command. Despite his local, rather than national, influence, he had a link with Wentworth's administration, as a cousin of Strafford's old Yorkshire acquaintance, Sir Arthur Ingram. Through his children's marriages he formed links with the Parsons\* and Montgomeries\*, and Dean Barclay of Clogher. His Scottish connections may help explain his support for the Covenant. He had advance knowledge of the rebellion and tried to warn the lords justice, although Sir Frederick Hamilton later claimed that he had done nothing to prevent it or warn others; He published a pamphlet to refute these accusations, and Borlace\* credited his regiment with killing 2,417 Irish swordsmen and relieving and freeing 5,467 protestants in the rebellion, concluding "Yes, that from Hercules his foot the success and Courage of the

<sup>95</sup> N.A. MS. 2445, p. 112. Savage and Weldon were both m.p.s in 1613. McGrath, 1613, pp 50 and 105.



*English may be drawn accompt of the Services of Sr. Willi. (sic)*"<sup>96</sup> His castle at Enniskillen was a place of refuge for protestants fleeing Monaghan early in the rebellion, and he was granted a commission to raise, arm and band all the British in Fermanagh in 1642 and, with Arthur Hill\*, Arthur Chichester\* and Montgomery\*, his troop was assigned to Leven's Ulster campaign of that year. His regiment was based at Enniskillen through 1643 and 1644. He was in London in February 1645, as a witness at Lord MacGuire's trial; that winter he fought with Coote\* in Sligo, but he was back in Enniskillen in the following year, where he was simultaneously colonel of a foot regiment and captain of a troop of horse, and was part of Monro's Lagan Army. He was commanding regiments of foot and horse in Ulster in 1647. He was imprisoned in Enniskillen in 1649 by the Scottish troops under his command. In May 1650 he received a commission from the Council of State to execute martial law, with other "*officers as have contracted to carry forces into Ireland*".<sup>97</sup> In the following month he was at Chester, waiting for a wind to bring his regiment to Ireland and gathering men for his regiment to replace the Scotsmen who had mutinied.

EDWARD COMERFORD (-1601-1649) Callan

e.s. Thomas Comerford and Anstace Shee; m. \_\_\_\_\_, da. Sir Cyprian Horsfall; at least 1 s.

M.P. Callan 1634.

The Comerfords were settled in Kilkenny and Tipperary for centuries and Edward's family had many connections in the area; his father-in-law was mayor of Kilkenny in 1639-40 and he seems also to have had some family connection with William Smyth\*.<sup>98</sup> He was a trusted servant of Walter, and then James, Ormond, signing many of their deeds and acting as agent by 1627, travelling to London on Ormond business, including the dispute with Thomas Butler\*. He had deals with Walter Ormond and Sir Henry Lynch in Mayo in 1629 and many land deals with and on behalf of Ormond in Kilkenny, Carlow

<sup>96</sup> He prepared for the rebellion by breaking down the bridges and bringing men and provisions into the Island at Enniskillen. *T.C.D. MS. 835, f. 3r*; W. Cole, *The Answere and vindication of Sir William Cole ... unto a charge given in by Sir Frederick Hamilton [to the Committee of Both Kingdoms]*. (\_\_\_\_\_, 1645). Ware confirms that Cole sent two letters to the Council, but that they arrived after the discovery of the plot. *Gilbert MS. 169, p. 224*.

<sup>97</sup> *B.L. MS. Sl. 1519, f. 214*.

<sup>98</sup> *N.L.I. MSS. 2306, p. 309; 2304, p. 325; 2306, p. 117*.



and Tipperary, frequently with Wemys\* and William Smyth\*; he was party to Ormond's bond on the Kilkenny staple in June 1640.<sup>99</sup> These deeds with Ormond, Perceval and the Usshers\* continued through to 1642. His father settled the estates of Ballyclovan and Foulkesrath on him and he was able to use his position with the Ormonds to build up his own property, paying £600 for the estate of White or West Court near Callan in 1638 and buying lands in Tipperary and property worth £4 in Kilkenny City. He was sovereign of Callan in 1632. Despite his allegiance to Ormond, he supported the Confederation and was a member of the 1644 and 1646-7 General Assemblies, serving as its agent to discuss the disposition of its troops with his master. He supported the cessation and opposed Rinuccini; he contributed £12 2s. to the Confederation in 1646 and witnessed the articles of agreement for peace in February 1647. Despite his adherence to the Confederation, he continued to act as Ormond's agent throughout the 1640s, collecting his rents, mortgaging lands and buying his clothes,<sup>100</sup> and this connection was clearly used by the Catholic side. His property was declared forfeit under Cromwell and his son Thomas petitioned Lady Thurles for the restoration of these estates in 1661, citing his father's reputation as an old and trusted family servant.

HENRY CONWAY, Londonderry County

y. s. \_\_\_\_ Conway; m. by 1638, \_\_\_\_\_;

d. 1659+

As a cousin of Lord Conway, Henry was part of a powerful group within the settler community, which included Rawdon\*, the Downings and the Wares\*.<sup>101</sup> He was an important landholder in Londonderry, where he held property in Maghera (as a freeholder from the Mercers' Company) and 200 acres of church lands. With Clotworthy and other beneficiaries of the Londonderry Plantation he signed a petition in 1638 seeking security of their estates. He also dealt in timber. Rawdon\* describes him as a knight but there is no other

<sup>99</sup> He was also reporting to Ormond on parliamentary affairs in that month, although he was not yet an m.p. *N.L.I. MS. 2306*, pp 310-324,333-367.

<sup>100</sup> Letters of Comerford to Ormond, transmitting his rents and discussing his business, 15 November 1643, 6 March 1644. *N.L.I. MS. 2308*, pp 171, 357.

<sup>101</sup> Downings benefited from the Longford plantation. Conway was William Downing's brother-in-law; George Downing was m.p. for Limavady in 1634. Ware\* refers to "my brother Conway" (possibly Henry) owing him £1 (lent in cash) and 37s. for a pair of silk stockings in 1622. *Gilbert MS. 169*, p. 1.



evidence to support this statement. He was j.p. for Derry County in 1624-5 and commissioner to raise money there for the army two years later. He was a soldier, holding the rank of cornet to Lord Chichester, when he was described as "an active valient gentleman"<sup>102</sup> and formed part of his funeral procession in 1624. In the following year Lord Conway petitioned Falkland for a position for him; Falkland disliked him, however, and only offered a commission to raise a company for service in Spain. His military experience proved useful in the 1640s. His castle at Vintnerstown (Balynaghy) "the best strength for a house in the county"<sup>103</sup> and reported to be full of arms, sheltered his neighbours early in the rebellion but was surrendered to Phelim O'Neill\* by January 1642, with Henry, his wife and children escaping with their valuables. He also refused to help Rowley\* and others in the defence of Londonderry and was reported to have taken their gunpowder. These actions were regarded suspiciously by local protestants, who connected them with his older brother's catholicism.<sup>104</sup> He was presumably the Mr. Conway who was commanding a troop of horse in Ulster in 1646-7 and commanding Coleraine in June 1649. He does not appear to have taken any part in activities in Ireland throughout the 1650s and was living near the Ferry Gate, Londonderry, in 1660.

ALLAN COOKE, Cavan

m. - 1633, \_\_\_\_\_, (d. 1643), da. Bishop James Heygate (Highgate) of Kilfenora;

ed. ?Trinity College Dublin, D.C.L., c. 1637;<sup>105</sup>

d. 1654+

M.P. Cavan 1634.

Cooke's origins are unknown, but he may well have been a member of the Cooke family of West Burton, Sussex.<sup>106</sup> He came to Ireland before 1622 and became chancellor of Kilmore before 1630. His advancement in the church, although a layman, is partly explained by his marriage, which also made him Henry Manning's\* brother-in-law. Heygate held the Archdeanery of Clogher in

<sup>102</sup> *Cal.S.P.Ire.*, 1615-25. p. 551.

<sup>103</sup> Hogan, *Letters and papers*, p. 9.

<sup>104</sup> Deposition, 12 June 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 839*, ff 96r,110r-v.

<sup>105</sup> His name does not appear in the published registers of the inns of court, although he presumably attended them.

<sup>106</sup> The name Allan occurs regularly in that family pedigree, although there is no one who can be positively identified with the m.p. *B.L. Harl. MS. 6164*, f. 62r.



*commendam* with his bishopric, but he also built up considerable property around Cavan and Cooke inherited Manor Heygate in Fermanagh from his father-in-law. These connections help to explain his returns. His ecclesiastical career did not flourish under Moyne's successor - Bedell accused him, through the Star Chamber, of preying on the local population through the ecclesiastical courts; he retaliated by accusing Bedell of improper actions on benefices. After a protracted struggle, he was eventually replaced as chancellor by Ashe\*.<sup>107</sup> He was a lawyer; Lord Cork retained his services and he was more than once recommended to Wentworth by Coke. He was acting as a judge in the Admiralty Court by 1633 and became master in chancery in 1636, the year in which he appealed for the position of judge in the vice-admiralty of Leinster. His legal and ecclesiastical experience made him a natural person for Wentworth to nominate to hear appeals from ecclesiastical courts. He became vicar general of Dublin, in which position he judged a case between William Tirry and Philip Perceval in March 1641. He stood bail of £6,700 for Bramhall in the same year. He was in Ireland in June 1643, taking depositions as a judge in the Leinster vice-admiralty court and in the following year was a commissioner for inquiring and seizing rebels' goods in London. He was also in London in 1646.

The Coote family in Ireland was founded by Sir Charles Coote\* sr. and his brother William, Dean of Down from 1635, who came from Norfolk. Charles and his sons acquired lands in the midlands and Connaught and established a dominant network throughout the region.

CHARLES COOTE sr., Queen's County

s. Sir Nicholas Coote, Blownorton, Norfolk, and Eleanor Stanhope; m. Dorothea, da. Hugh Cuffe, Cuffeswood, Cork;

ed. Cambridge, 1591;

Kt. 1616; Bart. 1621;

M.P. Jamestown 1634.

d. 1642.

<sup>107</sup> This dispute is traced in A. Ford, *The Reformation in Kilmore before 1641*. in R. Gillespie (ed.), *Cavan: essays on the history of an Irish county*. (Dublin, 1995), pp 73-98.



Coote came to Ireland in 1600 as a soldier and fought at Kinsale as a captain of foot; he became provost marshal of Connaught in 1605, joint collector of composition money there in 1613, collector of fines three years later, provincial vice-president in 1620 and a privy councillor in the following year. He was a commissioner to inquire into Inchiquin's property in 1619 and from the following year was active in planning the projected plantation of Connaught. He had, however, also built up strong links in Munster, marrying into a local settler family (becoming Slingsby's\* brother-in-law) and serving as sheriff in 1606. His wife brought him considerable property in Cork and Queen's Counties. The marriage may not have been amicable but their children formed important alliances, with Francis Hamilton\*, St. George\*, Gifford\*, Phillips\* (and thus the Usshers\*), Arthur Hill\* and the Moores\*, as well as the Willoughbys of Galway; all, except Hill\* and Hamilton\*, were part of the midlands / Connaught settler community. He was an enthusiastic land speculator, building up estates in Sligo, Leitrim and Roscommon before 1618, in addition to his property in King's and Queen's Counties. In 1624-5 he was j.p. for Roscommon and Leitrim and three years later a commissioner to raise money for the army there and in Sligo. He was the first sovereign of Jamestown in 1620 (where he endowed a school, and which he represented in 1634), and *custos rotullorum* of Queen's County in 1634. With his son Charles\* he also had land deals with Ormond and Boyle in the 1630s. He built up local industries, including a cloth works at Mountrath and ironworks in Cavan, Sligo and Leitrim.<sup>108</sup> Some estimate of his wealth may be gained from his depositions, which claimed losses of £560 10s. 8d. in Mountrath, £716 9s. in goods and estates, and £7,548 7s. 10d. in Leitrim, Sligo and Cavan, plus £1,194 in annual profits from the Cavan iron works alone.<sup>109</sup> One estimate put his annual income at nearly £4,000 by 1640. He was made a freeman of Dublin in 1633 and Belfast in August 1640. He remained a member of the standing army and was colonel of brigades in the new army of 1640. He reacted to the rebellion with vigour and enthusiasm. Commissioned to raise troops, he was also appointed governor of Dublin, and his actions in November-December 1641, especially his burning of houses in Clontarf, were a major factor in pushing the recusant gentry into taking defensive action. He fought with Ormond at Kilrush

---

<sup>108</sup> The latter project was in partnership with Lord Cork, *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II, pp 305-6, 312, 314, 319; III, p. 13; *N.L.I. MS. 13,237* (14) (24).

<sup>109</sup> Depositions of Isaac Sanders, Mountrath, 7 March 1643, *T.C.D. MS. 815*, f. 55r, 181r; Philip Sergint, *ibid*, ff 90v, 315; John Bourke, 26 October 1643, *T.C.D. MS. 833*, f. 223.



and was killed taking Dangan Castle, Meath.<sup>110</sup>

CHARLES COOTE jr., (c1610-1661), Leitrim

e.s. Charles\* and Dorothea, da. Hugh Cuffe, Cuffeswood, Cork; m. 1) by 1636, Mary, da. Sir Francis Rushe, Castlejordan, and Mary, da. Sir Henry Duke; 2) Jane, da. Sir Robert Hannay;

ed. Trinity College Cambridge, 1622;

Kt. 1626; 2nd. Bart., 1642; Earl of Mountrath, 1661;

Bur. Christchurch, Dublin.

M.P. Leitrim 1634, Galway and Mayo 1654 and 1659, Convention, Galway.<sup>111</sup>

Charles benefited from his father's accretion of estates in Queen's County and Connaught. He lived at Castle Coote, Roscommon, and most of his connections were with the midland and Connaught settler families of Gifford\*, St. George\* and Piggott\*, although he was brother-in-law of Robert Loftus\* and Wentworth\* and Slingsby's\* nephew and also linked to Arthur Hill\* and Phillips\*. He had many land deals with his father, including some with Ormond and Boyle; he received lands in Queen's County through his first marriage and others in Limerick and elsewhere. In 1640, with Arthur Hill\*, he was appointed to the commission of the peace for Antrim, to examine those accused of bewitching the Duchess of Buckingham. In the 1640s he was active in Ireland, as cessor of composition money in 1643, agent to represent the protestant subjects to Charles in 1643-4, and, two years later, president of Connaught. He was a witness at Lord McGuire's trial in London in February 1645. An active soldier, he fought at Trim in June 1642, succeeding his father as provost-marshal of Connaught, and he fought in that province for the next two years, and with Cole\* in Sligo in October-November 1645. He played a part in the Ulster-Connaught campaign of

---

<sup>110</sup> A contemporary pamphlet mourned him: *"The glory of our battell is gone, everyone is beclouded; the most unhappie day ever befell the Protestants: and such joy to Papists ... whose name was their terror; for hee with 100 men could doe more against them than others with 1000 ... Who know not what he have lost in him, a Caesar for his valor, a Cato for honesty to his country, a father to us all; that fought not so much for plunder [but] for his countreys good, a man so well read in the nature and course of the Irish men and Countrey none like him left us, every day bemoaning him, and the enemy rejoicing; Never to much can bee said of of him, such wonders he hath done since these times, for under God he hath been the instrument of our delivery."* C.I., *A New Remonstrance of Ireland . or, A continued Diurnal of the most remarkable passages from the fifth of May to this Present.* (London, June 2nd., 1642). p. 2 The *D.N.B.*, and the Irish, gave rather different assessments, *T.C.D. MS. 813*, f. 248r.

<sup>111</sup> His brother Thomas represented Cavan Fermanagh and Monaghan in 1659.



1647, commanding the Lagan army with Robert Stewart\*, and being joined by Mervin.\* His troops captured Derry in 1649, but he was besieged there, and relieved by Owen Roe O'Neill. He joined Ireton in besieging Galway and came to terms with the Commonwealth, thus retaining his estates, and was active in the Connaught administration in the 1650s, and was described as "*beginning to enlist the cashiered malcontents in Ireland*"<sup>112</sup> in October 1653, acting as a commissioner for Irish affairs. He was a commissioner to collect the assessment for Ireland in Queen's County, Meath, Wexford, Kerry, Cavan, Londonderry, Roscommon, Mayo, Sligo, Leitrim and Galway in the last quarter of 1654 and Roscommon, Leitrim and Galway in the second half of 1657; he was named as an alderman in Londonderry's 1657 charter. Throughout the 1650s he was dealing on the Dublin Staple with Maule\*, Lucas Dillon\* and Gibson,\* and, with other Roscommon gentlemen he supported Martha Hatt's petition of 1656-8. Despite this public adherence to the Commonwealth, the 1653 articles of agreement between Philip IV of Spain and Charles II specified that the Duke of York should bring troops to Ireland, to link up with him in the royalist interest. This scheme came to nothing, but it indicates some doubt as to his loyalty to the regime. By June 1659 he was working for the restoration. The Census lists him as living in Werburg St., Dublin. He was reappointed provost marshal and president of Connaught, and made receiver general of composition money in Connaught and Thomond, governor of King's County, privy councillor and commissioner for the poll money ordnance in Leitrim, Roscommon and Galway.

FRANCIS (COSBIE, COSBY, CROSBIE) (1612-1661+), Carysfort  
2 s. Richard Cosby, Stradbally, Queen's County, and Elizabeth, da. Sir Richard Piggott (she rem. Barnaby Dunne (O Doyne), Brittas, Queen's County); m. Ann, da. Sir Thomas Loftus, Killian, Meath; 4s., 1 da.

The Cosbies came to Ireland from Lincolnshire by 1558, and were granted Stradbally in 1563; Captain Francis Cosby, "*an ancient and well advised captaine*" died at Glenmalure in 1580.<sup>113</sup> Francis's grandfather and namesake married Helen Harpole of Shrule. The family connections were with the

<sup>112</sup> *Cal. Clarendon*, II, p. 264.

<sup>113</sup> Magdalen College, Cambridge, *Pepys MS. 2064*, f. 100.



Harpoles\*, Loftuses\* and Piggotts\* - Dudley Loftus\* was Francis's half-uncle, and also provided a link with the Wares\*. As a younger son, he only inherited the Stradbally estates when his infant nephew, also Francis, son of his deceased older brother and Slingsby's\* daughter, died in 1638. His actions in the early part of the rebellion were open to question by his fellow protestants; his half-brother William Cosby or Kelly, was allowed the freedom of his house, despite being a captain of rebels, and he was said to have been able to pass unmolested through the rebel areas. He remained in Ireland in the 1650s, entering bonds before the Dublin staple in 1651 and 1654. He was living at Timahoe, Queen's County in 1660, and was a commissioner for the poll money ordnance there in 1661.

EDMOND COSSENS (CUSZENS), Coleraine

d. 1642+

Cossens was an alderman of Coleraine, where he lived. He signed the letter of the mayor of Coleraine and others to the lords justices on 14 January 1642, and was a captain of forces there that year, when he was reported to have paid his 100 men out of his own pocket. Very little is known of him, but he was presumably not related to the Old English Westmeath family of the same name. A John Cossens, servant to Sir Robert Loftus\* held lands at Clonish in 1636.

JOHN COUGHLAN (COGHLAN, MC COUGHLAN), (1615-1660) King's County  
e.s. Garrett Coughlan (d. 1629) and Honora, da. Richard Bourke, Lord Clanricarde and Frances Walsingham; she rem. (1633) 5th. Marquis Winchester; m. Mary or Constance \_\_\_\_\_; at least 1s.

John was the grandson and heir of Sir John McCoughlan of Delvin McCoughlan whose property in King's County (10,880 acres) he inherited in 1633. He lived at Kilcolgan and Caryscastle (Streamstown). Sir John was Sir Matthew de Renzy's great enemy and John is said to have owed Matthew\* money on the outbreak of the rebellion. He was a cousin of Thomas Bourke\* and Clanricarde and also linked to the Piggotts\*, Robert Cusack\* and Robert Dillon\*. He joined the rebellion by December 1641 and was a colonel of many companies of rebels.



He applied to the Supreme Council for a *custodiam* of Banagher fort “and some other pcells of land in that Countie, which (as he said) did formerly belong unto his ancestors,” and he supported Preston’s siege of Banagher with both military force and supplies.<sup>114</sup> By May 1643 he had taken over Arthur Blundell’s house at Lumcone and was living there with his wife and family. With his cousin, Terence, he opposed the 1646 peace.<sup>115</sup> He commanded a troop of horse in the Confederate Army in 1647. He appears to have left Ireland, probably with Col. John FitzPatrick c1652, and to have died abroad. Mary Coughlan of Kilcolgan petitioned against transplantation in September 1654, but their son John was still living on his property at Lusmagh, near Banagher, in 1660, and he may also have possessed lands in Boyle Barony, Roscommon by then. He should not be confused with other John Coughlans, such as John Coughlan of Wicklow, or of Horncastle, King’s County.<sup>116</sup>

PIERCE (PIERS, PETER) CREAGH, Limerick

16 s. Andrew Creagh, Limerick, and Ellen Fitzgerald, Gurtnatuber; m. 1) Bridget Rice; 2) Mary, da. O’Brien Arra; father of Bishop Pierce Creagh; d. 1667; bur. Ennis Abbey.<sup>117</sup>

Creagh was an alderman and a merchant and, despite being the youngest of 16 brothers, one of the wealthiest citizens of Limerick - his property in the city alone was worth £169, including his “great stone house”, valued at £110. He also held 143 acres at Adare, worth £80. He entered into a bond at the Limerick Staple in May 1640. He was sheriff of Limerick City in 1629 and mayor in 1634-5, when he built Corbally Bridge<sup>118</sup> and 1643 (when he was responsible for strengthening the city’s defence, and refused Castleconnell’s demand that he expel the English from the town) and 1647. His oldest brother married a niece of Dr. Thomas Arthur, the noted physician.<sup>119</sup> He supported the Confederation and the 1646 peace in the debates at Limerick; he adhered to that peace and that of

114 *T.C.D. MS. 814*, f. 101v.

115 De Burgh, *Hibernia Dominicana*, p. 879; Terence was m.p. for King’s County in 1634.

116 Coughlan of Wicklow, constable of Arklow Castle, October 1643, *T.C.D. MSS 810*, f. 34v, 811, f. 100r; John MacGarrett Coughlan of Horncastle, *T.C.D. MS. 814*, ff 83,88r.

117 His magnificent tomb is still well preserved *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, III, (1895-7). pp 34-5.

118 *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, IX, p. 116.

119 Thomas’s brother, Sir Nicholas Arthur, was a wealthy Limerick merchant, and m.p. for the city in 1613. McGrath, 1613. p. 78.



1648, his loyalty being certified by Ormond. He may have been a member of the 1644 General Assembly, and the 1648 Munster Provincial Council, and customer of Limerick from 1645.<sup>120</sup> He was examined in November 1652 and September 1653 about activities in the Limerick area during the rebellion, when he made a number of allegations against Lord Castleconnell and others, who he claimed had taken his 3,000 sheep and 300 cows and horses, and that he and Dominick White\* were proclaimed rebels by the Supreme Council for opposing Castleconnell and his forces in Limerick.<sup>121</sup> He was transplanted to 1,167 acres in Clonderlaw, Clare, and lived in France after 1654, when he was a member of the jury conducting the Civil Survey of Limerick. On the restoration, he was not restored to his own lands, but confirmed in those to which he had been transplanted.

#### GEORGE CROFTON, Askeaton

e.s. Edward Crofton and Elizabeth, da. Robert Mostyn, w. William Clifford, Tullycastle; m. -1623, Elizabeth, da. Sir Francis Berkeley, Askeaton, and Jane or Katherine, da. Archbishop Adam Loftus and Alice Purdon, 3s., 1 da.;  
d. 1644 - 1659.

John Crofton came to Ireland in 1565 and became escheator general in 1584. He married Jane, daughter of Henry Duke of Castle Jordan and their children established families in Roscommon, Sligo and Leitrim, intermarrying with the local Brabazon, Maypowder, Moore\* and Dillon\* families, as well as with the Usshers\*. Two of John's sons were m.p.s in 1634, and George was his grandson.<sup>122</sup> Most of his connections were with the families listed above, but there was also a link with Gifford\* and St. George\*; his own marriage provided connections with the Loftuses\*, Wenman\*, Slingsby\* and Blayney\*. He inherited over 2,000 acres at Ballymurray, Roscommon, from his father, and lived there at the Moate; he also held 81 acres in Mayo and extensive property in Sligo, where he was a j.p. in 1616 and 1624-5, and a commissioner to raise money

<sup>120</sup> Or this may have been his contemporary, Ald. Pierce Creagh FitzPeirce, mayor in 1628 and 1651, who was also transplanted to Clare; an ald. Peirce Creagh, patronymic unknown, was fined in the Court of Castle Chamber in 1615 for attacking Edmund Sexton's house. *H.M.C. Egmont*, I, p. 46.

<sup>121</sup> Creagh's examinations, *T.C.D. MSS 821*, ff 440r-2v,335r,353r; 829, f. 310v.

<sup>122</sup> John himself was m.p. for Sligo in 1585, Henry Crofton represented Leitrim in 1634, and William represented Donegal in 1613 and 1634. McGrath, 1613. p. 106.



for the army in 1627. In the following year he was a commissioner to select agents for Connaught to travel to England. Despite these strong Connaught connections, his return for Askeaton is explained by his property near the town and his father-in-law's influence. Mrs. Crofton is listed as holding 430 acres in Askeaton, worth £140.<sup>123</sup> He was described by Clanricarde in 1644 as one of the "*English of best quality and credit ... in Roscommon*".<sup>124</sup> It is unclear whether he was the George Crofton who was listed as a delinquent proprietor in Athlone Barony, Roscommon, in 1653.

DAVID CROSBIE, Ardfert

2 s. Archbishop John Crosbie, Ardfert, and Winifred Lalor; m. \_\_\_\_\_, (d. 1628)  
da. Bishop John Sterne, Ardfert; 2s., 3 da.;  
d. 1658.

M.P. Ardfert, 1634.

As the son of one bishop and son-in-law of his successor, David's return is unsurprising. He was well integrated into local society, holding lands (his income before 1641 was estimated at £800) and living at Ardfert, helping to restore the Abbey there in 1633-5, and with family connections with Roper\*, as well as with the local Hussey,<sup>125</sup> MacElligott and MacGillicuddy families. He was the nephew of Piers\*, from whom he purchased lands in the 1630s, and whose lands in Queen's County he was later to inherit; Piers's\* marriage connected him to the local New English, but catholic, Lord Castlehaven, and to Mervyn\*. Both he and his uncle Walter were godparents to Denny's\* children. He was a witness in a case in the Castle Chamber in 1636. On the outbreak of the rebellion, he was appointed governor of Kerry, and he raised a regiment in January 1642 under a commission from St. Leger\*; he later became governor of Kinsale, and remained governor of Kerry until after 1648. He held his castle of

---

<sup>123</sup> Berkeley was constable of Askeaton, and was m.p. for Limerick County in 1613 when the sheriff was another son-in-law, George Courtney. McGrath, 1613. p. 77, *Civil Survey, Limerick*, pp 306-7, 312. George's own property, Boyle\* to Cork, 19 August 1639. *N.L.I. MS. 13,237(24)*.

<sup>124</sup> Clanricarde states that Crofton and others "*do not lay so much blame upon [the Irish] ... but do acknowledge that the failing of settlement of quarters does much proceed from the high humours of some of their own garrisons (Sir Charles Coote's\* brothers ...) who, to keep up a power and greatness, ... do entertain a far greater number than either themselves or the country joined with them is able to maintain*". Clanricarde to Ormond, 28 February 1644, *Clanricarde Letter Book*, p. 49.

<sup>125</sup> The Husseys had provided a Kerry m.p. in 1613; they were of mixed religion. David was appointed attorney to collect his nephew Edward Hussey's debts. *An. Hib.*, XV, p. 95.



Ballyngarry through a siege of 14 months in 1645-6, and when it was taken he was imprisoned for a further 18 months, escaping and fleeing to Cork in June 1647. Inchiquin reappointed him to command Ballyngarry before December 1648. He followed Inchiquin throughout the 1640s, and was classed as a '49 Officer, although rumours suggested a lesser degree of loyalty. A number of depositions from 1643 alleged that he aided the enemy in Kerry, providing them with information and refuge, and, more specifically, that he dissuaded Lord Forbes from landing in Kerry to relieve local protestants.<sup>126</sup> He remained in Ireland, and was a commissioner for collecting the assessment for Ireland for the second half of 1657 in Kerry.

PIERS CROSBIE (CROSBY, COSBY) (1590-1646) Gowran

only s. Patrick Crosby and Catherine O'More; m. 1) after 1610, Sarah (d. 1618), da. Sir Patrick Barnwall, Turvey and Gracedieu, and (? Mary, da. Sir Nicholas Bagnal); 2) Elizabeth Noel, Lady Castlehaven; o.s.p.

Kt. 1616; Bart. 1630.

M.P. King's County 1634.

Crosbie was connected to many members of the commons, including his cousins David\* and Dempsey\*, the Barnwalls\* (he was Nicholas's\* brother-in-law), Trevors\*, and, through his second wife, to Roper\* and Mervin\*; through his cousin and agent, Walter Crosbie, he was linked to Valentine\* and John Browne\*. His career was unorthodox in almost every respect. The son of a conformist Gaelic chief, he became a court favourite in London, cup-bearer to James, with extensive and powerful connections at court; he received grants of land in Nova Scotia, Armagh and Tyrone, a baronetcy, and a place in the Irish privy council as a reward for his service as a soldier in Buckingham's wars, notably in the Ile de Rhe and La Rochelle campaigns.<sup>127</sup> On his return from the latter campaign, Charles promised that his regiments, based in England in 1628, would form part of the standing Irish army. He also fought under Gustavus Adolphus in Pomerania, and in France in the late 1630s. He held lands in King's County (the Crosbies' ancestral home) and in Kerry (which his father had acquired). His opposition to Wentworth in the 1634 parliament was

---

<sup>126</sup> *T.C.D. MSS 828*, ff 213v-214r, 220r-1r, 247r; 829, f. 71r.

<sup>127</sup> Esmond\* was one of his officers in those campaigns.



unprecedented in a privy councillor and won him Stafford's enmity. He was arrested and his chamber ransacked by Radcliffe\*; this incident violated parliamentary privilege and played a part in Wentworth's trial, for which he was a, presumably willing, witness. In 1639 he was sentenced in the Star Chamber in another case, and, being freed, raising troops in Munster and went to serve in France. On his return to Ireland two years later, he was returned to parliament, restored to the privy council, and given a commission in the army. In November Ormond commissioned him to raise a regiment to quell the rebellion and he fought at Julianstown. With Ormond and Temple, he formed a sub-committee of the privy council to confer with the Commons about the rebellion. He left Ireland for London, and then for France, where he formally changed his religion, and it was only on his return to Ireland in June 1643 that he became a supporter of the Confederation, and a member of the 1644 General Assembly; he was one of the chief gentlemen of King's County fit to be employed in the Confederate army two years later; he was paid £30 by the Confederation, and nominated as a possible marshal of Ireland. His political commitment was Ormondist, and, with Bellings\*, Lucas Dillon\* and Muskerry\* he was imprisoned in Kilkenny (where he died) by Rinuccini, for supporting the peace.

STEPHEN CROWE, (CROE, CROW), (1610-?1642), Lismore  
only s. William Crowe (d. 1627), Dublin, and Elizabeth, da. Sir. Stephen Lake,  
London; m. 1632, Mary Boyle.  
M.P. Lismore 1634.

Stephen's father was pronotary of the Commons Pleas, and m.p. for Bandonbridge in 1613.<sup>128</sup> He inherited William's lands in Dublin and Westmeath and had land deals with his uncle by marriage, Lord Cork (a farm in Castlelyons was bought for him in 1636) and often acted as his attorney; Cork's control of Lismore explains Crowe's return. His marriage connected him with the entire Boyle\* network and he was also Maule's\* brother-in-law. His grandmother Ann Waller of Suffolk may have connected him to Waller\*. He held lands in Dublin and Meath, and property worth £32 annually in Sligo. He borrowed money from Nicholas Whyte\* on the Dublin Staple in 1639. He lived at the Crow's Nest, Crowe St., Dublin, and it was in a well on that property that

---

128 McGrath, 1613. p. 73.



Michael Folliott, son of Lord Folliott, drowned in November 1638. He brought letters from Sir Piercie Smith to Perceval in March 1642; he held the relatively lowly rank of sergeant when he was shot by rebels near Castleknock the following November as he travelled from Trim to Dublin.

WALTER CRUSE (CRUICE, CREWCE).

e.s. Alexander Cruise and \_\_\_\_\_ Bellew, Westown; m. Elizabeth, da. Garrett Cruise, Brittas, and Margaret Plunkett; 4s.,  
d. 11 April 1663; bur. Cruisetown, Nobber.

Walter was elected in 1641, for an unidentified constituency.

The Cruises had extensive connections with other old English families of the Pale, especially the Cusacks\*, and Walter was James Cusack's\* servant in his capacity as clerk of defective titles. As a grandson of Christopher Cruise of Cruisetown and the Nall, he was related to many other members of the Commons, including Harpole\*, Nugent\*, Talbot\* and Cheevers\*; he was also related to the Bellews\* and the Plunketts\* of Bewley. He held nearly 100 acres at Athlonan, near Kells, where he was building a castle in 1641 and a further 548 acres near Ratoath with William Ussher\* and others. Dunsany appointed him one of the captains of the catholic forces for Kells and Fore baronies in November 1641 and in the following month he brought a contingent to assist the besiegers of Drogheda. He was a member of the 1642 Confederation and the 1644 and 1647 General Assemblies. He was a lieutenant colonel in the Westmeath regiment of the Leinster Army by 1646, commanding 300 troops at Ardlonan that December, and at Athboy in the following May. He was captured after the battle at Dungan's Hill, and imprisoned at Dublin; Owen Roe O'Neill tried to obtain his release in August 1648. He held lands worth £600 under the name of Robert Arthur of Dublin in 1660, and was evidently restored to his own property before his death.

ARTHUR CULME (CULLUM, COLLUM), Monaghan

e.s. Sir Hugh Culme (d. 1630), Loughoughter, Cavan, and Maria Emerson, Derbyshire; m. Marie da. Sir Faithful Fortescue\* and Anne, da. Sir Garrett



Moore, Lord Drogheda, and Anne, da. Sir Henry Colley and Anne Loftus; or  
Eleanor, da. Marmaduke Whitechurch;  
d. 1650.

Sir Hugh came to Ireland before 1606 and was appointed Saymaster by his cousin Lord Deputy Chichester; he was m.p. for Cavan in 1613<sup>129</sup> and his brother Benjamin was Dean of St. Patrick's Cathedral, Dublin. Culme was a cousin of the Chichesters\* and Fortescues\*; he married his cousin, who provided links with the Moores\*, Loftuses\*, Whyte\*, King\*, Edgeworth\* and Poyntz\*. He was also Bishop Henry Jones's brother-in-law. He held lands in Cavan and Monaghan, part of which he inherited from his father, but he also received £1,300 under the will of his uncle Philip Culme, a merchant settled in Dublin before 1601, who died in 1638. In 1636 he received a lease of lands in Monaghan from Bishop Spottswood. His relative wealth may be judged from a bond for £2,000 which he signed with a neighbour Thomas Burnett of Monaghan on the Dublin Staple in 1639. His deposition claimed losses of £1,690, including rents of £350.<sup>130</sup> In November 1641 he was imprisoned for 6 months with this wife and children and Bishop Bedell in his castle at Loughoughter by Mulmore McEdmond Rely, sheriff of Cavan.<sup>131</sup> He was a captain in the army in the following year; he held the same rank when he joined Col. Laurence Crawford's regiment in 1643. He signed the petition of Charles's protestant subjects the next year and his wife signed the petition of distressed gentlewomen, addressed to the English Commons. By 1644 he was living in Bride Street, Dublin but was still active in the army, with the ranks of Lieut. colonel in 1645 and major in the following year. In August 1647 he brought a letter from Sir James Montgomery\* to Perceval. He adhered to Cromwell on his arrival in Ireland and held the rank of colonel in his army. He died at the siege of Clonmel.

ADAM CUSACK (1597+-1644)

[Fore]

e.s. Richard Cusack, Lismullen, and Ismay Weasley (Wellesley); m. \_\_\_\_\_, da.  
Andrew Nugent, Donore;  
? ed. Trinity College Dublin, Scholar, 1616;

129 although his return was disputed and he was unseated. McGrath, 1613. p. 101.

130 Arthur Culme's deposition, 9 May 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 832*, ff 115r-118r.

131 With whom he had clearly formerly been on good terms, *ibid.*



M.P. Kells 1634

The Cusacks were one of the the most important old English families in Meath and Adam was connected to the Dillons\*, Forth\* and Cruise\*, and was James Cusack's\* nephew. His wife provided a link to Hollywood\* and the Nugents\* who controlled Fore. He held lands in Meath, including some at Kells and more property at Balrothery, Dublin, and had land dealings with Thomas Moore\*, Forth\* and William Ussher\*, including some transactions in King's County. The family estates at Lismullan were sold in 1624 but he also held over 1,000 acres in Clare, which came to the family through a marriage in the previous century. A lawyer, he was very active in the house, and was described as "*one of our great speakers in Our Parliament*".<sup>132</sup> He was prominent in the meetings with Lord Fingal at Tara and Killsalaghan in December 1641 and was indicted for rebellion, forfeiting his lands and his seat. He signed the letter of the Catholics to Ormond in July 1642 and became a member of the Confederation, serving as a member of the first Leinster Provincial Council and of the committee to draw up a scheme of civil government in Ireland. He died at the battle of Roconnell.

JAMES CUSACK, (d. ? 1659) Ballyshannon / Old Leighlin  
3rd. but 2 s.s. Edward Cusack, Lismullen, and Elizabeth Aylmer, Lyons; m. Frances (d. 1689), da. Sir William Talbot, Carton, and Allison Netterville; she rem. Sir Thomas Newcomen;  
ed. Middle Temple, 1619;  
M.P. Old Leighlin 1634

James's position, as a catholic holding crown office (clerk of defective titles from 1628), was unusual. He apparently owed his position to his experience and contacts made while working for the Privy Council committee for Irish Affairs in London; he was recommended to Endymion Porter in 1633. His influence in the sensitive post (in which he was assisted by Cruise\*) decreased after Perceval was made joint clerk in 1636. His position as clerk was, in any case,

---

<sup>132</sup> J.D., *Special neues from Ireland, newly received in a letter from a gentleman of good worth in Dublin to a friend in London ...* (London, 1st. March, 1643). pp 3-4; this statement is not supported by the records of the 1640 parliament, although, as its account of speeches is distinctly sketchy, this may not be significant. On the other hand, he was a very active member of the 1634 Commons, sitting on many committees, especially those considering bills, which suggests a legal training.



not always easy: in March 1641 Sambach\* and the attorney general, Sir Thomas Tempest, were attempting to restrict the scope of his work. He had extensive parliamentary connections: he was the brother-in-law of Talbot\* and Dongan\*, cousin of Lord Netterville\*, Cruise\* and the Cusacks\* and uncle of Adam Cusack\* and Forth\*. In February 1642, it was reported that he and Nicholas Darcy of Plattin "*were to be sent into ... Westmeath, to make enquiry what persons within the said county of Westmeath would not joyne in giving assistance unto the Lords and gentlemen now in rebellion, to the end thereupon some severe course might be taken with such as refuse.*"<sup>133</sup> He signed the letter of 31 July 1642 to Ormond. He actively supported the Confederation, serving as a member of the 1642, 1644 and 1646-7 General Assemblies and a Leinster representative on the 1642-3 Supreme Council; he encouraged Clanricarde to support its work. James was a member of the Committee of the 1648 General Assembly which dealt with points of religion raised during the negotiations on the second Ormond peace. His administrative experience was very valuable to the Confederation, and he was its attorney general and judge of the Admiralty Court. He was proposed to Ormond as a possible chancellor of the exchequer or attorney during the negotiations for the first peace, and was retained by Rinuccini as Commissioner of Public Revenue. He supported the truce with Inchiquin. He clearly suffered considerable financial hardship for his adherence to the Confederation - he was granted £24 by the Confederation in December 1646 and Ormond gave him money in 1649. He was excluded from pardon under Cromwell's 1652 Ordinance but apparently survived in Ireland until 1659.

ROBERT CUSACK (1604-1673), Kells

e.s. John Cusack, Rathgar and Ballinamolchan, and Margaret Allen; m. Alicia, da. Sir George Sexton and Anne, da. Sir John Fish, Cavan; also m. (-1626) \_\_\_\_\_, da. John Eustace, Harristown;  
ed. ? Lincoln's Inns, 1617.

Robert's connections were extensive, both within the Commons and with the Pale gentry. He was brother-in-law of Maurice Eustace\*, Dixon\* and Christopher Dowdall and his sister Jane married Garrett, eldest son of Nicholas Fleming of Slane. His father was a conformist alderman and mayor of Dublin,

<sup>133</sup> \_\_\_\_\_, *A Relation touching the present state and condition of Ireland ...* (London, 1641-2). p. 8.



and m.p. for Boyle in 1613,<sup>134</sup> but his wife was of mixed old English and new English race. He had many catholic relatives, including the Jesuit Henry Cusack. He inherited his father's property in Dublin, Meath and Kildare and held some property with Nangle\*. He was listed as a rebel in February 1642 and expelled from the Commons. Despite this, he was described as a protestant<sup>135</sup> and appears to have been a commissioner of the poll money ordnance in Dublin in 1660-1 and was included in the decrees of innocents.

PATRICK DARCY (1598-1668)

[Tyrone]

7 s., Sir James Darcy (Rivagh) and his second wife, Elizabeth (she rem. Sir Henry Lynch), da. Richard Martin, Galway; m. Mary, da. Sir Peter French, w. of Peter Blake; 2 s., 1 da.

ed. Middle Temple, 1617; King's Inns, 1628.

M.P. Navan 1634

bur. Kilconnell Abbey.

Darcy's family connections were with other Galway families; he was the brother-in-law of both Richard Martin\* and of his step-brother Robuck Lynch\*, through whom he was linked also to the Blakes\*. He was one of the most able and respected lawyers of his generation, with a wide and lucrative practice. He was a close associate of Clanricarde,<sup>136</sup> but was also retained by Boyle as a counsel and worked for Antrim and Ormond (both in the latter's dispute with Sir Thomas Butler\*, a case on which he was active from 1622 to at least 1637, and on many other issues, such as the prize wines<sup>137</sup>); he also rented lands from Ormond for £200 annually. His standing is attested by his role in parliament and by his later position as lord Chancellor of the Confederation. With Sir Roger O'Shaughnessy<sup>138</sup> and Martin,\* he was one of the most prominent opponents of the proposed plantation of Connaught, and in the resistance of the Galway freeholders, for which he and Martin\* were disbarred. Among their influential

---

134 His father-in-law, Sexton, and grandfather-in-law Fish were also elected to the 1613 Commons, although Sexton was unseated. McGrath, 1613. pp 93, 100-1.

135 His son Adam was admitted to Lincoln's Inns in 1655, when Robert was described as of Rathgar, *Armiger*.

136 His step-father was Clanricarde's principal man of business.

137 Darcy to Ormond, 20 August 1636, and 30 May 1637 concerning Sir Thomas Butler, *N.L.I. MS. 2305*, pp 109,235; same to same about prize wines, 1639, *N.L.I. MS. 2306*, p. 275.

138 A prominent Galway landowner, and m.p. for Galway County in 1634.



supporters was Antrim, who repeatedly pressed for their readmission to legal practice, which occurred in 1637.<sup>139</sup> His activities in 1635 were not confined to opposing the Galway plantation - he also submitted proposals on the operation of the Irish customs to Charles. Apart from his lucrative legal practice, he had extensive property: he held nearly 2,000 acres in Galway, where he lived at Kiltulla, and other lands in Mayo and Sligo. He was one of the leaders of the recusant faction in the 1634 parliament, sitting on a remarkable number and range of committees, and, with Martin\*, acted as advisor to the catholic members of the 1640 commons before their own returns. His *Argument*, asserting that the Irish people were free, and to be governed only by the common law and statutes passed by the Irish parliament, was not merely the clearest expression of the views of the united opposition to Strafford within the Irish parliament, but also became a key document in the subsequent parliamentary and nationalist arguments for Irish legislative independence, used in the 1659 Convention, and later by Molyneux and others. On the outbreak of the rebellion, he and Geoffrey Browne\* attempted to persuade the administration to recall the prorogued parliament and to rely on the loyalty of the old English to suppress the rebellion; St. Leger\* anticipated his discomfiture on the reassembling of Parliament.<sup>140</sup> The government's reluctance to trust catholic loyalty forced him and others into a gradual alliance with their co-religionists and "*Patrick Darcy and Richard Martyn lawyers were the men that first moved the Towne of Galway to Rebellion, both by their letters from Dublin and their insitatio when they came to Galway.*"<sup>141</sup> By March 1642 he and Martin\* were involved in the government of Galway through the city's emergency executive, the Council of Eight, and, according to an account in an English pamphlet: "*An English Ship is put in at Galway laden with salt, so the Townesmen went out to buy it, but in conclusion took the Ship with 8 peeces of Ordnance, and 6 Barrels of Powder, Mr. Darcy and Mr. Martin Lawyers were the greatest actors in this treason.*"<sup>142</sup> With the Blakes\*

<sup>139</sup> Being disbarred did not prevent Darcy acting as a lawyer; he continued to advise Ormond on his dispute with Thomas Butler\*, even while imprisoned in Dublin Castle, in August 1636, Darcy to Ormond, 20 August 1636, *N.L.I. MS. 2305*, p. 109; Boyle\* reported that "*on Thursday next [Darcy] is to be ... admitted to plead openly.*" Boyle\* to Cork, 3 June 1639. *N.L.I. MS. 13,237 (23)*.

<sup>140</sup> St. Leger\* to Percival, 1 November 1641, *B.L. MS. Add. 46925*, f. 165v, quoted in St. Leger's\* profile.

<sup>141</sup> Deposition of Rev. William Hanmer, Galway, 14 August 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 830*, f. 134v; further allegations, f. 142v.

<sup>142</sup> \_\_\_\_\_, *The Last Joyfull Newes from Ireland, being the copies of two severall letters ...* (London, 1642). p. A2; another pamphlet states that weapons were hidden in the salt. \_\_\_\_\_, *A Treacherous plot*. (London, 1641).



and Martin\*, he was one of the leaders of Galway through the 1640s; he was also one of the resident Connaught members of the Supreme Council. He later claimed that he had not been a member of any council of war or other assembly before Kilkenny, and that he had moved to live under Clanricarde's protection at Easter 1642.<sup>143</sup> He was one of the most important actors in the Confederation, both as chancellor and as a member of every Supreme Council except the 7th. and 9th.; with Nicholas Plunkett\*, he devised the Confederation's system of government. He signed the 1645 articles of agreement with Glamorgan. In the following year, he and Plunkett\* were agents from the Supreme Council to try to persuade the Catholic Bishops to support the Ormond peace. He followed a consistent line within the Confederation, sometimes supporting and sometimes opposing Rinuccini. His family connections were also prominent in the Confederation and their close personal and working relations must have contributed to its effectiveness. He was appointed a judge by the 1650-1 Loughrea Assembly. He was still described as "of Galway" in a bond on the Dublin Staple in October 1654, but a decree for his transplantation to 66 acres in Omev, Galway, was issued two years later. The amount of land assigned to him seems very small, but another Darcy of Kiltulla received considerably more. With Richard Blake\* and others, he presented a petition from the former inhabitants of Galway and Limerick to the privy council, requesting that they be allowed to settle in their cities (1661) and his assignees were paid £100 by the administration in December of that year. He was described as "*tall corpulent & high complexioned*".<sup>144</sup> He was not connected with the Meath family of Darcy of Platin, and his return for Navan is difficult to explain. He was unusual in being a catholic member of the 1634 parliament without an obvious local connection.

JOHN DAVIES, Carrickfergus

e.s. Ezekiel Davies, Carrickfergus; m. Judith \_\_\_\_\_; 3 s.;

d. 1667.

M.P. Belfast and Carrickfergus, 1656.

John's family originated in Gustana, North Wales but settled in Carrickfergus in the early 16th century. He was a merchant who was heavily

143 Examination of Darcy, December 1653, *T.C.D. MS. 830*, f. 263r-v.

144 *T.C.D. MS. 830*, f. 226v.



involved in local affairs, becoming an alderman in 1630, sheriff in 1633 and mayor in 1640-1 and 1659. His commercial experience and contacts were invaluable to the administration in the 1640s, when he was responsible for supplying provisions to the army. He was also the contractor who agreed to deliver provisions to the Committees for Irish Affairs and Adventurers. His performance did not give general satisfaction; there were many allegations of profiteering and the quality of his supplies was suspect - nor did he have an unblemished reputation for honesty among his townsmen (there were objections to his return as m.p.).<sup>145</sup> He was, however, paid £40 in 1645 as a reward for delivering £10,000 to the Commissioners of the Scots army at Carrickfergus. He appears to have been a member of the Committee for Irish Affairs. He was in Barnstaple with the Prince of Wales and Fanshaw\* in June 1645 and in Westminster in July 1648 and January 1651, when he was described as "*the merchant of Ireland who was Sir John Clotworthy's Greate minister.*"<sup>146</sup> On that occasion, he was stabbed and nearly killed by Lord Folliott and his associates. Perhaps because of this incident, he remained in Carrickfergus throughout the 1650s, buying a large house there from Clotworthy in 1656, the year in which he was again returned as an m.p., although, as a royalist, he was not permitted to take his seat. He was added to the list of commissioners for raising the assessment for Ireland in Antrim in March 1659. He was living with his sons in Carrickfergus in 1660 and was a commissioner for the Poll Money Ordinance in Antrim in 1660-1. He attended Charles II at Breda in 1660, and was m.p. for Antrim County from 1661; he was absent from Ireland in March 1664, so perhaps it was a continued absence which led Rawdon\* to note the need to choose new knights to replace him and Massereene as m.p.s in October 1665. He had obtained part of Antrim's estates in Glenarm which he was holding in trust for Major Smith in 1663. His will, drawn up in January 1664, was proved in April 1668. He was presumably not the John Davies who was under clerk, with an annual salary of £50, in 1654.

PAUL DAVIES (DAVYS) (16\_\_-1672), Donegal County

4 but 2 s.s. John Davies, Kill, Kildare; m. 1) Margaret (d. 1633), da. Arthur Ussher, Dublin, and Judith, da. Sir Robert Newcomen; 2) (-1644), Anne, da. Sir William

<sup>145</sup> Petition of R. Lyndon to the House of Commons, *C.J. (I.)*, 23 March 1640.

<sup>146</sup> *H.M.C. de L'Isle and Dudley*, VI, p. 487.



Parsons\* and Katherine, da. Ald. John Lany, Dublin, and Katherine Bostock; 3) Mary, da. William Crofton, Temple House, Sligo, and Mary, da. Sir William Ussher, Dublin, and Isabella, da. Archbishop Adam Loftus, w. Sylvester Kennedy; Kt. 1636;

M.P. Enniskillen 1634;<sup>147</sup> Convention, Kildare County; Kildare, 1661

Davies lived in St. Catherine's, Dublin (where he was an alderman and commissioner to collect parliamentary subsidies in 1637), and he also held his father's lands at Kill;<sup>148</sup> he had also received grants of over 2,000 acres in Raphoe Barony, Donegal. Other members of the family held lands in the Lifford Precinct, purchased from the original patentee, Thomas Corwall. He held a number of crown offices, including clerk of the privy council (1623-42), chief chamberlain of the exchequer (1625), and registrar of the Court of Wards (1626). He was a witness in Mountnorris's case against Wentworth and was a commissioner to examine witnesses in a case between Cork and the attorney general in 1635; he was also embroiled in the Loftus\*/Gifford\* case. His first marriage made him Meredith's\* nephew, and connected him to other new English settler families, including the Usshers\*, Phillips\* and Newcomens, and he became brother-in-law of Richard Osbourne\* and Sir Philip Percival. His links with the Parsons\*, begun with his work in the Court of Wards, were reinforced by his second marriage which connected him to Hoey\* and the Boyle\* network (Cork bequeathed him a silver dish). His last marriage provided a link with Crofton\* and also with Donegal, as his father-in-law was a former m.p. there. His childrens' marriages, to members of the Blundell\* and Bramhall families, maintained his links with the new English community. He may have had other connections with the more recently arrived members of the administration: John Davys, possibly his father, was Christopher Wandesford's\* steward at Castlecomer; he claimed losses in Kildare, Kilkenny and Fermanagh on behalf of Wandesford's\* heirs and himself.<sup>149</sup> As an agent of the Irish administration, he asked for the English parliament's help after the 1646 peace and, with Willoughby and Lowther, petitioned the Committee for Ireland for relief in February 1647; in the same year he was granted lands in Carlow and Dublin. He was active with the committee on Irish

---

147 The Davies family was established in Enniskillen and an Edward Davies gave a chalice to Enniskillen Church in 1638. Paul's father also held property in Fermanagh.

148 The family property in Kildare was 718 acres, valued at £170. As a younger son, Paul's inheritance of this property is surprising.

149 John Davys's deposition on behalf of Wandesford\*, 2 April 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 812*, ff 195-6.



Affairs in London in 1648-9. With Meredith\*, King\*, James Barry and others, he was a commissioner of parliament, committed to raising £50,000 for Ireland; in 1650 he was assigned £500 for his services and a further £50 in 1654. He remained in Ireland during the 1650s, guaranteeing bonds for cousins on the Dublin Staple in 1653 and 1654, acting as a commissioner to raise the assessment for Ireland for the final quarter of 1654 for Kildare County, and a member of the Committee on Trinity College in 1658-9, with Maurice Eustace\* and James Ware\*. He was commissioner for the Poll Money Ordnance in Dublin City and County (where he lived in Hangman's Lane), and Kildare and Donegal, in 1660-1. He received a monthly salary of £50 as clerk of the council after the restoration and was made a privy councillor by 1663; he was still an active member of the administration in 1666, when his salary was £200, with extra allowances of £40 and £100 for paper and intelligence respectively, although he was then still owed £3,255 by the state. In the same year he was a commissioner for prizes in Ireland and for assessing rent on adventurers' lands; he also received a general pardon.

THOMAS DAVILLS (DAVELS), (1603-1656+) Old Leighlin

3 but e.s.s. Henry Davills, and Eleanor Butler (she rem. Patrick Barnwall); m. after 1624, ? Elinor, da. Edward Butler, 1st. Lord Galmoy and Anne, da. Edmond Butler, 2nd. Lord Mountgarrett and Grania Fitzpatrick, da. 1st. Lord Upper Ossory;

ed. Trinity College, Dublin, 1613;

Davills was of mixed old and new English blood, despite being St. Leger's\* nephew and ward, and his presumed education at Trinity College, he was a catholic. Henry, the first Davills to come to Ireland (from Devon), was granted lands in Carlow and Queen's County in the 1560s, served as sheriff of Carlow in 1568 and 1573 and was killed by Sir John of Desmond in 1579. His wife Elizabeth Rothe of Kilkenny remarried the settler Humphrey Mackworth, and, after his death in 1582, Sir Warham St. Leger. Henry jr., Thomas's father, was sheriff of Carlow in 1599. Thomas's elder brother Pierse was presumably frail, as both boys were made wards of their relatives William\* and Anthony St. Leger "in case Pierse should die before he come to age"; he died in 1624, and Thomas inherited his lands, just 6 months short of his majority, although he only took



livery in 1629.<sup>150</sup> The property was mainly around Killeshin and Ballihyde, Queen's County, and his castle at Ballinknockan in that county, and in Carlow. His marriage linked him to the Butlers and Fitzpatricks in the Upper House, and to Pierce Butler\*, Walter Walsh\* and Bellings\* in the Commons. He took out bonds with Carpenter\* on the Waterford and Dublin Staples in 1639 and 1640. In the latter year, a warrant was issued for his arrest on the complaint of John Walsh, in a case between his Carlow neighbour Walter Bagnal and Ambrose Plunkett. He was active early in the rebellion, carrying away corn from Carlow in late 1641 and acting as captain of rebels there early in the following year, although Walter Bagnal blamed him for the failure to take Carlow bridge around that time. His lands at Killeshin were declared forfeit for his role in the rebellion and a *custodiam* was granted to Thomas Grimes, Arthur Loftus's\* lieutenant in 1642. He fought against Ormond at Kilrush in 1642, and formed part of Castlehaven's troops around the same time. He was alleged to have had complicity, with Harpole\*, in the murder of Captain Walter Chambre in 1643 and to have been active as a rebel also in Kildare. He was transplanted to 1,000 acres in 1656.

BARNABAS (BRIAN) DEMPSIE (O'DEMPSIE), Ballinakill  
 yr. s. Terence O'Dempsie, 1st. Viscount Clanmalier (d. 1637), and 1) Mary Fitzgerald, Lackagh (d. 1614); OR 2) Genet, da. Patrick Finglas, Waspelltown, Dublin, w. Sir William Warren and John Bath, Drumcondra (d. 1617); 3) Margaret, w. John Itchingham, Dunbrody, Wexford; at least 2 s.  
 d. 1649+

Dempsie was a member of one of the most prominent local gaelic families, headed by Lord Clanmalier (a pamphlet of 1641 alleged that he was the "*base son to the Earle of Claumelero (sic), that he had by his own daughter.*"<sup>151</sup>) Despite his gaelic origins, he had many connections with the old English and new English communities, especially the Loftus\*, Moore\* and de Renzy\* families. He was involved in trading timber with Philip Percival, and in November 1641 arranged for Darcy\* to arbitrate in case of a disagreement between the parties. He lived at Knockardegur, near Ballinakill, on lands bought

<sup>150</sup> Before the Graces, landowners suing their livery of seizin were obliged to take the oath of supremacy. H. O'Sullivan, *Land ownership changes in the county of Louth in the seventeenth century*. (Ph.D. thesis, University of Dublin, 1992). I, p. 79.

<sup>151</sup> J. Salmon, *Bloudy newes from Ireland ...* (London, December 1641).



from Thomas Ridgeway, Lord Londonderry; he was a j.p. by 1641. Indicted for rebellion, he was one of the chief rebels in Queen's County and active also in Kilkenny, Carlow and King's Counties. He was accused of stealing from and murdering English protestants, "*especially of all those that carried any messages betwixt protest. and protest*".<sup>152</sup> He supported the Confederation, being a member of the Leinster Provincial Council in 1642 and holding the rank of captain in its forces by 1642, commanding 100 foot in King's County, as part of Sir James Dillon's\* regiment. In November of that year, he brought a letter from Preston to Owen Roe O'Neill; in May 1643 he appealed to the Confederation for money to maintain his troop, and held the rank of colonel at the siege of Ballinakill in that year. He was a member of the 1646-7 General Assembly and in the latter year fought at Castlecomer and Ballinakill. Observers were unequivocal in their views of his importance: one of his own troops claimed that he "*saw no commander in that Country abover Barbaby Dempsy*"<sup>153</sup> and Wemys\* claimed that "*when Sir Charles Coot\* releevd Ballynakill Maior Barnaby Dempsy was then the cheife man in the countie & ... Ormond had recvd. a bad Character of the said Dempsy that hee was much an enemy to the English and had don much mischief to them & therefore commanded [Wemys\*] to destroy him as much as he could.*"<sup>154</sup> He was the subject of a petition to Ormond in April 1649.

WALTER DENNIS, Inistiogue  
d. 1642+

Dennis was indicted for rebellion and expelled from parliament. There is no other information about him; nor was he active in Parliament.

EDWARD DENNY (1605-1646), Kerry County  
e.s. Sir Arthur Denny (d. 1619) and Elizabeth, da. Miles Forrest, Huntingdonshire (she rem. Sir Thomas Harris, 1639); m. 1625 at Roper's Rest, Dublin, Ruth Roper, da. Lord Baltinglass, and Anne, da. Sir Henry Harrington; 6s., 4 da;

152 Deposition of Ann Bingham, 15 May 1643, *T.C.D. MS. 815*, f. 305r.

153 *ibid.*

154 *T.C.D. MS. 815*, f. 383r.



Kt. 1626.

Denny's grandfather and namesake settled in Kerry by 1581, being granted 6,000 acres at an annual crown rent of £100; Edward inherited this property from his father while still a minor and his wardship was granted to Robert Loftus\* in 1622. The Dennys retained links with the English branch of the family and he was baptised in Bishop Stortford, Hertfordshire. In 1639 his estates were created a manor. They were influential in Kerry and were connected with other local new English families, including the Blenerhassetts and Conways. He was Roper's\* brother-in-law. His step-father (m.p. in 1634), linked him to the Brownes\*. The list of his children's godparents illustrates these local links, as it includes David\* and Walter Crosbie, Robert Blenerhassett and his wife, both St. Legers\*, Stoughton\*, Valentine Browne's\* father, and, a less local connection, Charles Coote.\*<sup>155</sup> He was involved in local administration, as a member of the 1624-5 Kerry commission for the peace, commissioner to raise money for the army there in 1627 and sheriff in 1633-4, when he returned his prospective step-father as m.p. - a "partial" return that divided the local gentry and was overturned on appeal. He expressed the disquiet felt generally in Ireland at Wentworth's appointment, when he wrote "*Ye lord Viscount Wentwort arrived in Irland to govern ye Kingdom as Deputy. Many men feare*".<sup>156</sup> In 1639 he had a dispute in the Court of Wards with Percival and wrote to demand the reason for his ill-will. He lived near Tralee and was constable of Castlemaine in 1641, an appointment which may suggest some military experience. His castle became a place of refuge for local protestants on the outbreak of the rebellion and he organised much of the local resistance to the rebels in Kerry, although summoned by St. Leger\* to Cork in December 1641, sending his wife to England, and leaving Thomas Harris in charge of his castle. Two months later he was fighting at Lemster under Ormond and in May he was sent with a force to relieve Tralee Castle, then being pillaged by Donnell McCarthy. Later in 1642 he was chosen by Philip Wharton to be one of his officers, (a lieut. colonel). In the following February he commanded 400 troops in action near Dublin. His widow, who was living in Holborn, was granted £4 per week by the parliament in 1647, and other money in 1651, the year in which his will was proved in Canterbury.

---

<sup>155</sup> Walter Crosbie, m.p. for Maryborough in 1634, had strong Kerry links, as David's\* brother and Piers's\* cousin; Blenerhassett was m.p. for Tralee in 1613. McGrath, 1613. p. 77.

<sup>156</sup> Entry in Denny's diary, 23 July 1633, *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, VII, p. 371.



MATTHEW DE RENZY (DE RENZI, DE RINZI), (1610-13-1650-2) ?<sup>157</sup>

2 s. Sir Matthew de Renzy (1577-1634) and Anne (alive 1646), da. Richard Maypowder, Killinaboy; m. -1633, Mary, da. Sir John Moore, Croughan, King's County, and Dorothy, da. Archbishop Adam Loftus, Dublin, and Alice Purdon; ed. Inner Temple, 1628.

De Renzy's German father settled in Ireland in 1606, acquiring lands in King's County and living at Clanona (Moostowne or Castlederenz); his mother came from an English family settled in the Irish midlands in the previous century. Sir Mathew was an energetic planter with a deep suspicion of his neighbours, the Coughlans\*, who wrote to Falkland to request the post of clerk of the council for himself and his (unnamed) son in January 1630; the request was apparently unsuccessful.<sup>158</sup> His marriage connected him to the extensive Loftus\* and Moore\* networks (he was Thomas Moore's\* brother-in-law), and to Forth\* and Digby\*. He was also linked to Crofton\*, a member of whose family married Susan Maypowder. He held lands in King's County, Meath, Monaghan, Kilkenny and Wexford; his depositions variously claimed losses of £1,892 from lands and debts, some due from Coughlan\*, £2,000 in mortgages, £1,000 in property, and £300 in profits from leases.<sup>159</sup> His sale of property to Arthur Blundell led to a dispute with Nicholas Loftus\* which resulted in petitions to the House of Lords in 1647. He was in London in April 1642 and Chester in August 1650, and his will, drawn up in that month, just before his return to Ireland, gives some indication of his estate in Ireland, which he bequeathed to the pregnant Anne Trelawney als. Middleton of Chester, for life, with remainder to her child if it was a son, and named Maurice Eustace\* and Thomas Piggott\* as two of his trustees.

SIMON DIGBY (1615-1645), Philipstown

5 s. Sir Robert Digby, Geashill, and Lettice Fitzgerald, Lady Offaly, da. Earl of Kildare; m. \_\_\_\_\_ by May 1641;

---

<sup>157</sup> Matthew was elected by 7 July 1641, for an unidentified constituency

<sup>158</sup> Sir Mathew de Renzy to Falkland, 29 January 1630, *B.L. Sl. 3827*, f. 170v. Sir Matthew is buried in St. Mary's Church, Athlone, where a large memorial was erected to him by Matthew jr.

<sup>159</sup> Depositions of Matthew de Renzy, 4 February 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 809*, f. 274, and undated, *T.C.D. MS. 810*, f. 95v.



ed. Middle Temple, 1631; Cambridge;

As the younger child of the prominent local new English family (his father was m.p. for Athy in 1613), Digby was a natural choice for Philipstown, but he also had a connection with the garrison town, having been appointed governor jointly with his brother, Baron Geashill, in 1627. His family connections were extensive: as a cousin of the Earl of Kildare he was linked to the Boyle\* network (he carried a banner at Lady Cork's funeral in 1630), and his brothers married connections of Gilbert\*, Lord Cork, Forth\*, de Renzy\*, the Cusacks\* and Moores\*, and his sister married Langford\*. His brother, Essex, became Bishop of Dromore in 1671. He also had important English connections, including his cousin, George Digby, Earl of Bristol, a prominent member of the English opposition in the early 1640s. This last connection was presumably significant in his selection as an agent for the Irish commons to England in November 1640. His intestacy was entered in Dublin in 1653, when his address was given as Croughan, King's County.

The Dillons were one of the most important old English families, with extensive land interests from Meath to Roscommon, and a strong history of loyalty to the crown and of service within the administration. Most of the family remained catholic, and this is reflected in the religious composition of the m.p.s in 1634 and 1640, but Robert\* and his son James\* were protestant. Robert's\* brothers and sisters remained catholic, and he advised his brother Lucas (m.p. for Cavan in 1634) to join the rebels of the Pale to protect their father's estates.<sup>160</sup>

GEOFFREY DILLON, Roscommon County

Geoffrey replaced Henry\* Dillon as m.p. after his unseating in March 1640 but there is no information available which would identify him. While it is improbable that a county member from an important local family would be so difficult to identify and it is therefore likely that the replacement was not called Geoffrey Dillon, we have no alternative m.p. for this seat.

<sup>160</sup> Deposition of Ambrose Bedell, *T.C.D. MS. 832*, f. 121v.



HENRY DILLON, Roscommon County

e.s. Henry Dillon (d. 1609-10), Kentstown, Meath, and Strokestown, Roscommon, and Elizabeth, da. Lord Culpepper; m. Jane Sarsfield, Sarsfieldstown; 2 s. 2 da.;

Henry's election was disputed and he was unseated, with his consent, in March 1640, after his case had been considered by the committee of privileges, on the petition of Lucas Dillon \* and King\*. His father was a younger son of Lucas Dillon of Moymet, Meath, and thus a cousin of Robert\* and James\* Dillon. He had close connections with the rest of the Dillons\* in the House and took part in the funeral procession of Lucas, Lord Costello-Gallen, in Athlone in 1629, when he was described as being of "Dromane". He also had close connections with other prominent old English families, including the Lough Crew Plunketts, and, through his Dillon\* cousins, with the Bellews\*, Barnwalls\*, Nugents\*, Burnell\* and Hussey\*. His wife provided a link to Sarsfield\*. He held over 3,500 acres in Roscommon (where he lived at Clonribrikan), and other property at Clonrully, Westmeath, and in Mayo. He was accused of publishing many scandalous speeches at Athlone, against a peer of the state in May 1641 (possibly Ranelagh, with whom he was then in dispute). He signed the petition to Ormond in July 1642. In November 1649 he petitioned Ormond in a dispute with a Laurence Hammond. If he was also of Ballitloghdoffe (Ballichogdoffe), he was appointed collector in Kilkenny Barony, Westmeath, for the Confederation, in 1642 and was being held in Athlone prison, accused of murder, in March 1652; consideration of his petition against transplantation was deferred to September 1654. He may have been living at Doonemoney and Ballysallagh, Westmeath, in 1660. His brother Thomas (Theobald) was transplanted. His son, also Henry, settled in King's County and Tipperary, as agent to Lord Carey Dillon. He should not be confused with his cousin and namesake, son of Robert\*, who died in April 1640. Another Henry Dillon, clearly a protestant, was a prisoner of Con O'Rourke in 1641-2.<sup>161</sup>

JAMES DILLON, (1583+-1669+), Westmeath County

6 or 8 s. Theobald Dillon, 1st. Viscount Dillon, and Eleanor, da. Sir Edward Tuite; m. 1) Elizabeth, (d. before 1638), da. Thomas Plunkett, Rathmore, 2 s.; 2) after

<sup>161</sup> Examination of Henry Dillon, (undated), *T.C.D. MS. 817*, ff 172r-173r.



1644, Mary (o.s.p. c1664), illeg. da. Sir Roger Jones, Sligo, w. Major John Ridge, Roscommon Abbey;

Kt. 1626;

M.P. Westmeath 1634

James signed the 1605 petition seeking religious freedom in Ireland, for which he was imprisoned. His connections in both houses of parliament were extensive: the brother of Lord Dillon (who married Nicholas Whyte's\* sister Frances), and Lucas\*, and cousin of all the Dillons\*, he was also Edgeworth's\* cousin, Pettit\* and Ulick Burke's\* brother-in-law and Taaffe's\* uncle; he was also linked to Lord Antrim. His second wife was Parke's\* cousin and her father was m.p. for Sligo in 1613 and 1634. Based at Cloncullan, Westmeath, he held extensive property there and in Meath and was a burgess of Trim; he also held some lands in Roscommon, where he was a commissioner to raise money for the army in 1627.<sup>162</sup> He was admitted a freeman of Dublin in 1632, and signed a bond on the Dublin Staple in February 1641. His second wife brought him extensive property, although its value was presumably much diminished by the upheavals of the 1640s.<sup>163</sup> James had already had land deals with John Ridge before the rebellion. His military career was typical of a younger son of a wealthy family; he was a captain in James Fitzgerald's company in Owen Roe O'Neill's regiment at Cambrai in 1635 and was licensed to return to Ireland in January 1636. He was a captain in Coote's\* regiment in the new army of 1640 (he was made freeman of Belfast in that August) and in the following year gathered 2,000 men for service in Spain. These troops were included in the companies suggested for Scotland, a proposal which disturbed him and his fellow catholic officers and he proposed the taking of Dublin Castle to Lord Maguire. His views were not widely known and the lords justice (including his cousin Robert Dillon\*) asked him to use his troops to suppress the rebellion in Cavan and Longford, when, with the other James\*, he was granted a commission to govern Longford. He was active from the beginning of the rebellion, besieging the President in Athlone until July 1642, but is recorded as escorting protestants to safety from that town in the following December, when he was described as "*for the present a rebell, but when [Leicester] comes, perhaps good use may be made of*

---

<sup>162</sup> Part of the Roscommon property was held in reversion from Laughlin O'Kelly, for whom, with Lucas\*, St. George\* and Blakeney\*, James signed a testimonial of loyalty in 1629.

<sup>163</sup> John Ridge's depositions claim losses of extensive lands and stock in counties Galway, Mayo, Roscommon, Sligo, Longford and Wicklow, amounting to £12,200 sterling. *T.C.D. MS. 830, f. 5r.*



him."<sup>164</sup> He mediated with the president of Connaught for an end to acts of hostility with local inhabitants, including his cousins. He was based in Athlone as commander of all Catholic troops in Longford and Westmeath; his own foot regiment was in Kilkenny West in January 1643 and fought at Ballinakill three months later. He was a member of the Westmeath Council of War. He accompanied the Lord Deputy and others to talks with Ormond in that year and his Athlone garrison was maintaining the cessation in the following year, when he took part in Castlehaven's expedition to Ulster. He was in Kilkenny in the following November but was still generally based in Athlone; he was commander in chief for Connaught and fought in Roscommon against Coote\* and the Ormsbys, when, with Clanricarde, he captured Tulsk. His success led to his appointment as governor of Jamestown. He refused to join O'Neill's 1646 expedition and tried to enter the French service in the following year, but was short of money for the upkeep of his regiment; Ormond petitioned Dumolin for money to enable him to travel to France, but he remained in Ireland and his troop fought at Dungan's Hill. He opposed Taaffe's\* plan to leave Ireland to serve in France in January 1649. His regiment was near Dundalk in the following summer and he petitioned Ormond for help with his debts in 1650. With Lord Dillon, he went to Galway to get some of the money that the Duke of Lorraine had brought to that town. He was excluded from Cromwell's pardon, although he was one of the Leinster insurgents who agreed to lay down arms in 1652. His wife was examined in the following year about his possible involvement in the murders of John Hibbs and George Dillon; Mary Dillon claimed to have entreated Sir Walter Dongan to save her husband's life.<sup>165</sup> He left Ireland and served in France until 1663, when his regiment (which was attached to the Duke of Gloucester's in 1658) was disbanded. He returned to Ireland and received a pension of £500 (which he was still receiving in 1669) and was restored to part of his wife's estate in 1665. He was on good terms with Arlington, who used him to bring draft parliamentary bills to London in 1666. The Secretary was clearly anxious that he should stay in London for his own safety, and he remained there until November at least. In the same year he was a signatory to the *Faithful protestation and humble remonstrance of ... Catholic nobility and gentry of Ireland* to the King.

---

164 Lisle to Leicester, 20 December 1642. *H.M.C. De L'Isle & Dudley*, VI, p. 414.

165 Examination of Lady Mary Dillon, 29 April 1653, at Athlone, *T.C.D. MS. 830*, ff 80v, 86r.



JAMES DILLON, (c1605-8/11/1649), Longford County

e.s. Lord Robert Dillon\*, Earl of Roscommon, and Margaret Barry da, Lord Buttevant and Ellen Roche, da. Lord Fermoy; m. 1636, Elizabeth, da. Sir William Wentworth, Wentworth Woodhouse, Yorkshire, and Anne, da. Sir Robert Atkinson, Stowell, Gloucestershire;

ed. Exeter College, Oxford, 1628-31;

Kt. 1640; 3rd. Earl of Roscommon, 1642;

M.P. Ballyshannon 1634.

Although he came from a prominent old English family with a strong history of service to the crown, James's father's religious conformity meant that their new English links were more significant. His 1634 return is explained by his father's marriage to Lady Folliott, whose family controlled Ballyshannon; this marriage also connected him to King\*, Wingfield\* and Burnell\*. His own marriage made him brother-in-law of Wentworth\* and the Lord Deputy, and linked the Dillons even more closely to the administration, as well as providing connections with Gifford\*, St. George\* and the Wandesfords\*, Radcliffes\*, Nettletons\* and Loftuses\*. His other cousins or connections included Redmond Roche\*, the Barnwalls\*, Dillons\*, Bellews\* and Nugents\*. His up-bringing was quite English and he spent most of the years 1628-34 in England, principally in Oxford and later London. He was a close friend of Ralph Verney, standing godfather to one of his children.<sup>166</sup> He had dealings on the Dublin Staple with Domville\* in 1642. He was a captain in his father's regiment in 1640 and, with his cousin Sir James\*, was appointed joint governor of Longford on the outbreak of the rebellion, but unlike his namesake, was active on the protestant side, taking part in the Trim conference in 1643. He succeeded to the command of his father's regiment on Robert's\* death. Shortly before that he had acted as the agent of the Irish Catholics to Charles, "*demanding of the king in the name of the Catholics liberty of conscience. The English accorded him the honour of a prison, and had his papers seized, which will give new offence to our Catholics, who in all good confidence chose a heretic and a councillor of the realm to advance their claims.*"<sup>167</sup> He was, therefore, an appropriate person to be a House

<sup>166</sup> He also stood for Lord Digby's daughter Katherine, at Oxford 1628. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II, pp 113-4.

<sup>167</sup> Hugh Bourke to Luke Wadding, 29 January 1642, *H.M.C. Franciscan*. (London, 1906) p. 115.



of Lords commissioner to receive the Confederates' propositions for peace in 1643. In that year he was also a commissioner to inquire into the petition of the army to the House of Lords and captain of a troop of horse. In 1645 he was a member of the privy council subcommittee appointed to examine Glamorgan and in the following year signed the articles of peace and substituted for Ormond as governor of Dublin. Ormond sent him to England as an hostage in 1647. James was still serving with Ormond in 1649, the year in which he was made keeper of the great seal and treasurer of Ireland. He died in November of that year, in a fall in Bramhall's lodgings in Limerick, when the seal was entrusted to Fanshaw\*. He was retrospectively excluded from Cromwell's pardon.

LUCAS DILLON (1579-1653-6), Roscommon County

2 s. Theobald Dillon, 1st. Viscount Dillon, and Eleanor, da. Sir Edward Tuite; m. Jane, da. John Moore, Brees, Mayo; 4 s.;

Kt. 1624;

M.P. Roscommon County 1634.

Apart from his connections with the rest of the Dillons\* (he was a brother of James\* sr., and cousin of Robert\*, James jr.\* and Henry\*) Lucas was also Edgeworth's\* cousin and, through his wife (daughter of the 1613 Galway County m.p.), also related to the Bourkes\*. His siblings' marriages connected him to Antrim, Nicholas Whyte\*, Ulick Burke\*, Maurice Fitzgerald\* and Taaffe\*. At Lord Wilmott's request, he and Lucas were granted the wardship of his relative Lord Dillon in 1630. Given extensive possessions by his father, he was a wealthy and prominent landowner in Roscommon (where he held nearly 20,000 acres and lived at Lough Glynn), Westmeath and Mayo and had other property in Sligo and Louth. He was a member of the 1624-5 commission of the peace in those three counties and was one of the Connaught agents to England in 1628. He had land deals in Londonderry with Nicholas Whyte\* and Lucas Fitzgerald\* in 1629. He signed the 1625 petition of the lords of the Pale, promising £3,000 to Charles and was a member of a commission to inquire into fees and exactions in 1628, the year in which he was also promised the command of a company. His stance in the early months of the rebellion was uncertain, with a contemporary pamphlet noting that he was "*variously reported: some say*



he is in [the rebellion], some out"<sup>168</sup> but at the meeting of Roscommon gentry, attended by Ulick Burke\* and O'Connor Sligo, all took the oath to maintain the king's prerogative and the Catholic religion and he was deputed to ask Clanricarde to be general of Connaught. Another account declared that he had been one of the chief rebels from the beginning. He actively supported the Confederation, representing Roscommon on the Provincial Council and the General Assembly, and serving on the committee which drew up its system of government. He was an agent, with Robert Talbot, John Walsh\* and Gormanston at the meeting in Trim in March 1643, signing the cessation at Sigginstown six months later, and agent for Connaught in the meeting with Ormond at Kilcullen in the following June. Despite his age, he fought Coote\* at Ballintubber in 1642-3. He was in Sligo in October 1645 during the fighting and despite reports that he had been shot in the thigh, was still commanding his troop in Mayo in the following August. He was named as a possible privy councillor by the Confederation in that year. He was a member of all except the 7th. and 8th. Supreme Councils (September 1646 to November 1647, although he was a member of the 1647 General Assembly). With Lynch\* and Lord Athenry, he was a resident agent for Connaught at the Confederation in 1648. He was sent to help Darcy\* and Plunkett\* negotiate with the Catholic bishops in September 1646 and was a commissioner appointed under that year's peace to attend the Lord Lieutenant. In the following April he was sent with the Bishop of Clogher to administer the new Oath of Association to Owen Roe, for whom he also administered Confederate funds. Ormond appointed him vice-treasurer after the 1649 peace and he was a Commissioner of Trust. He petitioned Ormond for the continuation of the tenancy of Knockancorir and Newtown in April 1650 and three months later about an outstanding debt. His estates were sequestered by Cromwell and he was imprisoned in the Marshalsea, Dublin. Despite this, he managed to sign bonds on the Dublin Staple in 1653, including one for about £4,000 with Coote\*. He died before 1656 when his widow, sons and grandson were transplanted. He should not be confused with his cousin and namesake, Robert's\* brother, m.p. for Cavan in 1634.

ROBERT DILLON, Trim

e.s. Sir James Dillon, first Lord Dillon of Kilkenny West, and Earl of

---

<sup>168</sup> \_\_\_\_\_, *Another extract of more letters sent out of Ireland ...* (\_\_\_\_\_, 1643). p. 6.



Roscommon, and Eleanor, da. Sir Christopher Barnwall, Turvey; m. 1) Margaret Barry, da. Lord Buttevant and Ellen Roche, da. Lord Fermoy; 2) Dorothy (d. o.s.p., 1614), da. George Hastings, 4th. Earl of Huntingdon, w. Sir George Wharton, e.s. Lord Philip Wharton; 3) Anne, da. Sir William Strode, w. Henry Folliott, Lord Folliott of Ballyshannon (d. 1622);

ed. Gray' Inns, 1613;

Kt. 1615; 2nd. Earl of Roscommon 1641; d. 27 August 1642.

M.P. Trim 1634.

Robert's religious conformity set him apart from the rest of the predominantly catholic Dillons, including his brother James\* and their uncle, the friar George Dillon, who was active in promoting the rebellion in 1642. His connections in the Commons included his son James\*, Farrell\*, cousins the Barnwalls\*, Dillons\*, Nicholas Plunkett\* and those to whom he was connected through his sisters' marriages - Burnell\*, the Nugents\* and Bellews.\* His sister Jane married Christopher, first Viscount Dillon. His own marriage connected him to Redmond Roche\*, Wharton\*, King\* and Wingfield\*, and his son's to the Wentworth\* network. He held extensive property, chiefly in Meath (where he lived at Moymet), Westmeath, Wicklow, Donegal, Tipperary, Mayo and Roscommon. He was a member of the 1624-5 commission of the peace in Meath and Westmeath and *custos rotullorum* of the latter. In 1627 he was commissioner to raise money for the army in Westmeath, Meath, Longford, Donegal and Fermanagh; he also received licences to keep taverns and sell wine, and make whiskey in Donegal. He was a prominent member of the administration, becoming a privy councillor in 1627, and holding a succession of crown offices, including deputy keeper of the great seal, commissioner of ecclesiastical causes (1635-6), commissioner to enquire into fees and exactions and, in 1639 and 1640, lord justice. He was one of the chief administration spokesmen in the 1634 Commons, sitting on a very large number of committees, including many conference committees, and the standing committees on grievances and privileges. He nominated Catlin as speaker. In 1640, with Christopher Wandesford\*, he was responsible for the opening of parliament. In November 1641 he was an agent of the parliament, attending Charles in Scotland. He took out a bond for £3,000 in the Dublin Staple with Maule\* in November 1640.



WILLIAM DIXON, Armagh / Donegal

e.s. Sir Robert Dixon, (d. 1654) and Maud Bee, Dublin; m. -1635, Margaret (d. 1662), da. Capt. Erasmus Saunders;

? ed. Cambridge, 1622;

Kt. 1661; d. 1666; bur. St. Werburg's, Dublin.

M.P. Jamestown, 1661-6.

Sir Robert came from Colverstown, Kildare but built up extensive interests in Dublin, becoming mayor in 1633-4, although he retained his Kildare property. William also held property in both counties, including Barrettstown (burnt by the rebels in November 1643), and the Dublin / Kildare connection was strengthened by his sister's marriage to Maurice Eustace\*. He became joint clerk of the crown in Wicklow and Carlow in 1627. He was living in Werburg St., Dublin in the 1650s, lending money through the Dublin Staple in 1655 and 1657. With William Ussher\*, Paul Davys\* and Lord Ranelagh, he wrote to Sir John Percival in October 1654 about the cost of supporting an agent for the Irish protestants in England. He was commissioner for the poll money ordnance in the city in 1660-1 and became sheriff of Dublin in 1665. His father was listed as a delinquent in England in 1649. His return for Armagh and Donegal are mysterious, as he had no known connections with either constituency.

WILLIAM DOBBINS, Askeaton

s. \_\_\_\_\_ Dobbins, Dumbleton, Gloucestershire; m. c. 1638 Margaret, da. Edmond Percival;

ed. Gray's Inns, 1625;

d. 1684.

Dobbins's success in Ireland was due to his marriage, which linked him to Sir Philip Percival, who controlled Askeaton and arranged for William's return as replacement for Williams.\* He was a client of the Percivals and signed many of their deeds, including the 1653 marriage settlement of Judith Percival and Randal Clayton. His father-in-law resigned the post of escheator of Ulster in



his favour in 1639 (he still held the position in 1661 but resigned it four years later). St. Leger\* appointed him commissary in Wales for the Munster Presidency in April 1642, when he was based in Bristol and Minehead, providing victuals for 6,000 troops in Ireland. In the following year he was commissary general, delivering biscuit in Dublin for the crown forces and in 1646 he brought saddles to Lord Clancarty (Montgomery\*) and Wemys\* from the Committee of Both Houses. He appears to have held the position of customer of Carrickfergus in 1660, and, from 1671, also of Belfast; the later grant included his sons William and Thomas. He lived mainly in St. Martins Lane, London in the 1650s and appears to have remained largely in England thereafter. His will, proved in 1685, gave his address as Beckford, Gloucestershire. He should not be confused with his namesake, the catholic Waterford merchant and m.p. in 1634.

JOHN DONGAN (DUNGAN) (1603-1656), Newcastle

e.s. Sir Walter Dongan, Castletown, Kildare, and Slaney O'Brien, da. Morrough Lord Inchiquin; m. -1628, Mary, da. Sir William Talbot (m.p. Kildare County, 1613), Carton, and Alison Netterville;  
ed. Gray's Inns, 1623;  
M.P. Newcastle 1634.

Dongan had close connections with Dublin and Kildare, and his constituency was on the border of the two counties, and close to his home at Kildrought (Castletown). His father was an alderman of Dublin and his father-in-law was recorder of that city and, through his own property, and that of the Talbots, he was one of the most prominent landowners in Dublin and especially in Kildare, where he was also a tenant of Lord Kildare. He also held lands in Kells (Meath), and inherited property in Tipperary (presumably from the O'Briens), which he held jointly with Ormond. In 1624-5 he was named as a member of the Kildare commission of the peace. He was Talbot's\* brother-in-law and the O'Briens'\* cousin. He also claimed kinship with the Nugents\*. He was said to have travelled to England with his son William to offer his services to Charles on the outbreak of fighting there. He was a commissioner appointed to treat with the rebels in November 1641; four months later he was still acting to keep the peace, rescuing some local English, as well as his own servants, and



Lord Castlehaven's stocks of wool. He represented his co-religionists as an agent to Charles in August 1642. He returned to Ireland with a commission for a troop of horse and served under Ormond. In February 1643 a case for treason was brought against him in the King's Bench, but, despite heavy pressure from the chief justices, the jury refused to convict him. He was in London in March 1649. His widow and daughters were transplanted to 2,019 acres in Galway and 1,569 acres in Roscommon and his sons to 550 acres in Mayo. His young son was reported to have been tortured by a Capt. Hulet, who was searching for a priest in his house in Castletown, in 1651. His son Thomas was created first Earl of Limerick.

#### ANTHONY DOPPING, Bandon

e.s. John Dopping (b. 1563), Framplon on Severn, Gloucestershire and Joanna (b. 1565), da. John Arids, Longvile, Salop.; m. 1) -1622, Barbara Lambert (d. 1629-31), Somerset; 2) by 1631, Mary or Margaret, da. Gilbert Domville (m.p. Kildare, 1613, Donegal, 1634) and Margaret, da. Archbishop Thomas Jones, Dublin and Margaret Purdon; ed. King's Inns, 1626; d. 8 July 1649.<sup>169</sup>

As the son of his father's second marriage, Dopping's prospects in England were limited and his arrival in Ireland is typical of many English younger sons. His second marriage connected him to several of the most significant new English families, including the Loftuses\*, Jones (Ranelagh), Boyles\* and Wares\*.<sup>170</sup> This provided his link with his constituency, which was controlled by Lord Cork (for whom he acted in a legal capacity in 1639). He held a number of crown posts, including feodary of Leinster by 1630, remembrancer of the exchequer (to 1635), and clerk of the pleas and exchequer (by 1638). He was also a presiding commissioner for the jury which found the King's title to land in Galway on 6 April 1637. He was granted the wardship of Henry Plunkett of Hartstown, Meath, in 1628; he held lands in Down from 1631, and in

<sup>169</sup> His will was proved in Canterbury in 1651.

<sup>170</sup> Domville was a cousin of the Fittons, the family of Lord Cork's second wife; one of Mary /Margaret Domville's sisters married James and John Ware's\* brother. Dopping's son by this marriage was Archbishop Anthony Dopping.



Dublin and Meath;<sup>171</sup> some of this property may have been acquired through the king's letter for lands in December 1630, although his work as foedary would have facilitated the acquisition of lands. He lent money to Lord James Dillon\* through the Dublin Staple in November 1642. He was an active m.p., sitting on a number of committees, including the standing committee on privileges, and a number on legislation. He signed the petition of the protestant subjects in 1642.

NICHOLAS DORMER, New Ross

s. \_\_\_\_; m. \_\_\_\_; at least 1 s.;

ed. Inner Temple, 1595; King's Inns, 1607;

d. 1642-3.

M.P. New Ross 1634.

The Dormers were influential in the New Ross area; William Dormer was m.p. for Ross in 1560, and Nicholas was a j.p. by 1608, sheriff of Wexford in 1609 and recorder of New Ross. He held lands in the county and lived at Camline, although he had other property at Stockstown, Waterford, and Kilbeggan, Desertmoon, Kilkenny. He was connected to other local families, including the Synnotts and Shees (who had provided members of previous parliaments) and the Butlers\*. He sat on many parliamentary committees, mostly concerning local issues and was added to the committee on privileges in January 1641. In the first year of the rebellion he moved from his house at Camline to the Irish quarters in Ross, where he died.

WALTER DOWDALL (1610-1655+), Athboy

? e.s. or grandson, Stephen Dowdall (d. 1619), Athboy;

The Dowdalls were an important old English family in Louth and Meath and provided members of the 1613 and 1634 parliaments. The Athboy Dowdalls were a cadet branch of the Termonfechin family and had been settled in the Meath town for at least five generations.<sup>172</sup> Walter inherited lands in

<sup>171</sup> His lands in Dublin were the subject of a bill considered by the Commons, *C.J. (I.)*, 1 June, 1640, 2 June 1640, 3 June 1640; his Meath property was freehold, but he had no residence in the county. *T.C.D. MS. 816*, f. 203v.

<sup>172</sup> *Dowdall deeds, pedigree D.*, p. xx.



Athboy from his cousin Stephen Dowdall (d. 1628-32). He held 710 acres in Meath jointly with Lucas Fitzgerald\* and others, and a further 95 acres on his own. He submitted a complaint against Warren\* in the Commons on 11 June 1640. He was apparently living in Trim in May 1646 when he was involved in collecting the fourth sheaf for the support of the army, as agreed in the cessation. He petitioned against his intended transplantation in September 1654; consideration of the petition was deferred to the following March.

JAMES DUFF, [Taghmon]

s. \_\_\_\_ Duff;

d. 1647-1654.

Duff was elected to the Commons by 8 June 1641, when he presented a petition to the House against Archdeacon Gilbert Deane and others of Kilkenny. It is unclear which constituency returned him, but, as an alderman of New Ross, and the owner of 120 acres (worth £16) near Fetherd (Shelburne Barony), it is probable that he represented a seat in Wexford, possibly Taghmon. The Duffs were a long-established family in New Ross; Jasper Duff was m.p. in 1585 and sovereign of the town in 1587.<sup>173</sup> James was a j.p. by 1608. He was active in the early stages of the rebellion (as were other members of his family), holding the position of captain of rebels in New Ross, and, as governor of New Ross, executing a warrant from Lord Mountgarrett to imprison the protestant sovereign of the town in 1642. He was described as "*a notorious plunderer of the English and Protestants*".<sup>174</sup> He fought at Duncannon, Shelbeggan and Tintern in 1642. Five years later he was customer of Ross. He should not be confused with the Dublin merchant family of Duff, with whom, it appears, the New Ross branch had no connections.

JOHN EDGEWORTH (c1612-1667) [Armagh/ Donegal/ Ballyshannon/ Kilmallock]<sup>175</sup>

---

<sup>173</sup> E. Curtis (ed.), *Calendar of Ormond deeds*. VI, (Dublin, 1943). p. 33.

<sup>174</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 819*, f. 35r.

<sup>175</sup> *N.A. MS. M611* (unpaginated), suggests that he may have represented Clonmines, but adduces no supporting evidence; as the elections for Clonmines did not take place until after 21 October 1640, Edgeworth could not have represented that constituency.



e.s. Francis Edgeworth (d. 1627) and his 3rd. wife, Jane, da. Sir Edward Tuite, Sonna, Westmeath; m. 1) Mary, da. Sir Hugh Culme and Maria Emerson, Derbyshire; 2) by 1642, Anne, da. Sir Hugh Chamberlaine, Cheshire, w. Edward Bridgeman;

bur. St. Michan's, Dublin, 3 August 1667.

Convention, Longford; M.P. Johnstown 1661.

Francis Edgeworth, a new English settler, was clerk of the crown and hanaper, and benefited from the plantation of Longford, receiving grants of some land, and purchasing more, to build up an estate of 1,600 acres worth £260 annually, which John inherited. Despite his English background, Francis's wives were all Irish, the first an O'Cavanagh from Wicklow and the second, from an old English family. Jane Edgeworth was a protestant for much of her life, but reverted to Catholicism and established a convent. John's uncle Edward Edgeworth was bishop of Down and Connor. He was firmly protestant and both his wives were English. Two of his brothers-in-law, Culme\* and John Byse\* also sat in this parliament and other siblings married into the Moore\*, Jones\*, King\* and Phillips\* families. He lived at Cranalagh Castle, Longford and was sheriff of the county in 1641-2. His deposition claimed that he had spent £600 on buildings on his property there and that the rebellion had deprived him of the reversion of an estate worth £1,000 in Cavan and elsewhere which was his mother's jointure. He also claimed losses of £720 in crops, stock and farming equipment, a further £300 in household goods and £430 in debts.<sup>176</sup> He also had property in Meath. He was a soldier and set out from Dublin with Sir James Dillon\* jr. and Henry Dillon to relieve Longford early in the rebellion. He was a captain and provost marshal by 1643. In the following year he was living in Dublin and was party to the marriage settlement of Champion's\* widow and Sir William Gilbert's\* son, Henry. His wife signed the petition of distressed gentlewomen to the English parliament. He remained in Ireland in the 1640s and 1650s. He was a commissioner for raising the assessment for Ireland in Longford in the final quarter of 1654 and the second half of 1657 and commissioner for the poll money ordnance for Longford County and Johnstown in 1660-1. He was a member of the committee on the Act of Settlement.

---

176 Deposition of John Edgeworth, 23 February 1642. *T.C.D. MS. 817*, ff 144r-145r.



only s. Laurence Esmond, Lord Esmond of Limbrick, Wexford, and Margaret da. Murrough O'Flaherty;<sup>177</sup> m. 1) 1629, Ellis (d. 1644), da. Sir John Fitzgerald, Dromana, Waterford, and \_\_\_\_\_, da. the White Knight; w. Lord Cahir; 12 children;<sup>178</sup> 2) after 1644, Joan Butler, da. Walter, Lord Ormond, and \_\_\_\_\_ Butler, da. Lord Mountgarrett, w. George Bagnal and Theobald Purcell, Baron of Loughmoe.<sup>179</sup>

Kt. 1629; Bart. 1629;

d. 1674.

The Esmonds were a prominent old English Wexford family with a history of loyalty to the crown. Thomas's father was a younger son who prospered through his adherence to protestantism, building up substantial wealth and being ennobled as Baron Esmond in 1622.<sup>180</sup> Thomas's first cousin, William Esmond, was m.p. for Wexford County in 1634 and other family connections included Cheevers\* and French\*. Through his own marriages and his father's second marriage, he was closely linked to the Butlers\*, and, through the Mountgarretts, to Bellings\* and others. A dispute about his religious upbringing led to his parents' separation and he was raised as a catholic by his mother. His father's remarriage during his mother's lifetime, and the fact that he did not inherit his father's title, has led to some uncertainty about his legitimacy.<sup>181</sup> He remained on good terms with his father, holding lands from him at Farrellstown, and he later conformed. He settled near his father, and held

<sup>177</sup> Lord Esmond's second partner, Ellis or Elizabeth Butler, the widow of John Sherlock and Sir Edward Gough, was also a catholic. *T.C.D. MS. 818*, f. 303.

<sup>178</sup> Two of his sons were called Laurence, which suggests that their grandfather stood godfather to them. *T.C.D. MS. 819*, f. 275r.

<sup>179</sup> m.p. Tipperary, 1634.

<sup>180</sup> Laurence Esmond was m.p. for Wicklow in 1613. McGrath, 1613. pp 66-7. His wealth may be estimated by the bond for £5,000 which he signed for his wife's jointure. *T.C.D. MS. 818*, f. 303.

<sup>181</sup> Laurence Esmond changed his will in 1642 to make his nephew and namesake his heir, since, as an indicted rebel, Thomas could not hold land, and Lord Esmond stipulated that, should Thomas be accepted as a loyal subject, he should inherit the estate. After the restoration, and a law suit, he was awarded the lands, but not the title. *T.C.D. MS. 818*, f. 303; *N.L.I. MSS 8517; 11,103*; Another contemporary account gives a clear picture of their relationship at the time of Lord Esmond's death: "*The Lord Esmond having noe issue left his estate by will to Sr. Thos. Esmond his natural son, then in rebellion, provided that his sd. son should reconcile himself to the King's grace and obtain his pardon before the death of him ye said lord, who bing governor of Dungarvan (sic) 16.., & very weak commanded his servts. to carry him in a chair to ye walls of ye towne from whence seeing his said nat. son in armes with the Irish Rebels, he shooke his sword at hime, calling hime an unnaturall Rogue to fight against his king and his father, & there on ye lord was take, and ye Lord Esmond died.*" *T.C.D. MS. 654*, ff 60v,757r.



13,000 acres, including some leased from him, in Wexford, Carlow and Tipperary, and built Huntingdon Castle, on the Carlow / Wexford border, in 1625. An experienced soldier, he fought for the crown as a major in Piers Crosby's\* regiment at Calais and the Ile de Rhe; his service was rewarded with a knighthood and baronetcy. He notified the Privy Council of Crosby's\* arrival at Waterford with a troop of soldiers in 1628. Wentworth suspected him of involvement in questionable affairs with Crosby\* and he was involved in the latter's 1639 Star Chamber case. A protestant at the time of his election, he turned to mass but took no active part in the events of the first year of the rebellion, remaining close to his father, free to enter and leave Duncannon fort, (which his father commanded) taking powder with him, and preventing his father's house from being burnt.<sup>182</sup> He acted as a peace-maker with the rebel Byrnes. In 1642, he joined the Confederate side and was disinherited by his father. He was made a captain in the Confederate army, a member of the Wexford Council of War from November 1642 and fought against his father in the siege of Duncannon; when he visited the site to treat, Lord Esmond left the fort, refusing to admit a rebel to his garrison. He fought at Ballibeg in March and New Ross in April 1643 and was a colonel of foot by the following September. In September 1646, he was nominated to deal with military matters for the Confederation in the Lord General's absence. In the following year he took Castleknock from the protestant army. He fought Cromwell at Wexford and finally laid down arms on articles in 1653. Despite his military service, he was not universally popular and his appointment as governor of Wexford in January 1649 was opposed by Muskerry\*, Bellings\*, Lucas Dillon\*, Geoffrey Browne\* and others, who regarded him as an opportunist who delayed committing himself to the cause until it seemed likely to be successful. He was exempted from pardon in 1652 and transplanted to Galway and Mayo.

MAURICE EUSTACE (1590-1665), Kildare County [SPEAKER]  
 e.s. John FitzWilliam Eustace (d. 1623), Harristown, (Irishtown), Kildare; m. 1633, Charity, da. Sir Robert Dixon and Maud Bee, Dublin;  
 ed. Trinity College, Dublin, 1610, B.A. 1615, M.A., 1618, fellow 1617; Lincoln's Inns, 1619, Bar 1625, King's Inns, 1627;

<sup>182</sup> He "formerly went to the Protestant church very often, and seemed to be a protestant, but since this present rebellion is turned papist". Deposition, 5 January 1642. T.C.D. MS. 818, ff 10v,83v.



Kt. 1640.

M.P. Athy 1634

The Eustaces were an important old English family in Kildare and Carlow. Most of the family, including his cousin Oliver Eustace\*, remained catholic, but Maurice's father was a protestant and held the office of Constable of Naas. Maurice inherited his father's property in Kildare, and also received grants of rectories, tithes and other property there and in Carlow, Wexford and Dublin in 1627, and further lands in Dublin in 1635; he also leased the lands of Creagh Eustace from Boyle from 1630. He was admitted freeman of Dublin in 1632. He was a protege of Adam Loftus, Lord Ely<sup>183</sup> and was presented to Lackagh and Downey vicarages in Kildare in 1612. He became a fellow of Trinity College Dublin, where he lectured in Hebrew. He was, presumably, destined for a remarkable ecclesiastical career, had he pursued these interests. He chose, however, to become a lawyer and his practice was extensive - Ormond retained his services in 1639 and he also acted for his cousin Oliver\* in a land deal in the same year.<sup>184</sup> His marriage reinforced his Dublin and Kildare connections, as his father-in-law was mayor of Dublin in 1633 and neighbour of the Eustaces in Kildare; he was Dixon\* and Robert Cusack's\* brother-in-law and Richard Fitzgerald's\* cousin. In December 1640 he guaranteed a bond of James Welleslie (Weasley) of Narraghmore, Kildare, at the Dublin Staple. His education fitted him well for the offices he held under the crown - prime serjeant (1634), escheator of Leinster (1644), master of the rolls, 1645. Rawdon\* suggested him as a possible lord deputy in December 1640. He was commissioned by Charles to treat with the Confederation, and was with Ormond at his meeting with their agents at Castlemartin and Kilcullen in June 1643. His lack of sympathy for the Catholic cause was well known and he was described as "*the second [George] Radcliffe\**"<sup>185</sup> and was one of the lawyers asked by Ormond to advise on the legality of catholic religious ceremonies in 1645. He was imprisoned two years later and sent to Chester, remaining imprisoned until 1654. He returned to Ireland in the following year, after Arthur Annesley had appealed to Henry

---

183 Lord chancellor, and father of Robert\*.

184 He wrote to Ormond on Oliver's behalf concerning a lease between Ormond and Oliver, 14 May 1639, *N.L.I. MS. 2306*, pp 205ff; The lucrative nature of his legal practice may be estimated from the grant of £1,000 in March 1641, as compensation for his loss of earnings, caused by his position as speaker.

185 \_\_\_\_\_, *The Plot and progresse of the Irish rebellion ...* (London, 1644). p. 9.



Cromwell for a lifting of the order restraining him from going to Ireland. Annesley's view was that "*it will no wayes conduce to the good of Ireland that such useful instrumts. as he be discouraged or diverted from going thither.*"<sup>186</sup> He received a grant of lands in Dublin in 1658 and retained his Kildare connections, including acting as commissioner of the poll money ordnance in Kildare in 1660. On the restoration he was made lord chancellor, lord justice and a privy councillor, and was granted an annual pension of £1,500. Lords chancellors were traditionally speakers of the house of Lords but Orrery objected to Eustace's appointment: "*My lord chancellor being proposed to use by ye Ld. Santry, against whom he had several materiall objections, besides his disability of body, & his being at best a cold friend to ye Declaration.*"<sup>187</sup> He lived mainly in Dublin, at Skinner's Row, and later in a magnificent house in Dame Street, with gardens sloping down to the Liffey. In the 1660s he built a house in Chapelizod, known at the King's House, replacing the earlier Phoenix House.<sup>188</sup> He died without legitimate heirs and his estate passed to his natural son and nephew, both called Maurice; the latter was apparently a catholic, as he was attainted for treason in 1643. His will established a lectureship in Hebrew in Trinity College.

#### OLIVER EUSTACE

Carlow County

s. \_\_\_\_\_ Eustace, Castlemartin, Kildare; m. \_\_\_\_\_; at least 2 s. 1 da.;  
d. 1642+

Oliver was Maurice's\* cousin, but his branch of the family remained catholic. He lived at Castlemore (Castlemartin) and Ballyminney (Ballymurray), Carlow, where he held lands from 1604; he also held lands in Dublin, and settled his estate on his grandson Francis in 1630. He held leases of Ormond lands from 1608 at least, and in 1639, used Maurice's\* legal advice and personal support in another lease of lands from Ormond.<sup>189</sup> As a young man he served as a captain in the Archduke's service in the Low Countries, being cashiered in 1607. This experience was turned to good account by the Confederation, which appointed

<sup>186</sup> Annesley to H. Cromwell, 8 May 1655, *B.L. MS. Lans. 821*, f. 3v.

<sup>187</sup> *B.L. MS. Add. 37,206*, f. 20r.

<sup>188</sup> For information on his houses, M. Craig, *The Architecture of Ireland from the earliest times to 1880*. (Dublin, London, 1982), p. 140; \_\_\_\_\_, *An Account of the solemn funeral and interment of the right honourable, the countess of Arran, August 21, 1668*. (London, 1668), pp 2-3; Lady Arran was laid out in Maurice's house, although this was after Eustace's death.

<sup>189</sup> *N.L.I. MSS 2304*, pp 17,57; *2305*, pp 205-11.



him an officer in its army. His connections were with other catholic families and his children married into the local Cavanagh and Whitty families. He also had a relatively close business relationship with Walter, Earl of Ormond and acted as his agent in the early 1630s. He was involved in local affairs, as j.p. in Carlow and Kildare in 1624-5, and sheriff of Carlow in 1634, presumably one of the reasons why he was not an m.p. in that year. In 1628, he is recorded as being "molested about a bond for executing an estate to Captain [Thomas] Butler\* from the last Viscount Tullyophelim."<sup>190</sup> In February 1641 he signed a bond with Edward Butler on the Dublin Staple. He apparently took little part in the very early stages of the rebellion, and neighbours sent some of their goods to him for safekeeping, but he soon joined his co-religionists, including his son-in-law, Sir Morgan Cavanagh, the local colonel of rebels, attending a meeting of the local gentry to decide their adherence to Rory O'More. His house was pillaged in February 1642 and he was indicted and his lands declared forfeit. The Castlemartin Eustaces were connected with the Manners family, Earls of Rutland, and therefore with the Duchess of Buckingham.<sup>191</sup>

RICHARD FANSHAW, (1608-1666), Ballinakill, England, in April 1651. Parle  
5 s. Sir Harry Fanshaw (1559-1616), Ware Park, Hertfordshire and Elizabeth, da.  
Thomas Smyth, Kent; m. 1644, Anne (1625-1680), da. Sir John Harrison, Balls,  
Herts., and Margaret, da. Robert Fanshaw, Fanshaw Gate, Derbyshire, and Diana  
Eyre; 6 s. 8 da.;  
ed. Jesus College, Cambridge, 1623; Inner Temple, 1626;  
Bart. 1650; Kt. 1660;  
M.P. Cambridge University 1661.

The Fanshaws were an old Derbyshire family, settled in Hertfordshire;<sup>192</sup> they had few Irish connections, although their cousins, the Bouchiers and Hattons, had benefited from the plantation of Munster,<sup>193</sup> and Henry Fanshaw, sheriff of Armagh in 1640, may also have been a relative. The

<sup>190</sup> This was part of the dispute about the lands of Cloughjordan, but Oliver's role in it is unclear.

<sup>191</sup> The Duchess was the Earl of Antrim's wife. Robert Leycester to Wentworth, 12 May 1634. *Wentworth-Woodhouse MSS; N.L.I. P. 3585, 14(68)*; for Leycester, see McGrath, 1613. pp 53-4.

<sup>192</sup> Fanshaw's oldest brother, Thomas, later first Viscount Dromore, was m.p. for Hertford in 1624-8, 1640-2, and 1661-5.

<sup>193</sup> MacCarthy-Morrogh, *Munster plantation*. pp 39-41, 52-7.



Fanshaws were neighbours and perhaps relatives of Francis Butler\*. Richard travelled extensively in France and Spain in the 1620s and used his knowledge of languages as secretary to the Madrid embassy, 1635-8; on his return to England, his brother's influence secured him the position of remembrancer of the exchequer. The increasing uncertainty of English affairs interrupted this arrangement and he came to Ireland as secretary of war, at 10/- *per diem*. The Commons licensed him to go to England on business on 9 June 1641 and in that month he delivered a letter from Ormond to secretary Vane. In March 1642 he wrote to Perceval from Warwick, about Carpenter's\* affairs. A strong royalist in the civil war (although Windebank had described him as a "puritan") he requested a safe-conduct from the parliament to travel to Westminster with Charles's propositions for peace in 1643. He became secretary of state to the prince of Wales in 1644 and did not return to Ireland until the late 1640s, when he travelled *via* France. He arrived in Kilkenny in 1648 and travelled to Cork, where he delivered a message from the prince of Wales to Inchiquin. With his wife (who was also his cousin and Clarendon's god-daughter) he visited Limerick (where he was admitted a freeman) and Galway. He assisted Prince Rupert at Kinsale in 1649. He accompanied Charles during his exile, being with him at St. Johnston, where he took charge of the Privy seal of England, in April 1651, Paris in 1659, and returned to England in 1660. He was a privy councillor and ambassador to Portugal at the time of Charles's marriage to Catherine of Braganza. He became master of requests and secretary of the Latin tongue. He retained some Irish contacts - attorney general Smyth was one of his correspondents, and sent a bottle of whiskey to Fanshaw in Portugal, to remind him of his times in Ireland.<sup>194</sup> He died in Lisbon and his body was brought back to England for burial. Apart from his linguistic skills, he was well-known as a poet.

FAIGNEY (FELIX) FARRELL (FERRELL, O'FARRELL), Longford

e.s. Rossa O'Farrell Bane, Longford; m. \_\_\_\_\_;

d. 1650-May 1654.

M.P. Longford 1634.

Faigney's family was the most important in Longford before the

---

<sup>194</sup> N.L.I. MS. 17,821; the bottle contained 2 gallons of whiskey.



plantation; he had been assigned 2,605 acres there, which he still held, although he leased some to Leventhorpe\*. He lived at Moate; despite his position in Longford, he was excluded from the 1624-5 commission for the peace, but he was a commissioner to collect money for the army in that county two years later. He presumably received the traditional education of a gaelic chief, as he owned a beautifully bound manuscript copy of *Comment ... physicarium Aristotelis*.<sup>195</sup> His daughter Ellen married Daniel McSweeny of Donegal, chief of his name, and there was also a family connection with O'Reilly\* and the Wares\*. The O'Farrells took refuge with the McSweenys in Doe Castle in the early 1650s. Sir Robert Talbot was acting as an agent for him and others in Dublin in January 1655, although he apparently died by the previous year.

JOHN FITZGERALD

Inistiogue

e.s. Sir William Fitzgerald, Knight of Kerry, and Mary O'Connor; m. after 1615, Catherine, da. Thomas Fitzmaurice, Lord Kerry, and Sheila, da. Richard Power, Curraghmore, Waterford;

d. 1667+

M.P. Kerry 1634.

John represented Inistiogue after Loftus's\* death; it was alleged that his eagerness to be returned was largely prompted by the usefulness of parliamentary privilege, which would keep him out of the court of Castle Chamber, and therefore prison. His Munster network was extensive, and his connections in the house of Lords were especially impressive. Apart from his Fitzgerald connections, his wife's brothers married daughters of Lords Muskerry, Castlehaven and Fermoy, providing links with McCarthy\*, Mervyn\*, Piers Crosbie\*, Fitzharris\* and Redmond Roche\* amongst others; his daughter Ellen married a son of Lord Courcy of Kingsale. The McCarthy\* link may also explain his return for Inistiogue, a constituency in which Muskerry's\* brother-in-law, Ormond, had so much influence. Two of his brothers-in-law, Robert and Richard Roche, fought for Charles in England, where Richard died at Naseby. As John Fitzgerald of Balyanan he was a member of the Kerry commission of the peace in 1624-5. He was a member of the deputation sent to England to assist

---

<sup>195</sup> This volume, which was dated 1634, is now in the G.P.A. Bolton Library, Cashel. The binding is very fine, but the manuscript is plain, and was clearly produced as a working document.



with the prosecution of Wentworth. He acted as messenger to Inchiquin in 1646, and was a member of the 1648 Munster Council of the Confederation in 1648. His lands were declared forfeit for his part in the rebellion, but he was adjudged innocent on the restoration, and his estates were restored in 1667.

LUCAS FITZGERALD (1589-1654-60), Westmeath

e.s. Sir Edward Fitzgerald (d. 1625), Tecroghan, and Alison, da. Sir Patrick Barnwall, Turvey, and Marion, da. Patrick Sharle, Shallon, Meath; m. Mary, da. Nicholas, first Lord Netterville, and Eleanor, da. Sir John Bath, Drumcondra; ed. Lincoln's Inns, 1609;

Kt. 1624.

M.P. Fore 1634.

Lucas was a member of a junior branch of the family of the Earls of Kildare, settled at Tecroghan, Westmeath. He had many connections with other members of the old English families of the Pale, being brother-in-law of Piers Butler\*, Lucas Netterville and William Archbold;<sup>196</sup> he also had family links with the Barnwalls\* (especially Nicholas\*, with whom he signed a bond on the Dublin Staple in July 1629), and became Theobald Bourke's\* father-in-law. From his father he inherited considerable property in Meath, Kildare, Wicklow and Westmeath - his lands in Meath alone amounted to over 3,700 acres, and his standing in Westmeath explains his election there, although his return for Meath or Kildare would have been unremarkable. He was a member of the 1624-5 Westmeath commission of the peace and commissioner to raise money for the army in Meath two years later. He may have had some military experience before the 1640s, as he was nominated by his father-in-law for a command in the proposed trained bands to be raised in the Pale in 1625. He began making preparations for the formation of the new army in 1640, when he joined Sir James Dillon's\* regiment. He was reported to be travelling around the Pale and Kilkenny (where he visited Piers\* Butler) in late summer 1641, with Sir Robert Talbot and Lucas Netterville, when he seems to have been drumming up support for the planned rising. He spoke of the "*discontente between the king & Parliament in England ... They say (by God) that before Christmas daie there will be twelve thousand men in Armes in the North of Ireland*" and that he had seen

---

<sup>196</sup> Netterville and Archbold were m.p.s for Swords and Naas, respectively, in 1634.



the commission and "*the seale and hand unto itt.*"<sup>197</sup> On the outbreak of the rebellion he presented himself before the privy council in Dublin and was allowed to return to his country estates. He attended the meeting of Meath gentry at Tara in December 1641, when he was appointed captain for Lune and Moyfenragh baronies, and to advise Gormanston as governor of Meath. At about the same time, Lady Offaly appealed to him for protection against the O'Dempseys. He joined the Confederation at its inception, becoming one of its most influential members. He wrote to James Dillon\*, giving information about Ormond's marches in 1642, and commanded troops in fighting at Kinnegad in the following year. He signed Preston's officers' engagement with Clanricarde at Lucan in 1646. After the failure of this initiative, he remained active on the confederate side, being a member of the 1647 Assembly. Two years later he was an intermediary between Ormond and Owen Roe, although he had disputes about cattle with O'Neill not long before. His castle at Tecroghan was an important centre for the confederate cause - Rinuccini and Clanricarde stayed there, the latter in 1646, when Lucas was in Kilkenny. Tecroghan was Ormond's headquarters in 1649 and one of the last strongholds for the catholic side, when its garrison was commanded by Robert Talbot, and, notably, by Lady Fitzgerald, who withstood a siege in June and July 1650. He was transplanted to Galway and his estate granted to Gifford\* as compensation for Fitzgerald's having burnt his house. Charles II ordered its restitution to his widow and son.

MAURICE FITZGERALD (1590-1649), Kildare County

e.s. Gerald FitzPhilip Fitzgerald, Allen, and his second wife, Joan Walsh, Shanganagh, County Dublin; m. ??? Ellen Butler, da. Thomas, Lord Dunboyne; M.P. Kildare 1634.

Maurice was a member of a junior branch of the family of the Earls of Kildare; he was on good terms with the present Lord.<sup>198</sup> He held over 5,000 acres in Kildare, and although much of it was in the Bog of Allen, at least 1,500 acres were classed as profitable, and the whole estate was valued at £400 annually, with a castle worth a further £100. Other lands in Kildare amounted to 530 acres (only

---

<sup>197</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 813*, f. 26; the report claimed that the journeys took place in September 1641. Talbot and Netterville were both cousins of Lady Fitzgerald.

<sup>198</sup> Maurice Fitzgerald to the Earl of Kildare, 25 September 1632 and 9 October 1632, Leinster Papers, 16th. Earl's letter book, *P.R.O.N.I., MS. D.3078/3, 1/5*, pp 62,70-1.



20 classified as waste), estimated at £79 *per annum*. He also held lands in Sligo. His lands were declared forfeit, due to his being in rebellion, but they were restored to his brother Philip. He was a member of the 1624-5 Kildare commission of the peace and two years later was a commissioner to raise money there for the army. He signed the 1625 memorial of the lords of the Pale, offering £3,000 in answer to Charles's demand for money. He played a prominent role in the first session of the 1634 parliament, sitting on a number of committees, (including the important standing committees on privileges and grievances); this would normally indicate some legal training. In 1640 he was one of the leaders of the recusant faction and was on the committee nominated to prepare articles of impeachment against Bolton, Lowther, Radcliffe\* and Bramhall. He joined the new army in 1640, and as "Captain Maurice Fitzgerald of Allan, esq." signed a Perceval deed with Dungan\*, Sutton\*, Maurice Eustace\* and others in November 1641. On the outbreak of the rebellion he was one of those armed by the administration to protect Kildare against the rebels; he used the arms, however, for the force raised by the local gentry (of which he was captain) which joined the rebels. He was commanding rebel soldiers at Naas in December 1641 and took Monasterevan garrison in the following year. Despite this, Lord Lambert sent part of his property to him for safekeeping in February 1642 (although he had left the house some time before and was living in a nearby bog), and he was being protected by Arthur Loftus\* in 1642-3. He was a member of the 1647 General Assembly. He fought under O'Neill and died at the battle of Rathmines, fighting with Ormond. He should not be confused with his namesake, Maurice Fitzgerald of Lackagh, Kildare.

MAURICE FITZGERALD (d. 1642+) Kerry County

? s \_\_\_\_\_ Fitzgerald, Lackagh, Kildare; m. \_\_\_\_\_, da. Thomas Fitzmaurice, Lord Kerry, and Sheila, da. Richard Power, Curraghmore, Waterford.

Maurice was the son-in-law of Lord Kerry, and John Fitzgerald's\* brother-in-law and connected also to the families of Lords Muskerry\*, Castlehaven and Fermoy, Mervyn\*, Piers Crosbie\*, Fitzharris\* and Redmond Roche\* amongst others.



RICHARD FITZGERALD,

Strabane

s. \_\_\_\_\_ Fitzgerald; m. Alice da. Richard Perceval and Alice da. John Sherman, Ottery St. Mary, Devon;

ed. King's Inns, 1628;

d. 1647-57.

M.P. Strabane 1634.<sup>199</sup>

Richard came from an old English family; he threw in his lot with the new English settlement and, like his cousin Maurice Eustace\*, prospered.

He had a pension in 1625 from the creation money and four years later was a joint summonister of the exchequer. By 1634 he was acting as deputy to Perceval as clerk of the crown and was appointed to the same post in Cork and Waterford three years later. He was apparently filacer of the common pleas by 1628. He was a justice of assize in Ulster from 1632 to 1640 at least. He may have been related to the protestant clergyman Fitzgerald "*next to the Primate of Armagh, a man of the greatest splendor for Urim and Thummin of that nation*"<sup>200</sup> who lived in Ulster. These seem to have been his only connections with his constituency and he was presumably an official nominee. He lived in Nicholas Street, Dublin. In 1632 he carried the crest and helmet at Lord Aungier's funeral, perhaps because of a Longford connection (he received 171 acres in that plantation). His other property was leased from Ormond in Tipperary. As Perceval's brother-in-law (and godfather to one of Philip's children), he was connected with one of the most efficient acquirers of land in 17th. century Ireland. His marriage also linked him to the Usshers\*, Meredith\* and other powerful families, as well as with Dobbins\*. This connection explains his signature on many Perceval deeds, and at least one for Waller\* (in January 1641). Perceval guaranteed his debts (totalling £930, including one of £200 to Richard Martin\*) in May 1637. In 1640 he was one of 13 parliamentary agents deputed to bring the Irish Remonstrance to England. He is said to have acted as Sir William Parsons's\* agent in Strafford's prosecution; he gave evidence about the Irish linen trade at the trial. In November 1641 he was sent to deliver letters in

<sup>199</sup> Richard was returned for Old Leighlin and Strabane; he opted to represent Strabane.

<sup>200</sup> D. Harcourt, *The Clergies lamentation*. (London, 1644), p. 16.



England for the lords justice and council; he remained in London, acting as agent for the Irish administration, staying in a house on the Strand until the end of 1642, when he moved to Cannon Street, where he was still living in March 1643. While in London he arranged the purchase of arms and drugs for the Irish army and he linked up with Clotworthy, Arthur Hill\* and Nicholas Loftus\*. He spent 1646-7 raising money in England and Wales for the war in Ireland, staying at Hereford in December 1646. He may have been the Richard Fitzgerald whose master, Patrick Fitzgerald of Westminster, left him £250 in his will of September 1646. Jerome Alexander, another Irish judge, blamed him for spreading reports of his disgrace in Ireland.<sup>201</sup>

EDWARD FITZHARRIS,

Limerick County

s. Matthew Fitzharris (FitzHenry), Moghmaine (Muckmayne), Wexford, and Margaret, da. Sir Walter Browne, Mulrankin, Wexford; m. Gyles, (Julia), da. John Roche, Kilfinane, Limerick; 7 s.

ed. \_\_\_\_; King's Inns, 1607;

Bart. 1622;

d. March 1641.<sup>202</sup>

M.P. Limerick County 1634.

Fitzharris was a member of a family based at New Ross, which had a strong tradition of providing m.p.s - his father was m.p. for Wexford County in 1585 and another Fitzharris represented New Ross in 1613.<sup>203</sup> He was William Browne's\* cousin and was related by marriage to Archer\*.

His Munster connections came with his marriage, which also brought lands at Kilfinan; this marriage and his standing as a lawyer (he was a founder-member of the King's Inns), provided his qualifications for his elections and his

---

<sup>201</sup> Alexander was m.p. for Lifford in 1634. He was disbarred in England having been convicted for falsifying legal documents. This did not hamper his advancement in Ireland. [J. Alexander], *A Breviate of a sentence given against J.A. ... In the Court of Star Chamber*. (London, 1644); \_\_\_\_, *The Case between Sir Jerom Alexander Knight, second Justice of his Majesties Court of Common Pleas in Ireland: and Sir William Ashton Knight, second justice of His Majesties Court of King's Bench in Ireland concerning precedency*. [s.l., 1661]; M. Prendergast, Sir Jerome Alexander, in *T.R.H.S.*, (1873), pp. ;

<sup>202</sup> he was succeeded by his grandson and namesake, with whom he should not be confused.

<sup>203</sup> McGrath, 1613. p. 64.



unsuccessful candidacy for the same seat in 1613 (when he was one of the recusants' agents to London). A further Munster connection came with his son George's marriage to Joan, a daughter of Lord Kerry. This provided links with John Fitzgerald\*, McCarthy\*, Pierse Crosbie\*, Mervyn\* and Lords Kerry and Fermoy\*. Apart from his Limerick property, he continued to hold 360 acres in Wexford and some lands from Sir William Sarsfield of Lucan in Dublin County. In 1635 he arbitrated a dispute between Cork and Ormond. He played an active part in administration and politics, as a member of the 1624-5 Limerick commission for the peace, agent for the Graces (1628) and a prominent m.p. in 1634, when he was a member of a large number of committees. His impact may be judged by his being imprisoned by Wentworth for an unspecified offence in November 1634; his contempt was discharged in the following month.

CHICHESTER FORTESCUE                      Carlingford

e.s. Faithful Fortescue\* and Anne, da. Sir Garrett Moore, Mellifont, Louth, and Mary, da. Sir Henry Colley and Anne Loftus; he rem. Eleanor, da. Marmaduke Whitechurch, Dromiskin, Louth; m. Elizabeth, da. Sir William Slingsby, Kippax, Yorkshire; she rem. Lord Purbeck;  
d. 1642.

M.P. Charlemont 1634.<sup>204</sup>

As a soldier, Chichester's return for a garrison town in which his family had considerable influence is easily understood. He was a cousin of the Chichesters\* (and, through them, Wray\*) and Moores\* in both houses, and brother-in-law of Culme\* and Meredith's\* brother. His step-mother linked him to Poyntz\* and his own wife was Slingsby's\* niece. He was presumably the Captain Fortescue recommended to Wentworth by Portland in July 1634. He was a captain in Charles Coote's\* regiment in 1640; he transferred to his cousin Lord Charles Moore's regiment two years later. He died, with his brother John, at the siege of Drogheda, in which his father also participated.

---

204     He resigned his seat in February 1635 to travel to England.



FAITHFUL FORTESCUE (c1581<sup>205</sup> -1666), Armagh County

s. John Fortescue, Devon, and Susanah, da. John Chichester, Umberly, Devon and Gertrude, da. Sir William Courtney; m. 1) Anne, da. Sir Garrett Moore, Mellifont, Louth, and Mary, da. Sir Henry Colley and Anne Loftus; 2) Eleanor, da. Marmaduke Whitechurch, Dromiskin, Louth;

Kt. 1617;

M.P. Charlemont 1613, Armagh County 1634.<sup>206</sup>

Faithful came to Ireland with his uncle, Sir Arthur Chichester, later lord Deputy, under whom he commanded a regiment of foot. He was the Chichesters'\* cousin (including Wray's\* wife), Chichester's\* father, father-in-law of Culme\* and Meredith's\* brother Thomas, and Poyntz's\* uncle-by-marriage. The Moore\* network was extensive, and included Whyte\*, Gifford\*, De Renzi\*, Digby\*, Blayney\*, King\*, Boyle\* and the Loftuses\*. With Francis Blundell,<sup>207</sup> he was granted benefit of intrusions and alienations in Cork in 1610 and in the following year the wardship of Charles (Callough) O'Connor Sligo. He acquired lands in Louth (where he lived at Dromiskin on lands of the Archbishop of Armagh), Antrim (where his 1,000 acres was formed into the manor of Fortescue, most of which was sold by 1624) and Down, and had strong personal and business connections with other local settler families, including his in-laws the Moores\* and Whitechurch.<sup>208</sup> He was a member of the 1624-5 commissions for the peace in Louth and Antrim. His military career, begun under his uncle, continued for most of his life. He was joint governor of Carrickfergus, a town controlled by Chichester, in 1606, and later sole governor. In 1624 he was appointed to a command in the Low Countries, although he and his troop were based at Dromiskin three years later. Wentworth sent him to inspect garrisons in Leinster in 1633 and he was a member of the council of war which condemned Mountnorris two years later. He was governor of Drogheda before the 1641 siege in which his sons were killed and captain in the third troop raised for Lord Philip Wharton's campaign in Ireland. He later crossed to England and joined William Waller's parliamentary regiment as a major. He fought on the royalist side at

<sup>205</sup> His birthdate is given as 1581, but if his parents married in September 1584 as reported and Faithful was a younger son his birthdate should not be earlier than 1586. He is unlikely to have come to Ireland at the age of 13 or less, however, so it is probable that the earlier date is correct. W. Drake, *Notes genealogical, historical and heraldic of the family of Chichester*. (London, 1888). pp 245,350.

<sup>206</sup> He was an unsuccessful candidate for Dundalk in 1634.

<sup>207</sup> father of George\*.

<sup>208</sup> m.p. Carlingford, 1613, and a close associate of the Poyntz\* family. McGrath, 1613. pp 56-7.



Edgehill and in Prince Rupert's army; he also fought at Worcester in 1651. He survived to become a gentleman of the privy chamber to Charles II.

ROBERT FORTH (FORD, FORTHE), (1602-1667), Kilbeggan  
e.s. Sir Ambrose Forth (d. 1610) and Anne (d. c1649), da. Thomas Cusack, Lismullan, she rem. 1) Christopher Nugent (d. 1626), Corbetstown, s. Christopher, Lord Delvin; 2) Valerian Weasley, Dangan; m. by 1638, \_\_\_\_\_, at least 1 s. John;  
Kt. by 28 January 1629.  
M.P. Meath 1661.

Robert's grandfather and namesake was clerk of the hanaper and his grandmother, Elizabeth Shee, was a member of a wealthy Kilkenny family. Ambrose Forth was master in chancery (1579) and judge of the admiralty (1591) and his first wife, Margaret Greydon, was the daughter of a former mayor of Dublin. Robert was the Cusacks'\* cousin, and his mother's later marriages connected him with most of the prominent Meath families. Through his sister Margaret's marriage, he was John Moore's\* uncle and Digby's\* brother-in-law, and also linked to the De Renzi\*, Dempsey\*, Coughlan\*, Moore\*, Sambach\*, Loftus\* and St. George\* families. He inherited lands in King's County, Meath and Dublin from his father. The Meath church lands alone provided him with an annual income of £95; he acquired other lands in King's County from his brother-in-law Thomas Moore in 1633, some of which he held with William Ussher\* and Adam Cusack\*. He also held lands in Monaghan from the 1620s and was sheriff there in 1629; he presumably had connections also with Cavan, as he was a commissioner to raise money for the army there in 1627, and in January 1629 wrote to Falkland on behalf of the "*poorer sort of ye inhabitants of ye counties of Meath and Cavan.*"<sup>209</sup> He also had property in Kildare and served as sheriff of Dublin City in 1638-9. The *Civil Survey* for Meath gives his address as Tullamore and it was in his house there that the County Council of the Irish of King's County sat in May 1642. He became a privy councillor some time before 1640. In 1644 he was a commissioner for inquiring into and seizing the goods of the Irish rebels in London. In the following year he and Sir Francis Willoughby were examining witnesses about the surrender of Duncannon Fort. The

<sup>209</sup> B.L. MS. SL. 3827, f. 155; see also N.A. MS. 2445, p. 46.



Confederation declared his lands forfeit in 1647 and granted his King's County property to a John Sweetman. He appears to have played very little part in public affairs in the 1650s but was a commissioner for the settlement of Ireland. He became constable of Philipstown before 1660, commissioner for the poll money ordnance in Meath in 1661 and was one of those responsible for issuing licences to possess gunpowder in King's and Queen's Counties. He had no known connection with Kilbeggan, but his wife's identity is unknown and she may have provided a local link.

PATRICK FRENCH (1587-1606-1654+), Wexford

e.s. Nicholas French, (d. 1606), Bellentra, Wexford; m. \_\_\_\_\_;

ed. Trinity College Dublin;

M.P. Wexford 1634.

Patrick was still a minor at the time of his father's death and his wardship was granted to William Laugharne in 1608. Despite his presumed education in Trinity College, he remained a catholic and was a cousin of Nicholas French, Bishop of Ferns from 1645. He inherited property in Wexford from his father and by the 1630s had a mortgage on William Browne's\* property. He was a merchant, alderman, and mayor of Wexford in 1636. His fellow townsman and 1634 burgess Turner, complained that French broke parliamentary privilege in December 1634. He represented Wexford County in the 1642 General Assembly and was one of the chief supporters of the Confederation. He was receiver general of money in Wexford, and was described as "*one of ye prime and forwardest men in ye towne of Wexford in all ye transactions [of the Confederation].*"<sup>210</sup> He fought at Duncannon, and, like other aldermen, took responsibility for the defence of part of the town (in his case, St. Patrick's parish), during the rebellion. He was collector of customs in the port from 1643 until replaced by his son Nicholas at the instance of his cousin Bishop Nicholas in 1645. He was in the town when it was taken by Cromwell in 1649. Both his sons, Nicholas and Thomas, served the Confederation in a man of war.

---

210 T.C.D. MS. 819, f. 5r.



JOHN FURLONG, (d. 1642-6.) Wexford

e.s. Patrick Furlong and Katherine da. Patrick Stafford; m. - 1617, Katherine da. James Furlong, Horetown;  
M.P. Wexford 1634.<sup>211</sup>

The Furlongs were a prominent local family and John and his wife were both descended from the Horetown branch. They provided one county member in 1613, when his brother-in-law Richard Talbot represented the town. The Waddings, another local family with a strong tradition of parliamentary representation, were also relatives. He lived at Bregerton (Beganstown) and was an alderman and mayor of Wexford in 1636. He claimed lands in Wexford from the estate of Thomas Furlong in 1638; he inherited land in Wexford, including 2490 acres at Horetown, 100 acres in Ardeanrush (Shelmaliere Baron) and 65 acres in Forth; together they were valued at over £51 annually and were declared forfeit when he was indicted for rebellion in 1642.

JAMES GALBRAITH, Strabane

2 s. Robert Galbraith, East Lothian; m. Elizabeth \_\_\_\_\_ ; James d. 1649-54.<sup>212</sup>  
M.P. Killybegs, 1634.

The brothers James, William, Robert and Humphrey Galbraith, sons of a lord of session in Edinburgh, came to Ireland in the early 17th. century; Hill suggests that they were related to another Scottish settler family, the Colqhouns. Humphrey was a clergyman and was reported absent from his Clogher benefice in 1622. James settled in Fermanagh by 1606.<sup>213</sup> He appears as a member of a number of commissions, established between 1628 and 1631, to investigate the state of lands granted in the Ulster plantation. Around the same time he entered a recognisance of £256 for his brothers' appearance to answer charges of having killed their fellow Scottish settler, Sir John Wemys, sheriff of Fermanagh in 1627, and for two other compatriots, George Hume and Bishop Spottswood, in the case. Humphrey and William Galbraith were described as Spottswood's "servants and

<sup>211</sup> John replaced his neighbour Richard Cheevers.

<sup>212</sup> The *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, XII, pp 238ff states that he died in 1661, but the Civil Survey states that his property was inherited by his brothers by 1654. *Civil Survey, Donegal*, p. 31.

<sup>213</sup> His wife was buried in Aghalurcher with three of their children, in September 1609. *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, XI, p. 51.



agents": the Wemys/Spottswood case proved intractable, and James went to London to enlist the help of their cousin, Archibald Acheson, one of the Scottish secretaries.<sup>214</sup> He lived at Mongauttlin, Donegal and bought lands in Raphoe. His main connections were his fellow Scots - all four of his daughters married Hamiltons\* - but his local standing may be judged by Tirlagh O'Neill considering him as a possible peace-maker between the Scots and the Irish in 1641. Humphrey provided another connection by marrying Gore's\* sister Isabella. Sir James Montgomery\* sent him to Edinburgh to tell Charles of the outbreak of the rebellion; he returned with a commission for a regiment of 1,000 foot and a troop of horse. He was serjeant-major of Lord Conway's regiment and, with Mervyn\*, went to the relief of Augher in 1641. He was a commissioner from the parliament to bring corn supplies to Londonderry in the following year. Later that year he was at Manor Hamilton, where he remained into 1643. He was still part of Conway's regiment two years later. A Lieut. colonel Galbraith was taken prisoner by Coote\* near Derry in June 1649.

RICHARD GETHINGS (GITTINGS) (?1615<sup>215</sup> -1685), Clonmel m. 1641, Sarah, da. Arthur Freke, Cork and Dorothy, da. Sir Richard Smith, Ballinatray and Rathcogan (Waterford and Cork), and Mary, sister of Lord Cork. Bart. 1665. M.P. Limavaddy 1661.

Gethings's parentage is unknown, but he may have been Welsh; he was presumably related to Absalom Gethings, Chancellor of Lismore in 1607. Richard arrived in Ireland before 1631, when he first witnessed a St. Leger\* deed. He was secretary to two Munster presidents, St. Leger\* and Inchiquin and collector of Munster composition rent in 1633. His closeness to St. Leger\* is shown by his witnessing the 1635 marriage settlement of John St. Leger and Mary Chichester. By 1644 he was deputy clerk of the council of Munster. He lived at Ballhandrewe (Mallow), Fermoy Barony.<sup>216</sup> His deposition claimed losses of

<sup>214</sup> Hume's father, Sir John, and Spottswood's son, Sir Henry, were m.p.s for Fermanagh and Clogher respectively in 1634. For the Wemys / Spottswood case, see R. Gillespie, *The Trials of Bishop Spottiswood, 1620-40*. *Clogher Record*, XII(3), (1987). pp 320-33.

<sup>215</sup> The *Baronetage* gives his birth as 1615; this would make him improbably young at the time of his entry to the St. Leger\* circle. The correct date is probably 1610 or earlier. *Baronetage*, IV, p.201.

<sup>216</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 824*, f. 112r, describes him as "late of Doneraile", but this presumably related to his service with St. Leger\*, whose home was at Doneraile.



£180 for goods, cows and horses, £40 for household goods and plate, lands valued at £60 annually after rent, debts of £160 and £200. He also made claims for St. Leger\*. He was an associate of his uncle by marriage, Sir Piercey Smyth, (who connected him to the extensive Boyle network, including Boyle\*, Crowe\*, Digby\* and the Loftus\* and Parsons\* families) and of Perceval. By 1663 he was also described as Maurice Eustace's\* kinsman. He remained in Ireland in the 1640s, attaining the rank of captain in the Munster army, although his activities appear to have been confined to administration and organising supplies. He petitioned the English Commons for money in 1649. He was examined by the High Court of Justice in Kilkenny in October 1652, about a trunk of papers including depositions from Munster. He was living in Cork in February 1654 and was included in a list of loyal officers in Munster.<sup>217</sup> He was classed as a '49 Officer and, on the restoration, was summoned to England to give evidence about the activities of some regicides. In 1660 he became clerk of the crown for Cork and Kerry and in the following year was commissioner for the Poll Money Ordinance in County Cork. He was a popular man, as, apart from being trusted by men as dissimilar as St. Leger\* and Inchiquin, he is described as "honest Dick Gethings" by more than one contemporary. Despite his close association with men as noted for efficiency in acquiring property as Perceval, he does not appear to have amassed a fortune. He did, however, establish an estate in Cork. He had no connection with Clonmel before his return and, like his fellow burgess, Smyth\*, was sworn a freeman a month after his election.<sup>218</sup>

SEAFOWL (SEAFOLL, SEAFOULD, SEAFOWL) GIBSON, Thomastown m. \_\_\_\_\_;<sup>219</sup> at least 1 da.; d. 1672; bur. Drogheda.

Gibson was a Scottish soldier, and, although his parentage is unknown, his name suggests a link with the family of the Earl of Seaforth.<sup>220</sup> He is best known for his military activities in the 1640s; he may have gained some of his

<sup>217</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 825*, f. 171r-v; Caulfield, *Cork*, pp 1178-9.

<sup>218</sup> *N.L.I. MS. 19,171*, f. 319.

<sup>219</sup> His wife's name is unknown, but their daughter married Otto Southcott.

<sup>220</sup> He does not appear in any of the standard accounts of the Scottish Peerage, but the common 17th. century practice of giving children the same names as their godparents suggests that he was a godson of the Earl or Countess of Seaforth or Seafould or a member of that family. The Scottish connection may also explain his link with Ormond, as he may have been known to Ormond through his wife, Elizabeth Preston, or her cousin, Wemys\*.



military experience as captain in the 1625 Cadiz expedition. He was a captain in Brome's\* regiment in 1640; this was one of Ormond's regiments in the new army and it was presumably the earl's influence that ensured his return for Thomastown. Most of his interests, personal and military, seem to have been concentrated in Louth and Meath. He held 112 acres in Duleek Barony, Meath in 1641. He was a witness at Strafford's trial. He was left in charge of Drogheda before Tichbourne's arrival there in October 1641 and continued defending the city in 1641-2. His activities are sometimes difficult to distinguish from Col. Richard Gibson, who was also active in Ireland in the 1640s. He may have been the lieut. col. Gibson who brought 1,200 troops to join Lord Lisle near Navan in 1642, and who was fighting near Trim and Kilkenny that summer. He brought Valerian Weasley and his son as prisoners to Dublin that June; later in the same year he relieved Ormond at Lisscarroll. He was serjeant major in Lord Moore's regiment in 1643 and sheriff of Louth in 1645; two years later he was reported missing after the skirmish of Balruddery. He reappeared by 1649 and was again seeking a command in Ireland. In 1653 he issued certificates confirming service during the rebellion, including one for George Peppard of Louth. Two years later, as Seafole Gibson of Dublin, he borrowed £2,000 from Coote\* though a bond on the Dublin Staple. In 1661 he is reported to have been preventing the Irish from returning to their houses in Dublin. He was granted 1362 acres in the Act of Settlement. At the time of his death he was based in Drogheda, and also held property in County Cork; he was still claiming arrears of pay worth £4,461 6s. 1d.

JOHN GIFFORD (-1599-1659), Jamestown

e.s. Richard Gifford (d. 1598), Ballymagarrett, Roscommon and Castle Jordan, Meath, and Mary, da. Sir Henry Duke and \_\_\_\_ Moore, (she rem. 1) Francis Rushe;<sup>221</sup> 2) Sir John Jephson); m. Giles (d. 1657), da. John Jephson, Mallow; 1s.; Kt. 1636.

Gifford's family came to Ireland in the sixteenth century and his mother's marriages connected him to the Crofton\*, Loftus\*, Wentworth\*, Piggott\* and Brabazon families, and the entire Perceval network, including Kingsmill\*, Fitzgerald\* and Dobbins\*, and he was also related to the Moores\*.

<sup>221</sup> privy councillor and m.p. for King's County in 1613. McGrath, 1613. p. 53.



His sisters Mary, Catherine and Elizabeth married Coote\*, St. George\* and William Colley, and his half-sisters Eleanor and Frances Rushe married Robert Loftus\* and Wentworth\* respectively. His return may be attributed to the interests of his brothers-in-law Coote\* and St. George\* in Leitrim. Before 1640, he was perhaps best known for his public dispute with Lord Chancellor Loftus, who failed to provide the money he had promised to settle on Eleanor on her marriage. His lawyers in the case were Sir Nathaniel Catlin, Sambach\* and Nicholas Plunkett\*. He was apparently on better terms with Loftus by August 1639, when they jointly signed a bond on the Dublin Staple. He was a soldier and may have been part of the ill-fated 1625 Cadiz expedition. He was a captain in 1635 and serjeant major of brigades and lieutenant colonel, at a combined daily salary of £1, in Lord Dillon's\* regiment in 1640; in that August he was made a freeman of Belfast, with other officers in the new army. On the outbreak of the rebellion, he was besieged at Castlejordan and he and his mother were evicted from the castle. His mother had some property in Kilmaine, Kildare, and the protestant residents of that area successfully appealed to him for assistance against the Irish rebels in late 1641-early 1642. In 1643 he was lieut. colonel in Lord Esmond's regiment. In September 1645 he was taken prisoner at Chester but was back in Ireland, fighting with Inchiquin, as a major of horse in Limerick in July and September 1647. He was put from his command in 1647 and in the following year was imprisoned for plotting to take Dublin. He later served Charles in Holland. Promised grants of land (including Sir Lucas Fitzgerald's\* estate at Tecroghan, and property in Tipperary) failed to materialise, and he died in 1659, with his son attributing his death to "*imprisonment and morose usage*"<sup>222</sup> by Cromwell.

WILLIAM GILBERT sr., (1599-1654), Maryborough

2 s. Thomas Gilbert, Derby; m. Catherine, da. Peyton Castillon; at least 5 da., 3 s.;

Kt. by 1630;

M.P. Maryborough 1634.

Gilbert came to Ireland c.1622 when he was appointed constable of Maryborough, a post he still held at the time of his death; he was included in the 1625 army lists as an ensign. As a cousin of Sir John Coke, the English privy

<sup>222</sup> *Cal.S.P.Ire.*, 1660-2, pp 47,177.



councillor responsible for Irish affairs, he had influential connections in England. He lived in the fort of Maryborough and at his house at Kilminchy, near that town, on lands he was granted in 1627. Four years later a William Eyre was licensed to alienate other lands in Queen's County to him. The deposition filed on his behalf by his son Henry claimed losses of annual rents and profits of £400, and other losses amounting to over £4,000.<sup>223</sup> His children (including William\*) married into the new English settler community, including the local Barrington and Digby\* families; his son Henry married Champion's\* widow. He was heavily involved in local affairs, as commissioner to collect money for the army in Queen's county in 1627 and j.p. from 1624 to 1642 at least. In 1633 he made an unsuccessful bid for the post of assistant to the King's secretary in Ireland. He encouraged John Pigott's\* wife to continue to hold out against the siege of Burrige early in 1642, although there were allegations that he dealt leniently with local rebels.<sup>224</sup> Some of his daughters were captives in August 1643. With his son William\*, he was active in the defence of Maryborough in the wars, especially during its siege of 1646. He or his son was included in Lord Esmond's regiment in 1643. He was in Dublin in January and April 1653 and February 1654, taking examinations (including some concerning John Piggot's\* murder) as a member of the high court of justice. He should not be confused with his namesake, clerk of the council of Connaught and surveyor of plantations from 1639.<sup>225</sup>

WILLIAM GILBERT Jr. (-1614<sup>226</sup> -1659-74), Trinity College Dublin  
 e.s. Sir William Gilbert\*, and Catherine, da. Peyton Castillon; m. \_\_\_\_\_;

<sup>223</sup> Deposition of Lieut. Henry Gilbert, Knockinay (Knockmoy), Queen's County, 1 January 1644, *T.C.D. MS. 815*, ff 118v-9v,328r-9r.

<sup>224</sup> Depositions of his tenant, Ann Mosley and others, and a claim that his wife sent one of their children and two of their grandchildren to live with a Mr. Moore, who lived among the rebels. *T.C.D. MS. 815*, ff 91r-2v,121v,361r-2v,365.

<sup>225</sup> This was William of Locko, Derbyshire, who lived in Dublin; his will, dated 25 September 1649, was proved on 25 January 1650. *B.L. MS. Add. 6674*, f. 92r, *P.R.O.L., Prob. 11/211/6*, *Cal.S.P.Ire.*, 1633-47, p. 279; *Cal.S.P.Ire.*, 1660-2, p. 158. Radcliffe\* recommended a Mr. William Gilbert, a good mathematician, (presumably this man) to Lord Conway in December 1641. William may have been the commissary of the artillery in Ireland in 1642, who was paid £600 for supplies in July of that year, and/or the Major Gilbert who was claiming a debt in 1648. *Cal.S.P.Ire.*, 1633-47, p. 365; *Cal.S.P.Ire.*, 1647-60, p. 28.

<sup>226</sup> His brother Henry was 28 in January 1644, so William's date of birth must have been before 1614. *T.C.D. MS. 815*, ff 118v-9v,328r-9r.



EDWARD William was a soldier in his father's regiment based at Maryborough, holding the rank of lieutenant by 1642. He was active with his father in the defence of Maryborough in 1646. He was a commissioner to raise money in Meath under the Assessment for Ireland in the second quarter of 1659 and was classed as a '49 Officer. He lived at Fearnmoyle, Queen's County and his castle there was captured by rebels in June 1642 when he was in Dublin on business. He claimed £921 for damage and losses there.<sup>227</sup> His siblings' marriages connected him to Digby\* and other local settler families. His brother Henry married Champion's\* widow.

RALPH GORE (1608+-1642), Donegal County  
e.s. Sir Paul Gore (d. 1629) and Isabella Wycliffe; m. c. 1640, Anne, da. William Caulfield, Lord Charlemont, and Mary, da. Sir John King and Catherine, da. Robert Drury; s. Edward b. 1642;  
2nd. Bart, 1629;

Ralph's father was a soldier who came to Ireland before 1609 when he was granted lands in Donegal; he was m.p. for Ballyshannon in 1613.<sup>228</sup> Ralph lived on lands inherited from his father at Magherabeg (Manor Gore) and Dromenagh, and also held lands in Fermanagh. He had good connections with the establishment; through his mother, he was Strafford's nephew and therefore related to Wentworth\* and the Wandesfords\*. His own marriage made him Caulfield's\* brother in-law and King's\* nephew (who provided links with Wingfield\* and Burnell\*). His sisters' marriages to Galbraith's\* brother and to Rev. Archibald Areskine (Erskine)<sup>229</sup> linked him to the Scottish settler community in west Ulster. His brother married St. George's\* daughter. In October 1641 his house was captured by rebels. He was commissioned to raise troops in Donegal and made a captain of a regiment of 500 men; he was active against the rebels in Tyrone in late 1641 and died in the following year.

<sup>227</sup> Deposition of William Gilbert, 11 June 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 815*, ff 55r,198.

<sup>228</sup> McGrath, 1613. pp 105-6.

<sup>229</sup> Erskine was the son and brother of the 1634 m.p.s for Tyrone and Augher respectively, and a cousin of the Earl of Mar.



EDWARD GOUGH, (d. 1643+) Youghal  
s. \_\_\_\_\_ Gough; m. - 1617, \_\_\_\_\_; at least 1 s.  
M.P. Youghal 1634.

The Goughs were an old Munster family whose members represented Waterford and Tipperary constituencies in previous parliaments. Edward lived in King Street, Youghal, where he was a prominent burgess. He became an alderman before 1611, when he lost his position as bailiff for refusing to take the oath of supremacy. He was mayor in 1622 but refused the office in 1636, incurring a fine of £10. His son James was admitted freeman of Youghal in 1639. In 1634 he was a witness to the will of his fellow burgess Thomas Ronayne. He contributed £6 to supplies for the King's (Confederate) army in 1642, and was rated at £30 for the relief of soldiers in the following year.

RICHARD HALEY (HALY, HALYE) (d. 1644+) Cashel  
s. \_\_\_\_\_ Haley, Cashel;  
ed. Inner Temple, 1608;

A member of an important local family,<sup>230</sup> Richard spent some time in military service in the Low Countries after his time at the Inns of Court, and returned home to become recorder of Cashel. He inherited 64 acres in Cashel, valued at £3 annually and also leased church lands there. He was a member of a jury which met at Clonmel in 1634 and was agent for the town in 1636. He and his brother supported the Confederation and were members of the 1644 General Assembly.

The Hamilton family was first established in Ireland by James Hamilton (later Lord Clandeboy)<sup>231</sup> and his brothers, who arrived in 1587. The brothers acquired lands in Down and, with their fellow Scots, the Montgomeries\*, dominated that county although they also spread into Cavan and Armagh. The Hamiltons regularly provided county members for Down and controlled a number of boroughs, including Bangor and Killyleagh. Other

<sup>230</sup> His brother Dr. John Haley was m.p. for Cashel in 1613 and 1634. McGrath, 1613. p. 82.

<sup>231</sup> M.P. for Down County in 1613. McGrath, 1613. pp 106-7.



Hamilton cousins also settled in Ireland, including Sir Alexander, who was granted lands in Cavan in the plantation, and Malcolm, who acquired lands in Fermanagh. All the m.p.s were descended from these branches of the family.

ARCHIBALD<sup>232</sup> HAMILTON (?1604-1659), Armagh

e.s. Malcolm Hamilton (d. 1629), Archbishop of Cashel (1623-9), and Mary, da. Robert Wilkie, Sachtonhill; m. after 1629, Anne, da. Lord Glenawley, w. of Sir John Wemys (d. 1628);<sup>233</sup> o.s.p.

ed. Trinity College Dublin, B.A. (1621), M.A. (1624).

Archibald's father was a former royal chaplain, who settled in Ireland by 1615 when he bought 1,500 acres in Fermanagh for £530; Malcolm was succeeded as archbishop by another Archibald Hamilton. His father's ecclesiastical connections ensured his election for an episcopal seat but, with such strong connections in Tyrone and Fermanagh, it is surprising that he should have represented a constituency with which he had such an indirect link. He held lands in Tyrone from 1622 and lived at Ballygally (Ballygalby) there; he concluded a surrender and regrant agreement in 1629, when the property was created a manor. His 1530 acres there were assessed at £12 8s. 9d. annual crown rent and his 110 acres of church lands at £4 10s.; a further 472 acres were assessed at £12. He also had property in Fermanagh, conveyed to him by his father in 1626. He received his denization in 1629. He executed a bond at the Dublin Staple in November 1640. He was active in the fighting of the the early 1640s, defending Augher in 1641, when he was described as a brave soldier. He also foraged in Monaghan. His family history claims that his lands were forfeit in 1656 as he was a stated to be a papist, but the *Civil Survey* describes him as a Scottish protestant, and his younger brother Hugh, Baron Hamilton of Glenawley, a soldier in the Swedish service, inherited his lands.

FRANCIS HAMILTON (1606-1673), Jamestown

e.s. Sir Claud Hamilton (d. 1618), Creichness, Scotland, and Cloryn, Cavan, and Jane, da. Robert Lauder; she rem. Sir Arthur Forbes; m. 1) Laetitia (Nicola), da. Sir

<sup>232</sup> *G.O. MS. 162*, pp 86-88 gives Archibald's name as Ludovic.

<sup>233</sup> Wemys was murdered, and Galbraith's\* brothers were implicated in his death.



Charles Coote\* and Dorothea, da. Hugh Cuffe, Cuffeswood, Cork; 2) Elizabeth, da. Archbishop Randolph Barlow, Tuam, w. William Hay (d. 1635), and Sir Francis Willoughby (d. 1658);  
Kt. 1628; Bart. 1628.  
M.P. Cavan County 1661-6.

Francis was a third generation settler and inherited property from his father and grandfather, Sir Alexander Hamilton, who had received lands in Cavan in 1610. Francis was granted £2,000 out of undertakers' fines in 1628. In 1631 he was granted extensive property in Cavan, including 2,000 acres at Tullyhunco; he also had property at Killaugh, County Down. He did not always have quiet possession of his lands - Bedell instituted legal proceedings against him and Sir Edward Bagshawe<sup>234</sup> for recovery of some episcopal lands in Cavan. Despite his Scottish background,<sup>235</sup> most of his connections were new English and his first wife's links with Leitrim explain his return for Jamestown. The Cootes\* had lands in the county and were closely associated with St. George\* and Gifford\*. His second wife supplied a link with Wemys\* but also with Coote\*, as her first husband was father-in-law of Chidley Coote (son of Charles\* sr., and brother of Charles\* jr.), whose second wife was Philips's\* sister. Another Coote, Thomas, married Arthur Hill's\* sister. Like his in-laws, he was heavily involved in the upheavals of the 1640s, acting with Sir James Craig to defend Cavan in 1642, when his castle was a refuge for protestants from Ulster and farther afield. In the following year his foot company, which was part of Ormond's regiment quartered in Dublin, was chosen to serve Charles in England, although some troops refused to go. With Coote\* and William Parsons\*, he was an agent of the protestants of Ireland to Charles in 1643-4. In summer 1645 he was still in England, raising troops to complete his Irish regiment; during his stay there he gave evidence at Lord Maguire's trial. That October he fought with Coote\* at Sligo. He remained in Ireland in the 1650s. He borrowed £1,080 from Arthur Annesley through a bond on the Dublin Staple in February 1656. He was a commissioner for the poll money ordnance in Cavan in 1660 and 1661 and *custos rotullorum* in the latter year. Not all of his offices after the restoration were local ones: he was still included in the list of the standing troops of Ireland,

---

234 A settler from Derbyshire, based in Dublin and Monaghan, and m.p. for Banagher in 1634.

235 His tombstone claims descent from the Hamiltons of Innerwick and kinship with the Earls of Angus, Mar and Douglas. *Irish memorials of the dead*, IV, pp 201-5.



and a privy councillor from 1661 and a trustee for the '49 officers. He may also have been a groom of the bedchamber. He was exporting wool in 1663 and received a grant of money in 1666. Three years later he was in Scotland.

JAMES HAMILTON (1617-1646)            Bangor

e.s. William Hamilton, Newcastle, and Jean, da. Sir John Melville and Margaret, da. Sir William Scot, Balwaearie; m. Margaret, da. Francis Kynaston (d. 1633), Saul, and Katherine, da. John Trevor, Brynkynalt, Denbyshire;

James's father was a brother of the first Lord Clandeboy and acted as his agent. He was the first 'mayor' of Bangor in 1612 and lived there at Newcastle, William received his denization in 1617. James was John Hamilton's\* cousin; his mother linked him to Melville\*, another local settler whose family had an impressive history as servants of the Scottish crown. His marriage forged links with the local new English settler community, allying him with the Bagnals and Trevors\* as well as the Usshers\*. He lived at Ballycloghan. A soldier by profession, he died at the battle of Benburb and was buried with Lord Blayney in Benburb Church. Either James or John\* could have been the Captain Hamilton who was active in Down at Candlemas 1642.

JOHN HAMILTON (1613-7-1650+)            Bangor<sup>236</sup>

e.s. Archibald Hamilton (d. 1639), and Rachael Carmichael, Crawford; m. \_\_\_\_\_ West, Lecale, Co. Down.

John's father was another brother of the first Lord Clandeboy, and he was James's\* cousin. He had 21 siblings and inherited lands in Scotland and Ireland from his father. His main property was at Ballygrott and Ballyskelly, Down and Halcraig, Lanarkshire. He neglected his education and overspent in his youth, being friendly with those "*above his station and estate*"<sup>237</sup> and was forced to sell his Scottish estates. Through his wife he was connected to another local settler family, although of English, rather than Scottish origin.<sup>238</sup> His

<sup>236</sup> A new writ was issued for Bangor in May, but rescinded in June, 1641.

<sup>237</sup> G. Hamilton, *A History of the House of Hamilton*. (Edinburgh, 1933). pp 986-8.

<sup>238</sup> The Wests came to Ireland as soldiers in Lord Cromwell's forces. Roger West was m.p. for Downpatrick in 1613. McGrath, 1613. p. 108.



brother Robert was Meredith's\* son-in-law. He was a captain of horse in the 1640s, commanding a regiment at Carrickfergus in 1641, and was lieut. colonel to Lord Crawford and Lindsay's regiment in Ulster, being elected commissioner to represent the regiment in Edinburgh in April 1644. His regiment (formed to replace the troops who had accepted the 1643 cessation) was based in Lecale in the following year, but by 1646 there were demands for its disbandment in protest at the "oppression" of the inhabitants of Ulster who had to support it. His troops were still with Monroe in 1649 and 1650. He was captured by Cromwellians at Lisnagarvey in December 1649 and it was suggested that he would be hanged as an example. His fate is unclear, although his family history states that he was drowned. Either James\* or John could have been the Captain Hamilton who was active in Down at Candlemas 1642.

THOMAS HARMAN, Carlow / Coleraine

3 s. Henry Harman, Dublin and Carlow, and Marie \_\_\_\_\_; m. Anne Jones;

Kt. 1664;

d. 1667; bur. Christ Church, Dublin.

M.P. Kildare County, 1661-6.

Thomas had links with both constituencies - his family ties were with Carlow, where his grandfather, Nicholas Harman, (examinator of the Munster Presidency from 1603) was an original burgess in 1612 and sheriff in 1619 and 1620. His older brother Edward was sheriff in 1633 (despite which he was m.p. for Carlow in 1634) and 1643. He lived at Athy on the Kildare / Carlow borders. He also had links with Coleraine and expressed concern in 1635 at the presence of a beneficed priest in every parish of the Londonderry Plantation. His closeness to the Wentworths\*<sup>239</sup> presumably explains his double return. A soldier, he was a corporal in 1640, at a salary of 6/- *per diem*, and captain and lieutenant in Willoughby's and Wentworth's\* regiments in 1641-3, after which he served under Ormond until 1650. He fought at Castle Tipper and Kilrush in 1642 and, thanks, presumably, to Ormond's influence, received a patent for the office of auditor and assistant commissioner for the accounts of the army in the following year. Like Francis Butler\*, he was one of the group of 'Irish' soldiers in Wales

---

<sup>239</sup> His son was called Wentworth Harman, perhaps a godson of the deputy or his brother George\*.



captured at Nantwich, Cheshire, in 1644. He was overseeing troops at Waterford in 1646, and commanded Carlow in the following year, by which time he had attained the rank of major. He joined Ormond in Dublin after Carlow fell to Preston; he was commander of Gowran at the time of its surrender in 1650. He prospered on the restoration, receiving considerable grants of land under the Act of Settlement. He was a commissioner for the Poll Money Ordnance in 1660-1 in Kildare. He became a trustee for managing the securities allotted to the '49 Officers and captain of the lord deputy's lifeguards. He remained close to the Ormonds, writing from Clonmel to Lady Ormond about her estates in November 1660. He received a general pardon in 1666. He visited the Barbardoes in the following year.

ROBERT HARPOLE (HARTPOLE), (1607-1649) Carlow  
e.s.s. George Harpole, Shrule, and Mabel Cosby; m. Katherine, da. Thomas Luttrell, Luttrellstown, Dublin and Eleanor Preston;

Harpole was a member of a catholic new English family which was based in Carlow since the mid 16th. century. Harpoles were sheriffs of the county seven times between 1571 and 1609. He was closely connected with many new and old English and Gaelic families; his links with the Loftuses\* were particularly strong - his sister married Adam\* and Nicholas's\* Loftus's brother Edward, and Ellen Harpole was Dudley's\* mother; Robert was also Cosby's\* cousin. Through his wife, he was related to Lord Gormanston.<sup>240</sup> His namesake and ancestor, the constable of Carlow who died in 1594, married Grania O'Byrne. He inherited his property in Carlow and Queen's Counties, including his castle at Shrule<sup>241</sup> from his father and received livery of his estates in 1632. He signed bonds on the Dublin Staple in 1639 and 1641. He was questioned by the Lords Justice on the outbreak of the rebellion, but "*permitted to depart upon his faire protestations, notwithstanding they had intelligence of his former [sic] being with the rebels.*"<sup>242</sup> In fact, he remained aloof from the rebellion in its early months, sheltering protestants but only, it was said, if they agreed to attend mass.

<sup>240</sup> His father-in-law represented Dublin County in 1613 and 1634. McGrath, 1613. p. 46.

<sup>241</sup> built c1620; it was actually in Queen's County, but only two miles from Carlow town.

<sup>242</sup> \_\_\_\_\_, *An Abstract of some few of the those barbarous, cruell massacres and murthers of the protestants and English in some parts of Ireland committed since the 23. of October 1641.* (London, 1662). p. 4



His wife persuaded him to join his co-religionists in Lent 1642 and he began to prepare for fighting, having pikes made in his house and travelling to Wexford in May to buy 20lb. of gunpowder for £5. He sent a servant to Galway to buy two more barrels. He was a captain in the Confederate army in June 1642 and fought at the battle of Kilrush; he besieged Newtown Castle, Cork, that summer. He was accused of ordering the death of English protestants near Kilfeckel, Queen's County, and in Carlow in 1642, and, in the following year, with Davills\*, of complicity in the death of Captain Walter Chambre. He was a member of the Leinster provincial council of the Confederation in 1642 and the 1644 and 1647 General Assemblies. He was included in a list of those thought fit to be employed by the Confederation in Queen's County in 1646. He died fighting at Drogheda.

THOMAS HENES (-1594-1659-71) (HENNES, HEYNES, HENNESY),<sup>243</sup> Fethard e.s. Richard Henes (d. 1615), Fethard; m. Anastasia Archer; M.P. Fethard 1634.

Henes was a burgess of Fethard, like his father, and inherited lands there at Coleman and Market Hill; he also held mortgages of £80 on the lands of Geoffrey Mockler in 1627 and 1628, and a lease from Mockler in 1631. He witnessed a deed of Sir John Everard in 1616.<sup>244</sup> He was a member of a number of parliamentary committees, including those concerned with transmitting the *Queries* to England and applotting money for agents there. He supported the Confederation, sitting in the 1644 and 1647 General Assemblies, and was commissioner for Confederate revenue in 1646 and a member of the Supreme Council two years later. The proprietors of Fethard retained their lands<sup>245</sup> so he was presumably not the Thomas Hennesy who was living in Clare in 1659. His will was proved in 1671.

---

<sup>243</sup> While the sources record variant spellings of his name, the family tombstone in Holy Trinity Church, Fethard, gives it as Henes.

<sup>244</sup> Both were important local landowners; Mockler was m.p. for Cross Tipperary in 1634, and Everarde was m.p. for Tipperary County in 1613, when he was the opposition candidate for speaker, and leader of the recusant faction. He was an eminent lawyer, removed from the bench because of his religion. He built the almshouses in Fethard, which stand next to the church there. McGrath, 1613. p. 80.

<sup>245</sup> They surrendered to Cromwell on very good terms. H.D. Galwey, Proprietors of Fethard, County Tipperary, 1641-1663. in *Ir. Gen.*, 6(1), (November 1980). pp 5-7.



ARTHUR HILL (1601-1663), Carysfort

y.s. Sir Moses Hill (d. 1630), Stranmillis, and Anne Grogan; m. 1), by 1631, Anne (d. 1637), da. Sir Richard Bolton, and Frances Walter, Stafford, England, or \_\_\_\_\_, da. Sir Patrick Barnwall; 2) Anne, da. Sir William Parsons\* and Elizabeth, da. Ald. John Lany, Dublin;

M.P.?Belfast 1634,<sup>246</sup> Down, Antrim and Armagh, 1654, Convention, Down; County Down 1661.

Arthur was a second generation settler whose father came to Ireland as a soldier with Essex in 1573 and remained, establishing himself in Antrim. Moses's closest associates were Marmaduke Whitechurch and Faithful Fortescue\*, who were also his fellow m.p.s in 1613, as was Richard Bolton.<sup>247</sup> Moses was apparently from London but through his wives (his first wife was a sister of Sorley Boy McDonnell) he had links with both the Scottish and Irish local communities. Peter Hill, Moses's eldest son by his first marriage, died in 1635, leaving a young son whose estates Arthur was to inherit in 1655.<sup>248</sup> Arthur's other connections were the Parsons\* and Boltons, both important families in the administration of Ireland. He signed a bond before the Dublin Staple with his brother-in-law Edward Bolton and Phelim O'Neill\* in June 1640. His sister Penelope married Lord Wilmot and a brother married Lord Antrim's sister. This connection, too, was to prove useful, as it was through Antrim's intercession that he received the wardship of Lord Iveagh in 1639 and may also explain his appointment, with Coote\*, as a commissioner to examine persons accused of bewitching the Duchess of Buckingham, in the following year. Moses Hill had extensive possessions in Antrim and Down and Arthur was able to build up substantial property there and in Louth, especially near Carrickfergus and Drogheda, where he was living in 1631. He was sheriff of Antrim in 1634, perhaps one of the reasons for his not being returned in that election. He was added to the 1640 Antrim commission for the peace. He raised troops for the new army in 1640 and in July 1641 received permission to take them to France for service, although he appears not to have done so. His Dublin residence near

---

<sup>246</sup> He was returned in a by-election for an unidentified constituency; possibly Belfast, which his connections with the Duchess of Buckingham might facilitate.

<sup>247</sup> Hill represented Antrim County and Bolton Dublin City, McGrath, 1613. pp 96,46.

<sup>248</sup> Or so it was reported, but a Peter Hill of Downpatrick, late sheriff of Down, and presumably a relative of Arthur, made a deposition in 1642, claiming losses of £3,804. *T.C.D. MS. 837*, ff 30v-37r.



Finglas was burnt in the early weeks of the rebellion. He originally inclined to support the king but later became a lukewarm parliamentarian. In 1642 he purchased arms in Scotland for use in Ireland (the costs were ordered to be paid by the Committee of Both Houses in 1646), and in October/November, with Mervyn\*, Waller\* and Sir James Montgomery\*, he formed a committee to petition Charles for support for the army in Ireland. In the following April he received a warrant to go to Oxford on Irish business, with King\* and William Jephson. He accepted the cessation. 1644 found him fighting with Munroe in Cavan, although he refused to take the Covenant, and he was deputed by the army to apply to Charles and the English parliament for help against the rebels. In March 1645, he was commanding a regiment of five troops of horse which were quartered in Lecale, and two years later was assisting the Derby House Committee in its dealings with adventurers. He was an agent from Monck to the English parliament in 1648, when he was imprisoned in London for a debt. He held a number of official positions in the 1650s, including acting with Rawdon\* as commissioner to assess revenue and sequestrations in Ulster in 1651; three years later he was still one of the commissioners for revenue in Belfast. He was active in the settlement of Ulster in 1653. With Coote\*, Waller\*, Meredith\*, King\* and others he was a member of the commission for the high court of justice in Kilkenny in the 1650s and a commissioner to collect the assessment for Ireland in Antrim and Down in the last quarter of 1654 and in the latter county in the second half of 1657. With Clotworthy and Rawdon\* he was selecting j.p.s in Down and Antrim in 1655 and in the following year was awarded £1,000 and a grant of lands in Down for his services to the Commonwealth. In 1659 he arbitrated a dispute between Rawdon\* and Ald. Parkhurst of London. His record under the Commonwealth proved no disadvantage on the restoration, when he became a privy councillor and commissioner for the court of claims and for inspecting customs and excise. He was also a commissioner for the poll money ordnance in Antrim and Down in 1660 and 1661.

THOMAS HILL [Armagh/ Donegal/ Ballyshannon/ Kilmallock]  
? m. Jane \_\_\_\_\_; bur. 25 January 1645, Dublin;  
d. 1667-72.



Thomas was first appointed cranner of Dublin in 1625 jointly with Henry Waterland but held the office alone by 1644 and was still cranner in 1667, when he was described as "*old and sickly*". He supplied 203 barrels of herring for the army in December 1642. He was owed £800 by Perceval in 1639, half of which was repaid before the rebellion; part of the sum was still outstanding in 1648. He signed a bond before the Dublin Staple with Terence Coughlan in May 1640. He was granted £10 by the Commons on 30 December 1641 for carrying a packet to England on the King's business. He was a close associate of Sir John Temple, whose mill at Kilmainham was used to grind corn for the army. His origins are unclear. He was apparently not related to Arthur Hill\*; as a protestant, he is unlikely to have been related to the catholic Sir William Hill of Allenton, Meath and he was presumably not from Thornton, Yorkshire, as it is improbable that a Yorkshireman would have been elected to the Commons in November 1640. O'Grady gives no authority for his statement that Hill was a Scottish non-conformist.<sup>249</sup> His will, as Thomas Hill of Dublin gent., was proved in 1672.

JOHN HOEY (HOY, HOYE) (-1611-1664) Wicklow

e.s. Serjeant John Hoye (d. 1612), and Maria, da. Ald. Brice, Drogheda; she rem. Roger Downton, William Sparke, Thomas Hibbotts and Lord Netterville;<sup>250</sup> m. Jane, da. Sir William Parsons\* and Elizabeth, da. Ald. John Lany, Dublin; ed. Lincoln's Inns, 1627; Kt. 1641.

M.P. Carysfort 1634, Convention, Kildare; Naas 1661.

The Hoeys were probably an old Gaelic family (O hEochaidh), but John and his family were anglicised protestants; through his mother he was presumably related to Brice\*, and her many marriages provided connections with a number of important members of the administration, and, lastly, with the old English Lord Netterville. His own wife brought him into the extensive and powerful Parsons\* network, and made him brother-in-law of William Plunkett\*,

<sup>249</sup> O'Grady, *Strafford and Ireland*. II, p. 934.

<sup>250</sup> Downton, a new English official, clerk of the pipe roll, m.p. for Limavady in 1613, and holder of lands in Cavan and Kildare, d. 1622, McGrath, 1613. p. 103; Sparke was a judge, Ball, *Judges*, I, p. 324. Hibbotts, sometime steward to Sir Arthur Chichester and chancellor of the exchequer, m.p. for Carrickfergus in 1613 and 1634, d. 1637, McGrath, 1613. pp 96-7; Netterville, see *Peerage*.



Arthur Hill\* and Captain William Parsons\*; he executed the latter's will. He acquired considerable property, especially in Dublin, Meath, Wicklow and Kildare, where he lived at Cotlandstown on lands bought by his mother from Thomas Hibbotts. The conditions of this sale were disputed and the vexed question of ownership was resolved by Wentworth at the council table. The dispute continued to be raised in both houses of the English parliament and it was in this context that he appeared as a witness in Strafford's trial, and the dispute with the Wentworths\* continued into the 1650s. His mother stated her losses due to the rebellion to be £8,951 in Kildare alone.<sup>251</sup> He also had property in Wicklow, including his house at Dunganstown, which was burnt by the rebels by late 1643. His property in the county yielded £482 10s annually in rent, and his servant declared that he had expended £3,000 on improvements there and claimed total losses in Wicklow at £5,294 10s.<sup>252</sup> His connections with Wicklow were not confined to his land holdings; a Thomas Hoyde, possibly a relative, was an original burgesses for Carysfort in 1626 and the Parsons\* family and Hibbotts held considerable property there, much of it amassed during the previous decade. He was in London in March 1642, but spent much of his time in Ireland in the 1640s, and fought with Harman\* in 1647. He prospered in Ireland under the Commonwealth, holding a number of administrative posts, including j.p. for Leinster in December 1652 and taking examinations in February 1653. He was a commissioner of the High Court at Dublin in 1653-4 and to collect the assessment for Ireland in Kildare and Carlow in the last quarter of 1654 and in counties Dublin and Kildare in the second half of 1657. He also did well materially, acquiring lands in Mayo and lending considerable sums of money through the Dublin Staple in those years, when he was living mainly in Dublin City. On the restoration he was commissioner for the poll money ordnance in Dublin, Wicklow, Meath and Kildare in 1660-1.

CHRISTOPHER HOLLYWOOD, Bannow  
e.s. Nicholas Hollywood, Artane, Dublin, and Owny Ni Shyle; m. \_\_\_\_\_, da.  
Valerian Weasley, Dangan, Meath and Maria, da. Walter Cusack, Tallaghan;  
d. 1647-53.

---

251 *T.C.D. MS. 813*, f. 398r.

252 *T.C.D. MS. 811*, f. 58r.



The Hollywoods settled in Ireland before 1416 and intermarried with many other local gentry families, including the Usshers\* and Nangles\*. Like other gentry of the Pale, they remained catholic, and Christopher's namesake was leader of the Jesuit mission in Ireland in the early 17th. century. Christopher's mother was a foster sister of Hugh O'Neill's wife, and these links clearly remained strong, as Nicholas Hollywood was with Tyrone in Rome in 1614-5. Christopher's father-in-law was a close connection of the Cusacks\* and Forth's\* step-father. He held lands in north Dublin and Meath (the latter jointly with Lords Gormanston and Netterville), and was appointed captain for north Dublin in the force raised by Lucas Netterville at Swords in December 1641; he was present at the meeting at Tara organised by Lord Fingal that winter. With his father, he was indicted for rebellion. In February 1642 he followed orders from Phelim O'Neill\* to find horses for the Catholic forces; his search led to an incident in Meath when one of his soldiers killed John Ware, described as his "*sworne brother*". He took part in a council which was apparently dispensing justice at Kilsallaghan, Dublin early in 1642, signed the rebels' letter to Ormond in the following July, and was a member of the Wexford Council of War by the next month. His return for Bannow is surprising, as his connections were mainly with the Pale. Any local connections remain unknown, but he was later to sign a bond before the Dublin Staple in December 1644 with other Wexford m.p.s, Richard Barnwall\* of Terenure, William Browne\* and Stafford\*. He was a member of the General Assemblies in 1642-3 and 1647.<sup>253</sup> He was a commissioner for the Confederation for assessing thirds and settling enemies' estates in Kilkenny; his career in the Confederation was stalled in 1646, however, when that body issued a warrant for his arrest for Ware's murder; he petitioned the Leinster Council for relief, as a "banished man", and was awarded some money in the following year.

ALEXANDER HOPE (1592+-1678+), Mullingar

2 s. Thomas Hope, and Ann, da. Peter Nugent, Drogheda; m. Ellis, da. Patrick Barnwall\*, Kilbrew, and Elizabeth, da. Sir Richard Barnwall, Crickstown;

The Hopes were settled in Mullingar since at least 1381. Alexander lived at Ballyfeneragh and Clonemore, Westmeath, and his father had been

<sup>253</sup> Nicholas was a member of the 1644 General Assembly.



constable of Mullingar. His older brother died in 1616, leaving only a daughter, and he became head of the family. He held 1500 acres in Westmeath, much of it near Mullingar, but he also had some land deals in Meath. He had extensive connections with members of the Meath and Westmeath gentry including Pettit\* and the Barnwalls\* and his daughters Elizabeth and Anne married Fergus O'Farrell and Anthony, son of Col. Lewis O'More, respectively. He was summoned by the 1634 Commons to answer a charge of contempt. He was described as a rebel by June 1642 and went to Galway some time in that year to buy powder for the Westmeath rebels. He was a member of the 1642-3 and 1646-7 General Assemblies, and his brother Walter was a captain in the Confederate Army who was active against Ormond's peace in 1646. He was arrested in 1650 by Captain Henry Pakenham. He petitioned against his transplantation to Roscommon, where he was assigned 572 acres; he was living in Westmeath in 1660, although he sent his children abroad to serve Charles on the continent. He died after February 1678, when his will (which was set aside by an exchequer judgement in 1717) was drawn up.

JOHN HORE FITZMAHOWN (MATTHEW) Dungarvan  
e.s. Mathew Hore (d. 1629) and Margaret, da. Sir John Coppinger, Crosshaven,  
Cork; m. Mary, da. Thomas Wadding, Ballycogley, Wexford, and Margaret da.  
John Eustace, Castlemartin;  
? ed. Inner Temple, 1608;  
d. 1654;  
M.P. Dungarvan 1634.

The Hores were a prominent Wexford family, although John lived at Shandon near Dungarvan; his father-in-law was m.p. for Wexford County in 1613<sup>254</sup> and his mother-in-law was connected to Nicholas Whyte\* and Ronane\*. His cousins were Milo Power, Ormond's agent or ambassador in 1646, and Oliver Eustace\*. His connections with the Coppingers make it possible that he was the man of the same name who was mayor of Cork in 1642. He held lands near Taghmon and Dungarvan; one of his houses there, described as "*a stately stone house, well slatted*"<sup>255</sup> was burnt by St. Leger\* and his troops in March 1642.

---

254 McGrath, 1613. p. 64.

255 Fitzpatrick, *Waterford in the civil war*. p. 127.



He held a mortgage of £60 on the lands of Sir Richard Osbourne's\* father-in-law in 1618, and he had many dealings with Lord Cork, from whom he leased lands near Ardmore. In 1639 he was being prosecuted by Ormond about taking two hogsheads of claret in Dungarvan. In 1642 he was accused of having betrayed Dungarvan castle to the Irish. An active m.p. in both parliaments, he became a member of the 1644 General Assembly.<sup>256</sup> He was still a merchant in Dungarvan in 1650 when he was dealing with Inchiquin but was transplanted to 300 acres in Roscommon four years later.

JOHN JACKSON Carrick-on-Shannon<sup>257</sup>

? s. \_\_\_\_\_, Yorkshire; ? m. \_\_\_\_\_;<sup>258</sup>

? d. 1653?

M.P. Carrick-on-Shannon, 1634.

Jackson had no known connection with Carrick-on-Shannon. He was a soldier, recommended to Wentworth in November 1633 by Elizabeth of Bohemia, when he held the rank of captain, having served in the Low Counties. Elizabeth's letter claimed that Strafford already knew his brother, implying that he was a member of the Yorkshire family of that name.<sup>259</sup> He was still a captain in 1640 when he formed part of Terringham's regiment in the new Army; he was presumably also the man of the same name who was searcher of Wexford from 1636. He may have been involved in Lord Maguire's trial in 1645.

THOMAS JOHNSON Carrick-on-Shannon

s. \_\_\_\_ Johnson, Wales; m. 1) - 1638 Charity \_\_\_\_; 2) 1641, Margaret Denton;

d. 1646+

<sup>256</sup> His son Matthew was a member of the 1647 General Assembly.

<sup>257</sup> The Commons ordered a writ for his replacement on 5 March 1641.

<sup>258</sup> Joane, da. John Jackson, baptised 6 April 1640, St. Michan's, Dublin. *St. Michan's Parish Register*, p. 4.

<sup>259</sup> Elizabeth to Wentworth, November 1633, The Hague. *Wentworth-Woodhouse MSS 13(108), N.L.I. P. 3586*; ; Wentworth was indeed friendly with some of the Yorkshire Jacksons, Gruenfelder, *Influence in early Stuart elections*, p. 94; John Jackson, eldest son of George Jackson, Grimesthorpe, entered Gray's Inns, 1609; John Jackson of Netherton, m. Elizabeth Broadley (1603-57), was buried in Thornhills, Yorkshire, March 1653 - a place of interment which suggests a link with the Radcliffes\*, Nettletons\* and Littles\*.



Thomas was a Welshman who may have come to Ireland as early as 1632 when a Mr. Johnson appears at Lord Aungier's funeral. He was certainly in Dublin on 28 February 1635 when he took the oath as clerk of the commission to inquire into fees. By February 1640 he was, with Laurence Dowdall, clerk of the crown and peace in Meath, Westmeath and Longford; he appointed deputies to this post in July 1646. He may also have been an attorney in chancery, who held a freehold in Meath.<sup>260</sup> As Captain Thomas Johnson he was an officer in Col. Robert Broughton's regiment in 1643 and quarter-master. He lived in St. Michan's parish, Dublin.<sup>261</sup>

### BRYAN JONES

Baltimore

s. Thomas Jones, Dublin, and Joanne, da. Humphrey Reynolds and Gyles (Julia) McGeoghegan; m. Elizabeth, da. Walter White<sup>262</sup> (d. 1640), Pitchfordstown, Kildare, and Margaret, da. P. White, Pitchfordstown; d. 1671; bur. St. John's Church, Dublin.

The first member of Bryan's family to come from Wales to Ireland was his ancestor and namesake who was appointed constable of Carlow Castle in 1551.<sup>263</sup> Bryan's own background was ethnically mixed but entirely protestant: his mother was of Gaelic origin and a relative of Reynolds\* (he was executor of Humphrey's will) and his wife was old English. The Reynolds\* network included the Wares\* and he paid rent or a debt of £5 to James Ware\* in 1622. He held a number of crown offices, including overseer of the exchequer and auditor of foreign accounts (1644-67) (with his cousin, John Reynolds); his son Walter succeeded to the post of auditor in 1667. He possessed two houses in Cook Street, Dublin, 536 acres in Coughlan's county, Leitrim and Meath and acquired lands in Roscommon before 1641. In February 1642, George Booth of Meath claimed a debt of £105 from him and James White, presumably a relative of his wife. He was a member of a 1644 commission for securing and seizing rebels' goods in London, and two years later was commissary to the army in Ireland. He

<sup>260</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 816*, f. 203.

<sup>261</sup> Thomas Johnson, glover, was admitted freeman of Dublin in 1636. *Cal. Ancient Records*, III, pp 324-5.

<sup>262</sup> escheator of Leinster, m.p. for Donegal, 1613 and Killyleagh, 1634. McGrath, 1613. p.106.

<sup>263</sup> *R.I.A. MS. 3/B/49*, ff 167-8; the *Dictionary of Welsh Biography* states that he came to Ireland with his brother Henry and Archbishop Lewis Jones, but gives no authority for this statement.



remained in Ireland in the 1650s, being appointed deputy muster master in 1654. In that year his wife was receiving a weekly pension of 8/-. In 1661 he was a commissioner for the Poll Money Ordnance in Leitrim and a trustee for the '49 Officers.

OLIVER JONES (1607+-1682) Athlone

3 s. Lewis Jones, Bishop of Killaloe, and Mabel, da. Arland Ussher, Dublin;<sup>264</sup> m.

Jane \_\_\_\_\_; at least 3s;

ed. Trinity College Dublin, scholar 1626; King's Inns, 1638;<sup>265</sup>

bur. St. Patrick's Cathedral, Dublin;

M.P. Knocktopher or Roscommon, 1661.

The Jones family had a strong religious tradition - two of Oliver's brothers were to become bishops - Henry of Clogher, and Ambrose of Kildare, and his uncle was Archbishop James Ussher. Two other brothers - Theophilous and Michael - played important secular roles in Ireland in the 1640s and 1650s. He was the Usshers'\* cousin and possibly also Bryan Jones's\* relative. No clear link has been established with the Earl of Ranelagh, who, as president of Connaught, was so influential in Athlone and whose family name was Jones. Despite his youth, he was appointed constable of Leighlin in 1626. He had property in Westmeath, Roscommon, Sligo and Mayo. He became attorney general of Connaught in 1649. As Oliver Jones of Leighlinbridge, he signed a bond for £171 11/- before the Dublin Staple in February 1654-5. He was appointed to collect the moneys for the assessments for Ireland in Carlow in the last quarter of 1654 and Kilkenny in the second half of 1657. In February 1660 he signed the declaration of the army, as lieut. colonel, and was a commissioner for the speedy raising of money in Westmeath. He received a pardon in 1661. He was appointed justice of the Common Pleas in 1672. Essex regarded him as a closet Roman Catholic, who raised his children in that religion, although his activities in the 1650s belie this.

---

<sup>264</sup> An alternative identification is 2 s. John Jones (son of Lieut. Henry Jones, a Welshman who settled in Athlone ) and Jane Missett, Athlone. This Oliver's brother Christopher, was sovereign (and therefore returning officer) of Athlone in 1639-40. *R.I.A. MS., Upton 25(141)*.

<sup>265</sup> His name does not appear in the published lists of the inns of court, although he was presumably educated there before attending the King's Inns.



ROBERT KING, (1599-1657)

Boyle

e.s. Sir John King, (d. 1636) and Catherine, da. Robert Drury; m. 1) Frances (d. 1638, bur. Boyle), da. Henry Folliott (1569-1622), first Baron Folliott, Ballinamallard, Fermanagh and Anne, da. Sir William Strode (she rem. 1627, Robert Dillon\*); 2); c. 1641, Sophia, da. and coh. Sir Edward Zouch, (d. 1634), w. Edward Cecil, Viscount Wimbleton;

ed. Cambridge, 1618; Inner Temple, 1620;

Kt. 1621;

M.P. Boyle 1634 and Sligo, Roscommon and Leitrim, 1654 and 1656.

King's father came to Ireland from Yorkshire in the 1580s and became a privy councillor. He was granted Boyle Abbey in 1604 and this became the centre of his estates in Ireland; he was m.p. for Roscommon in 1613.<sup>266</sup> Apart from his extensive Roscommon property, which he inherited from his father, Robert also held lands in Kildare and Meath, and had financial dealings with Philip Perceval and land deals with Ormond in 1637. He was also able to buy lands in Staffordshire. He was a member of the 1624-5 Roscommon commission of the peace and *custos rotullorum*. His mother was the grandniece of a former President of Munster. His other connections were equally useful - he was Caulfield's\* uncle and Edgeworth's\* brother-in-law; he was also connected to the Moores\* and their network, including Nicholas Whyte\*, through his sister's marriage to Arthur Moore.<sup>267</sup> His first wife was also the child of a member of the 1613 parliament<sup>268</sup> and had other extensive connections, including her brother-in-law Wingfield\*, step-father Robert Dillon\*, and relatives Burnell\* and the other Dillons\*. His second marriage was equally advantageous: Sophia's father had an estate worth £4,000 annually and her husband's estate was not small - she lived at Cecil House on the Strand, London. Her sister and co-heiress married James Fiennes, Viscount Saye and Sele, a cousin of Kingsmill\*. He succeeded his father as muster-master in 1619, a post he still held in 1640, at a daily salary of £1. He was also governor of the garrison at Boyle and was sent by Wentworth to inspect garrisons in Connaught. He was called as a material witness at Strafford's trial. Following heavy losses in the rebellion, he moved to

<sup>266</sup> McGrath, 1613. pp 91-2.

<sup>267</sup> Younger son of Garrett Moore, Viscount Moore, of Mellifont, and m.p. for Charlemont and Armagh in 1634.

<sup>268</sup> McGrath, 1613. pp 110-1.



England in 1642 and supported the parliament, although he still headed a company in the Leinster army in 1643. In 1645 he acted as parliamentary agent in Ulster, writing from Belfast to the Committee of Both Houses detailing the agreement he and his fellow agents had made with Ormond that November. In 1647 he accepted Ormond's surrender as a commissioner of the Irish parliament; three years later he was granted £500 for his special services in Ireland, especially for his work in raising £50,000 for service there. He played a prominent role in the 1650s in Ireland, becoming a commissioner for revenue in 1651 and a member of the Council of State two years later; he was a member of the Commission of the High Court in Dublin and Kilkenny in 1653-4. With Somers\* and Coote\* he supported the petition of the Roscommon woman, Martha Hatt, in 1656. His eldest son John was an active collaborator under the Commonwealth but was also active in the restoration and was created viscount Kingston.

WILLIAM KINGSMILL (c1613-1650) Mallow

3 s. Sir Francis Kingsmill (1569-1620), Ballybeg, Cork; m. Dorothy, da. Sir John Ogle, Pinchbeck (Pickenham), Lincolnshire, and Elizabeth de Vries, Dort; M.P. Mallow 1634.<sup>269</sup>

Kingsmill's father and uncle Ferdinand came to Ireland in the 1590s as soldiers with John Norris and several of the Kingsmills married into that family. William's aunts Bridget and Constance married Sir Thomas Norris of Mallow and Richard Fiennes, 7th. Lord Saye and Sele, respectively. He thus had a connection not merely with the Fiennes family, including the puritan 8th. viscount, and his sons James and Nathaniel, m.p.s in the Long Parliament and, through them with King\*, but also, and in the Irish context, more importantly, with the Jephson family. The Jephsons inherited the Norris estates in Ireland, and he acted as their agent there. This connection and employment explains his return for their borough of Mallow.<sup>270</sup> The Jephsons were also linked to Mervyn\*, Gifford\*, the Piggots\* and Wenman.\* His own marriage made him Ogle's\* brother-in-law and nephew and cousin of the St. Legers\*, and linked him

<sup>269</sup> He resigned his seat to travel to England on business.

<sup>270</sup> William was not the only member of his family to benefit from the Jephsons' patronage - his brother Anthony was rector of Mallow.



also to the O'Briens\*. The Ogles provided further connections in England, through Sir John Manwood, chief justice of the common pleas, and the Buckingham. He and his brother Francis became freemen of Youghal in 1636 and 1637 respectively. He inherited his father's lands at Ballybeg, Cork and also held other lands at Ballyowen, (Buttevant Barony) and some property in Tipperary and Waterford. He was executor and chief beneficiary of the will of his brother Francis, who died unmarried at Bridgewater in 1640. His own deposition claimed losses of £7,242 12s. 1d.<sup>271</sup> He resigned his seat on 21 May 1641, as being unlikely to recover from consumption. He survived, however, and was chiefly based in Munster in the 1640s; he raised his own troops and held the rank of colonel by early 1642. His castle of Ballyowen was seized by rebels under Lord Dunboyne\* in March of that year. He was living in Cork in 1644 and as a commander in the Munster army was one of the soldiers Inchiquin asked St. Leger\* to bring back from England to fight in Munster at that time. He was a member of the council of war in 1646, the year in which he was granted £150 compensation for his loss of estate, and for his military service; with Bannister\*, Travers\*, Waller\*, Stoughton\* and Piercy Smith he was one of the Munster commanders who signed a letter of support for Inchiquin, dated that August, from Cork. He was still commanding a regiment in 1647. He was classed as a '49 Officer.

HENRY KNIVETON (KNIVETON) Baltimore  
d. 1659-?1672.

Knyveton's origins are unclear - he may have been from Derbyshire, or possibly Norfolk. By 1630 he was settled at Mallow and was a regular witness to St. Leger\* deeds from then to 1655, a circumstance which suggests that he was employed in a clerical capacity by St. Leger\*; with Lott Peere he was Sir Francis Wenman's attorney to sue for livery in the earlier year.<sup>272</sup> He was granted a lease of the lands of the minor Donnogh McConnor in Cork in May 1631 at an annual rent of 30/-. He seems to have been less prosperous than many other Munster settlers - his deposition claimed losses of only £843, much of which consisted of a

<sup>271</sup> Deposition of William Kingsmill, May 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 825*, f. 51r.

<sup>272</sup> Sir Francis Wenman of Caswell, Oxfordshire, was related to Sir Thomas Wenman, m.p. for Mallow in 1634, and to Philip Wenman\*; Lott Peere, m.p. Baltimore, 1634, was St. Leger's\* secretary, and died at Audley End in 1652. *Doneraile Papers, An. Hib.*, XX, p. 63.



large number of small debts from individuals of apparently low social standing.<sup>273</sup> A Philip Taylor of Roscommon claimed a debt from him in his own deposition.<sup>274</sup> He was still in Munster in 1647, when he wrote to Perceval in London about events in Ireland, and in January 1648, when he witnessed a Jephson deed. Later that year he was Inchiquin's agent to the Derby House Committee. He was living near Ballyheigue, Kerry, in 1660, although he was in London when the Census was taken. He may have been the Henry Knyveton, late of Ashorne, now Castleton, Derby, gent., whose will was proved in 1672.

EDWARD LAKE (c1583-1674)

Cavan

e.s. Richard Lake, Irby, Lincolnshire, and Anne Wardell; m. Anne, da. and coh. Simon Bibye, Huntingdonshire; 1633, Elizabeth Mallett, widow, London; ed. Oxford, Cambridge, B.A. (1626), B.C.L. (1628), M.A. (1629), L.L.B. (1636); L.L.D. (1637); Bart. 1644, 1661; o.s.p.; bur. Lincoln Cathedral.

Lake's qualifications fitted him well for the office of advocate general, which he attained in 1639 on Laud's recommendation. He was expelled from the Commons on 9 November 1640 for misconduct<sup>275</sup> and a writ for his replacement was moved on the following day. The reasons for his return for Cavan are unclear, as he had no Irish connections besides his office, and certainly none with Cavan; his recently acquired Irish property was at Carnew, Wicklow, and he relinquished its lease to Strafford. This property and his English estates were lost during the wars. His legal expertise would, however, have been valuable in the house and his return was presumably due to his official position, like his fellow burgess, Cooke\*, also a lawyer and doctor of law, although Cooke\* also had Cavan connections. He came from Lincolnshire, but his paternal ancestors were

---

273 His property losses were estimated at only £144; Kniveton's deposition, made 10 February 1642, sworn 13 May 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 824*, f. 88.

274 Deposition of Philip Taylor, 7 March 1643, *T.C.D. MS. 830*, f. 8r.

275 He was accused of misusing his position as chairman of a committee of the whole house which was considering a plea of parliamentary privilege by Michael Stanhope. Stanhope was registrar of the court of high commission, and m.p. for Ballyshannon in 1634; his plea of privilege was based on his position as a servant of the lord lieutenant, *C.J. (I.)*, 22 October 1640, 26 October 1640, 27 October 1640, 9 November 1640, Bramhall to Laud, 4 November 1640, *H.M.C. Hastings*, IV, pp 90-1.



from Yorkshire<sup>276</sup> and, although he may never have visited that county, he retained sufficient affection for it (perhaps strengthened by his connections with Wentworth) to leave money to erect a clock in Normanton. On his return to England he fought for Charles at Edgehill (1642) where he was badly wounded; as a reward for his services he was granted a patent for a baronetcy and the nomination of another. The patent was not activated and he was again granted the title in 1661. By 1644 he had moved to Nottingham; in April 1648 he was included in a list of 149 people in Lincolnshire who had been in delinquency against parliament. At the restoration, he became chancellor of the diocese of Lincoln, and received a mandate as vicar-general there in June 1664. He should not be confused with the Dublin alderman, Edward Lake, constable of the Dublin Staple in early 1641, who was originally from Brambly, Staffordshire.<sup>277</sup>

ROGER LANGFORD (1610-1647+)      Antrim County

only s. (posthumous), Roger Langford (d. 1609) Muckmaire, Antrim; m. Lettice, da. Sir Robert Digby,<sup>278</sup> Geashill, King's County, and Lettice (Lady Offaly), da. Earl of Kildare;

Kt. 1630;

The Langfords settled in Ulster in the late sixteenth century - Owen Langford was clerk and surveyor of works and buildings at Carrickfergus in 1576 and John Langford was porter there in 1602. Roger inherited his father's Muckmaire property and, in 1639, his uncle Hercules Langford's<sup>279</sup> lands, becoming the owner of one of the largest estates in the area. He was mayor of Carrickfergus in 1639. He was a cousin of Sir John Clotworthy and this connection linked him to many other settler families, including Rowley\*, the Chichesters\*, Blayneys\* and Moores\*. His brother-in-law Digby\* provided further links with the Moores\*, Lord Kildare and De Renzy\*. He was active in

---

<sup>276</sup> His monument in Lincoln Cathedral notes that he was "*ex antiqua familia ejusdem cognomin. Normantoniae juxta Pontefract in Agro Eboracensi*". Pontefract was a town in which Wentworth took a particular interest, including being responsible for its restoration as a parliamentary borough, and George Wentworth\* represented it in the Long Parliament. Gruenfelder, *Influence in early Stuart elections*, p. 94; A.J. Fletcher, *Sir Thomas Wentworth and the Restoration of Pontefract as a parliamentary borough. Northern History*, 6, (1971). pp 88-97.

<sup>277</sup> *B.L. MS. Add. 19843*, f. 84v; *P.R.O.L., Prob. 11/205/116*.

<sup>278</sup> for Sir Robert Digby, see Digby\* and McGrath, 1613. p. 50.

<sup>279</sup> Hercules was sheriff of Antrim in 1616 and 1623.



raising 100 dragoons in Ulster in 1645, when he was their captain. He was assigned £250 for their training by the Derby House Committee, but this was unpaid by August 1646, when he submitted another proposal to raise 70 harquebustiers.

RALPH (RADULFUS) LEVENTHORPE      Ennis

3 but 2 s.s. Thomas Leventhorpe, Albery, Hertfordshire, and Dorothy, da. Sir Thomas Seymer, w. Clement Smith; m. 1) by 1614, \_\_\_\_\_; 2) 1625+, Elizabeth, da. Peter Palmer (d. 1621), w. Edward Werden, Chester; ed. Cambridge, 1607; King's Inns, 1637; o.s.p. 1647, Od Greene, Standen, Hereford.

Ralph's arrival in Ireland to earn his living was not untypical of other men in his position, as a younger son of his father's second marriage. He was settled in Ireland by May 1614, when he and his wife purchased Boyle's interest in Gill Abbey, Cork.<sup>280</sup> He was living in Dublin by 1618, when he was assigned a lease of a house and garden in Kilmainham by David Nowlan. He lived in a large house in Werburgh Street, Dublin. He also held lands in Longford, including some from Farrell\*; he was made sheriff of Longford in 1620, but was reported to be rarely in the county and to have appointed a papist as his deputy. He also spent £500 on lands in counties Kildare and Dublin, and had property in Herefordshire at the time of his death. He signed a bond at the Dublin Staple in May 1640. Elizabeth Leventhorpe was the only child of a justice of the King's Bench; her first husband, a wealthy Chester merchant, was drowned crossing the Irish sea with Lord Thurles in 1619.<sup>281</sup> Leventhorpe was appointed cirographer of the common pleas with William Crowe in 1621 and held the office alone after Crowe's death in 1627. He had useful connections - his mother was a sister of Jane Seymour, wife of Henry VIII, and his family was linked to Lord Weston; he was attached to Francis Aungier, Lord Longford. He was prominent in the procession at Longford's funeral in 1632 and proved his will in the following year; the Aungiers left goods in his possession when they left Dublin before him in the 1640s. He returned to England during the rebellion, leaving William

<sup>280</sup> *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., I, p. 45.

<sup>281</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 1216*, f. 21r; J.P. Rylands (ed.), *Cheshire and Lancashire funeral certificates, A.D. 1600-1678*. (Manchester, Lancashire and Cheshire Record Society, 1882), p. 183; Elizabeth married Werden before 1613.



Bennet as his steward in Ireland. His brother Edward was a lieutenant in the Lord General's regiment in 1640 and in St. Leger\* jr.'s troop in Lord Philip Wharton's regiment in Ireland in 1642. He had no progeny and left his Irish property to Edward's children.

THOMAS LITTLE (LITTELL) sr., Cashel

s. \_\_\_\_\_, Little, Easthorpe, Yorkshire; m. by 1616, \_\_\_\_\_; 3 s. and at least 1 da.; d. 1641.

M.P. Cashel 1634.<sup>282</sup>

The Littles came to Ireland from Yorkshire in 1633 when Thomas became Wentworth's secretary; their connections with the lord deputy were through the Cliffords, Earls of Cumberland, the family of Wentworth's first wife, and they came from Easthorpe, an area in which Clifford influence was strong. He had been active in collecting recusancy fines in Yorkshire immediately before his arrival in Ireland. He was the father of Thomas jr.\* As Wentworth's secretary (his unnamed son-in-law assisted him in this work) he wielded considerable power.<sup>283</sup> He was clerk of the crown in Cork and Waterford and active in the customs administration from 1634. He became escheator of Munster two years later; these offices provided the only known link with his constituency. He was also active with Carpenter\* in the tobacco monopoly. He went to England with Wentworth in 1640 and died in the following year, owing Perceval £100. A Robert Little was named as Radcliffe's\* servant in 1640.

THOMAS LITTLE jr. (-1617-1641+) Banagher

e.s. Thomas Little\*, Easthorpe, Yorkshire;

Thomas was involved with his father, Carpenter\* and Carr\* in the tobacco monopoly in Ireland and this seems to have been the excuse for his arrest and expulsion from the Commons in February 1641. He, or his younger brother

---

<sup>282</sup> This return was despite Wentworth's requesting Boyle to have him returned for Lismore.

<sup>283</sup> Joshua Boyle\* experienced difficulties in dealing with Little about Cork's business and, turning to Sir William Parson\* for advice, was told that "*the tymes were such, and Little's power soo prevalent as that hee knew not how to advise*". Boyle\* to Cork, 19 August 1639. *N.L.I. MS. 13,237* (24). Little had previously (May 1635) delivered letters for Cork, *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., IV, p. 99.



Henry, was presumably the Lieut. Littell of Sir Thomas Wharton's\*<sup>284</sup> regiment in 1640, and, therefore, presumably the man who married the widow of Francis Blundell and Nicholas Whyte\*. He may have been the Dr. Thomas Littell who is mentioned in a manuscript of 1688.<sup>285</sup>

Six members of the Loftus family were returned to the Commons in 1640, four of whom also sat in 1634 and two in 1613. They were all related to the late Archbishop Adam Loftus of Dublin,<sup>286</sup> who came to Ireland in the 1560s, followed by his nephews, one of whom, his namesake, (who should not be confused with the third Adam\*) was the Lord Chancellor, Lord Ely. Ely was m.p. for King's County in 1613<sup>287</sup> and his son Robert\* represented Inistiogue in this parliament; his cousins Adam\* and Nicholas\* were m.p.s in all the parliaments under James and Charles, and Sir Adam's\* sons Arthur\* and Walter\* were also m.p.s. The sixth Loftus, Dudley\*, was another grandson of the Archbishop.

The significance of this Loftus influence lies not merely in the return of so many members of one family, but also in that their connections were so wide-ranging that they constituted one of the largest and most powerful networks in the parliament, and, indeed, in the country. Their family network included the Wentworth\*, Gifford\*, Ussher\*, Boyle\*, Blayney\*, Parsons\*, Cosbie\*, Ware\*, Blount,<sup>288</sup> Moore\* and O'Hara\* families. Their prominence in Wexford is hardly surprising, as Sir Dudley, father of Adam\* and Nicholas\*, was a commissioner for its plantation in 1613, and they were also connected with many of the other local settler families, through marriages with the Colcloughs and Itchinghams.

ADAM LOFTUS (1580-1660+) Newborough

e.s. Sir Dudley Loftus (d. 1616), and Anne, da. Sir Nicholas Bagnall, Newry; she rem. Dominic Sarsfield, Viscount Kilmallock; m. Jane, da. Walter Vaughan,

284 Wharton\* was also from Yorkshire.

285 *C.U.L. MS. Mun. 1.40*, p. 191.

286 For Archbishop Loftus, see *D.N.B.*, and for his will, *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, XI, pp 364-7; for the family as a whole, see Jackson, *Intermarriage*, pp 20-37.

287 McGrath, 1613. pp 52-3.

288 The Blounts came to Ireland as soldiers with their cousin, Lord Mountjoy, and settled in Tyrone and Kildare. Edward and George Blount represented Athy and Coleraine respectively in 1634.



Golden Grove;

ed. Middle Temple, 1604; King's Inns, 1609; Trinity College Dublin;

Kt. 1610;

M.P. Maryborough 1613, Newborough 1634.

Adam's parents both came from prominent new English families, but his mother's second marriage, to a conforming old English official, made her the step-mother of Sir William Sarsfield (m.p. Cork 1634), who remained committed to the faith of his uncle, the Roman Catholic bishop of Cork; this marriage also provided a link with Barrett\*. Apart from his Loftus\* relatives, his close family connections were his cousins Gifford\*, the Usshers\*, Moores\* and Blayneys\*, and, through the Bagnals, the Trevors\*, Nicholas Barnwall\*, Patrick Sarsfield\* and Lucas Fitzgerald\*. His son Arthur's\* marriage provided an important connection with his fellow privy councillor, Lord Cork, and his extensive network. By 1609, he held lands in Westmeath, Longford, Dublin and Drogheda, but the entire Loftus family, and especially his brother Nicholas\*, benefited greatly from the plantation of Wexford in the following decade, and this explains their prominence as m.p.s for constituencies in that county. He was one of Newborough's (Gorey) original burgesses on its incorporation in 1617. In 1639 he was granted lands in Wicklow, which Edward Brabazon was still claiming in 1654.<sup>289</sup> His lands in Dublin consisted of over 1,300 acres, valued at £520 annually in 1640; despite the value of his many properties and his income from offices, he was in debt, and forced to mortgage his Meath property at Trim and Moyglare to Boyle for Stg.£5,000 in 1627; the protracted negotiations were partly conducted by his brother Nicholas\*.<sup>290</sup> He lived in Copper Alley, Dublin and at Rathfarnham Castle, and was a member of the 1624-5 commissions of the peace for Dublin County and Meath. He became constable of Maryborough in 1612 and held other crown offices. He was a privy councillor and in that capacity suggested the holding of a parliament in 1633; he also proposed the granting of six subsidies for the crown, both actions prompting Wentworth's letter of commendation to Charles in October 1634.<sup>291</sup> He was Wentworth's chief local collaborator in Ireland, and his adherence to Strafford explains Wentworth's nomination of

289 Brabazon, *Humble petition* (London, 1654); for Brabazon see *Peerage*, under Meath.

290 *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II, pp 221,225-6,243-4; IV, pp 9,11,13,17,19,22-3,25,38,69,76, 155-6,167,172-3,192.

291 Kearney, *Strafford in Ireland*, pp 42-4,195; Knowler, I, p. 306.



Adam to succeed Mountnorris as treasurer at war after the latter's disgrace.<sup>292</sup> He was also a member of the Commission on Defective Titles, and, as treasurer, was in a position to facilitate Strafford and Radcliffe\* in their activities in the Tobacco Monopoly and the customs farm.<sup>293</sup> He remained in Ireland, executing his official duties, in the early 1640s, but was dismissed by Charles and replaced by Ormond. He was imprisoned in Dublin Castle in 1643 with Meredith\* and Sir William Parsons\*. They were later transferred to England and a proposal to exchange them for Lord Brabazon, Sir James Ware\* and others was considered, but rejected on the grounds that they did not then desire their liberty. He was still in London in December 1646 when he was examined by the Derby House Committee; he was back in Dublin serving as treasurer in the following year. Despite his imprisonment, he was able to sign a bond before the Dublin Staple in 1645. Rathfarnham Castle was attacked by Ormond in July 1649 and he was forced to surrender. He played little part in administrative or political life after that date. In 1660 he presented a petition about the office of surveyor general.

ARTHUR LOFTUS (1616-1659) Wexford County

e.s. Adam Loftus\* and Jane, da. Walter Vaughan, Golden Grove; m. 1632, Dorothy, da. Richard Boyle, Earl of Cork, and Catherine, da. Sir Geoffrey Fenton and Alice, da. Robert Weston, w. Hugh Brady, Bishop of Meath; ed. Oxford, 1629;<sup>294</sup>

Kt. 1634; bur. St. Patrick's Cathedral, Dublin.

M.P. Enniscorthy 1634.

Arthur was Adam's\* son, Walter's\* brother, Nicholas's nephew\*, Robert\* and Dudley\* Loftus's cousin, and Richard Parsons's\* and O'Hara's\* brother-in-law. His marriage, negotiated between 1623 and 1626, provided a source of political and financial support outside his own immediate family circle

---

<sup>292</sup> Mountnorris was also a man with considerable influence in Wexford, especially Newborough, which his son-in-law Roger Lort represented in 1634. Mountnorris had been returned for both Armagh County and Lismore in 1613; McGrath, 1613. pp 83-4, *Peerage*; \_\_\_\_\_, *The Sentence of the Covncell of Warre pronovnced against the Lord Mountnorris in Ireland the twelfth of December 1635, with the Lord Mountnorris Petition to the Parliament concerning his Iniuries and wrongs, sustayned by the Lord Depvty deceased.* (s.l., 1641); Adam's rise to power, and the fall of his cousin, Lord Chancellor Ely, is traced by Kearney, *Strafford in Ireland*, pp 42,71-2.

<sup>293</sup> *ibid*, pp 81,164,182.

<sup>294</sup> He is not included in J. Foster, *Alumni Oxoniensis, 1500-1714*. 4 vols. (Oxford, London, 1891-2), but *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II, p. 325 indicates that he was studying in Oxford in 1629.



and linked him to Digby\*, Crowe\*, Boyle\*, Gethings\* and Lords Ranelagh and Kildare. The alliance was initially not entirely satisfactory but the two sides grew closer together. He borrowed money from his father-in-law to buy a flock of English sheep in 1635. He held lands in Meath, Carlow (where he owned a house at Cloughgrennan) and Wexford, where part of his property at Kileloggan and Templetown was leased. He claimed losses of £5,202 13/-, including 1,000 sheep, on all his property in those counties.<sup>295</sup> He was provost-marshal of Ulster in 1639. He was captain and sergeant major in Tichbourne's regiment in the new army of 1640, and was in Dublin in late 1641. He fought in south Dublin, Kildare and Wicklow in December 1642. In the following year he was governor of Naas, when he protected Maurice Fitzgerald\*, and was part of his brother-in-law Lord Kildare's regiment quartered in Dublin that autumn and winter. In December 1644 he was at Westminster and gave evidence against Lord Maguire in his trial in London in the following year. He was back in Ireland as colonel of foot in one of the regiments attached to the Munster presidency in 1646, presumably with the troops he had raised for service in that province after being made colonel in the army of the Eastern Association. By 1647, he was back in Leinster as governor of Naas and, with his brother-in-law Broghill, submitted a list of allegations against Inchiquin to the English Commons - which were refuted by Inchiquin's secretary, Gethings\*. In August 1648 the Derby House Committee recommended him for military service in Ireland under Colonel Jones, having lost his command there through his loyalty to the parliament; he became a captain in Gifford's regiment in Cork.<sup>296</sup> His house near Trim was captured in 1649 and the subject of his arrears of pay was raised in the English Commons. He apparently took little part in the activities of the 1650s but he submitted a petition to Cromwell in 1654 and, as a former commissioned officer, certified Wharton's\* service in April 1655.

DUDLEY LOFTUS (1601-1648)

Johnstown

e.s. Sir Thomas Loftus, Kilyan, Meath, (4th. s. Archbishop Adam Loftus) and Ellen, da. Robert Harpole, Shrulle, w. Francis Cosby; m. 1626, Cecilia, da. Sir James Ware, Dublin, and Mary Braiden, Bury St. Edmunds;

Kt. 1630.

<sup>295</sup> Deposition, sworn 12 February 1642, on his behalf. *T.C.D. MS. 818*, ff 16v,39,78r.

<sup>296</sup> *Cal.S.P.Ire., 1647-60*, p. 24; C.H. Firth and G. Davis, *The Regimental history of Cromwell's army*. (Oxford: 1940). II, p. 640, in which he is listed as Adam.



Dudley should not be confused with his cousin and namesake, Dr. Dudley Loftus, the noted scholar, who represented Naas from 1642. This Dudley was a cousin of the other Loftuses\* and part of their network. His mother connected him to other settler families, including Harpole\* and the Cosby\* link was reinforced by the marriages of his brother Adam and sister Anne to other members of that family; this closeness is illustrated by his brothers Edward and Francis's joining Harpole\* in rebellion.<sup>297</sup> His other brother and sister married members of the old English Bryan family of Kilkenny. He succeeded his father in 1635, inheriting 515 acres at Kilyan in Meath, where he was Lucas Fitzgerald's\* neighbour. The old English retained their near-monopoly of seats in that county, however, and his borough was controlled by his wife's family. His connections with the Wares\* were close - he was knighted on the same day as James\*, his brother-in-law and fellow burgess. Through the Wares\* he was also Reynolds's\* brother-in-law. He joined the army in the upheavals of the 1640s and was part of Tichbourne's regiment in 1642 and Fulke Hunck's in the following year.

NICHOLAS LOFTUS (1591+-1667) Wexford County

2 s. Sir Dudley Loftus (d.1616) and Anne, da. Sir Nicholas Bagnal, Newry; m. Margaret, da. Thomas Chetham and Mary, da. Ald. John Foster, Dublin; 2) 1663, Susanah Alderly;

Kt. 1662;

M.P. Fethard 1613, 1634, 1661.

Nicholas was Adam's\* younger brother, Arthur\* and Walter's\* uncle, and cousin of Dudley\* and Robert\*. His father had interests in Wexford since c1608 and Nicholas also acquired extensive possessions in the county (especially around Fethard) in the plantation. He also had some property in Dublin and was a member of the 1624-5 commission of the peace there. He held several crown offices - clerk of the pipe (1622), clerk of the pells (1625) and examiner in chancery (1628). Like Adam\*, he supported Wentworth. He fled to England in 1641 after his house in Fethard was taken. He was living in Fleet St., London, in the following April, when the Irish Privy Council wrote to ask him to procure medical supplies for the army. He was in Chester the following August,

<sup>297</sup> T.C.D. MS. 815, ff 402-5.



presumably on his way back to Dublin, and remained in Ireland thereafter, confining his activities to carrying out his administrative work, including his duties as deputy treasurer to Adam\* and surveyor of the court of wards. His estates were sequestered by the Confederates. He was described as "*homine vaferrimo, ubi latenter venenum Puritanis et aliis instillarunt.*"<sup>298</sup> He had some dealings on the Dublin Staple in 1649 and 1654 and was a j.p. in Wexford in 1655, although he does not appear to have taken any prominent part in Irish affairs until the restoration.

ROBERT LOFTUS (c.1598-1640) Inistiogue

e.s. Adam Loftus, Lord Ely, and Sarah Bathow, w. Bishop Meredith, Leighlin; m. 1621 Eleanor (d. 1639), da. Sir Francis Rushe and Mary, da. Sir Henry Duke and \_\_\_ Moore, w. Sir Richard Gifford; she rem. Sir John Jephson; Kt. 1619; bur. St. Patrick's Cathedral, Dublin; M.P. Newry 1634.

Robert was a cousin of all the other Loftus\* m.p.s, step-brother of Meredith\* and was related also to the Usshers\* and Blayneys\*. His marriage connected him with Gifford\*, the Cootes\* and Piggotts\*, St. George\* and Wentworth\*. Strafford's genuine affection for Eleanor Loftus helped to link Robert to the administration. Gifford\* sought redress for his half-sister when Lord Ely failed to provide the money he had agreed to settle on her on their marriage. He was a member of the 1624-5 Kildare commission of the peace, and commissioner to raise money for the army there two years later. In 1634 he held the lord deputy's train, and later his father's also, at the opening of the first sessions of parliament. In that year he succeeded his father as admiral of Munster, at Wentworth's suggestion. From his own family and through his wife, he acquired lands in King's County, Fermanagh, Monaghan and Westmeath; he also got lands from Coote\* in Roscommon in 1626, and received a licence for a market at Mountmellick, Queen's County, five years later. In the same year (1631) he was admitted a freeman of DUBLIN. He had a dispute with Lord Cork about property at CreEustace in 1635. He is described as "*of Clownes, County Monaghan*" in a bond before the Dublin Staple in June 1640.<sup>299</sup>

<sup>298</sup> *Commentarius Rinuccinianus*, II, p. 292.

<sup>299</sup> *B.L. MS. Add. 19843*, f. 50r.



WALTER LOFTUS (1619+-1645) Carysfort / Roscommon  
4 but 3 s.s. Adam\* Loftus, Rathfarnham, and Jane, da. Walter Vaughan, Golden  
Grove; d. unmarried;  
ed. Lincoln's Inns, 1638.

Walter was Adam's\* younger son, Arthur's\* brother, Nicholas's\* nephew, Robert\* and Dudley Loftus's\* cousin, and Richard Parsons\* and O'Hara's\* brother-in-law. In 1640 he became clerk of the pells and tallies (jointly with his uncle Nicholas\*) and was made captain of a foot company, with a salary of 25/- *per diem*. Three years later he held the same rank in Tichbourne's regiment. In 1645 an ordnance allowed him to collect money for troops in Ireland and that July he was stationed at Youghal as lieut. colonel of a troop; he died fighting at the siege there.

JAMES (JACOB) LOVELL Banagher  
d. 1641.

Lovell was a soldier and a captain in the navy by 1637, but he transferred to a captaincy in Tichbourne's regiment of the army by 1640. His return for a garrison town is understandable, although there is no evidence that he was stationed at Banagher. He died during the siege of Drogheda in October 1641, where he was serjeant-major in Lord Moore's regiment. His origins are unclear; he may have been Scottish, or, more probably, from Yorkshire; he may have been related to other Lovells or Lowells already in Ireland.<sup>300</sup>

ROBUCK (ROBERT) LYNCH (c1606-1667), Galway  
e.s. Sir Henry Lynch (M.P. Galway 1634), and Elizabeth, da. Richard Martin,  
Galway, w. James Rivagh Darcy; m. c1629, Ellis, da. Sir Peter French, Galway;  
ed. Middle Temple, 1624; Oxford; King's Inns, 1628;  
2nd. Bart., 1635.

<sup>300</sup> e.g. Lieut. Charles Lowell, or Sir William Lovel of Kent, a settler with 2,000 acres in Ulster in 1608-10; another Lovell was canon of Lismore in the 1630s and a Thomas Lovell, receiver of the rents of the archbishop of Dublin in early 1642, lived at Patrick Street, Dublin. *T.C.D. MS. 809*, ff 308r-9.



The Lynches were one of the wealthiest and most important Galway families. They had been established there for centuries and, with the Blakes\* and Brownes\*, with whom they had many marriage and trade connections, they controlled the commerce of the area and used their wealth to acquire extensive property in Galway and Mayo. Apart from the position gained by their own wealth and family connections, their close association with the Clanricardes increased their local and national influence. Sir Henry Lynch, a former recorder of Galway, was Clanricarde's principal man of business and his good friend. Sir Henry asked Clanricarde's advice about his children's education and marriages.<sup>301</sup> Lynch was also Darcy's\* step-brother and brother-in-law and Richard Martin's\* brother-in-law. Like his father, whose title and estates he inherited, he was an alderman of Galway and mayor of the city in 1638. In 1636 he was one of the Galway landowners opposed to the intended plantation of Connaught. He was a member of the Commons's impeachment committee and also of the committee sent to present the House's grievances to the king in England. In 1642 he was a member of the Council of Eight which governed Galway in the early years of the rebellion, and, with Ulick Burke\*, Valentine Blake\* and others, was part of the force raised locally by Col. John Burke to defend Galway in April 1643.<sup>302</sup> He remained a member of Galway Corporation until 1647. He was one of the most prominent members of the Confederation, a member of all the Supreme Councils except the first and sixth, and a member of the 1647 General Assembly. He was one of the resident Connaught members of the Council and, with Geoffrey Browne\* was an agent from the Assembly to Clanricarde in May 1645. Robuck was on the continent in 1651, when he made an agreement with the Duke of Lorraine on Clanricarde's behalf, which included a commitment to send Lynch to the Aran Islands (which he had inherited from his father) with 200 musketeers to protect the entrance to Galway Bay. He returned to Galway, where, with Clanricarde, and other prominent citizens of Galway, he negotiated the city's surrender to Ludlow in early 1652, and was granted transplantation lands in Galway and Castlecana, Mayo.

---

<sup>301</sup> Clanricarde to Sir Henry Lynch, 12 June 1624, 2 May 1625, 15 July 1627, *N.L.I. MS. 3111*; Henry had, however, ignored this advice at least in one respect, in that he sent Robuck to be educated in Oxford, an unusual step for an Irish catholic at the time.

<sup>302</sup> O'Sullivan, *Old Galway*, p. 258.



DONOUGH MC CARTHY, (1594-1665)Cork County  
e.s. Cormac Og McCarthy, first Viscount Muskerry, and Margaret, da. Donough O'Brien, Lord Thomond; m. Eleanor Butler, da. Thomas Butler, Viscount Thurles (heir to Walter Butler, Lord Ormond) and Elizabeth, da. Sir John Poyntz, Acton, Gloucestershire; (she rem. Capt. George Matthew);  
Kt. by 1634; Bart. c1638; 2nd. Viscount Muskerry, 1641; Earl of Clancarty, 1658.  
M.P. Cork County 1634.

McCarthy entered the Upper House when he inherited his father's title. He held very considerable property in Munster, chiefly in Cork (where he was mainly based at Macroom) but also in Waterford. He was admitted a freeman of Waterford in 1633. He was a cousin of the O'Briens\*, and, through his marriage, was brother-in-law of Ormond and Valentine Browne\*<sup>303</sup> and connected to other members of the Butler\* family and to Esmond\* and Poyntz\*, and, through his sister Helen's marriage to Lord Kerry's son, to most of the other important Munster gentry. He was a member of the committee which travelled to England to present the grievances to Charles. He played a significant role in the parliament by persuading Ormond to drop his stalling tactics which were delaying the adoption of the articles against Wentworth. He was initially reported not to be participating in the rebellion (although his servants were) and protecting local protestants. He declared for his co-religionists on Ash Wednesday 1642, and besieged St. Leger\* in Cork and Travers\* at Rochestown in the following month, and fought later at Kilfinney in Limerick; his estates were declared forfeit for rebellion and he was also tried for the murder of Englishmen in Cork. He remained in Munster, fighting in Cork, Limerick, Clare and Kerry until September 1642, as commander of troops there. A member of the third, fourth, fifth and eighth Supreme Councils (1643-6, 1647), and a commissioner of trust (1649), he was also a member of the 1644 General Assembly and president of the Confederation's Admiralty Court. He was one of the Confederate commissioners negotiating with Ormond and Glamorgan in 1643 and 1645 and with Charles in 1644, and an agent for the Supreme Council in May 1647, trying to borrow money in Waterford. He was in France in 1648-9. He continued to command forces in Munster. In the summer of 1647 he fought in Limerick and was defeated by Inchiquin at Castleconnell; in the following year he was engaged in privateering with Antrim. He was still commanding the remnants of the

---

<sup>303</sup> He was also Browne's\* step-uncle, through his sister's marriage to Valentine's father.



royalist army in Munster in 1650 and 1651; he was pushed back to the mountains of West Cork and Kerry by Waller\* in early 1651 and still further pressed by Broghill in June. He was in Dublin in 1653, where he was examined about his conduct during the rebellion. In 1654 he left Ireland for France with 5,000 followers and the Commonwealth granted him £150 to defray some of the costs of transplanting his soldiers; at the same time it granted his wife a weekly allowance of £2. He spent much of the late 1650s on the continent, living at Paris (where his daughters were in school at Port Royal) and acting as one of Charles's principal advisors during his exile. He was reported to have close connections with the Jansenists in Paris and when he travelled to Poland with Bellings\* in 1655 to offer the services of his 5,000 troops to the king, his application was supported by a letter of introduction to the queen from the abbess of Port Royal.<sup>304</sup> He returned to Ireland on the restoration and an order was made for the complete recovery of his property in November 1660. Orrery reported that he was put in possession of his estates in the following May.

THOMAS MADDEN

Dungannon

e.s. John Madden, Bloxham Beauchamp, Oxfordshire; m. Elizabeth, da. William Pettiver, Northampton;

d. January 1641; bur. St. Werburgh's, Dublin.

Madden was comptroller of Wentworth's household and had connections with the Dungannon area. John Madden presumably a relative, was rector of Donnaghmore and Castlecaulfield, Tyrone; Thomas's son, also John,

<sup>304</sup> The abbess's account of his voyage to Paris and his reasons for going to Poland are instructive: "*Milord de Muskry le plus grand Seigneur & le plus riche de tous les Catholiques d'Irlande, homme fort sage & de grande vertu, ayant ete reduit par les Heretiques & Parlementaires d'Angleterre a la derniere necessite, apres leur avoir toujours resiste en ces dernieres guerres sous les Ordres & le Service de son Roy legitime, eut pour toute grace de Cromwel Tyran & Usupateur d'Angleterre de tirer d'Irlande 5000. hommes de guerre, pour servir quelques Rois ou Etats, pourvu que ce ne fuit ni en France, ni en Espagne. Apres avoir ete inutilement en Portugal, il vint a Paris au commencement de l'annee 1655, & ayant deja quelque connoissance a Port-Royal, par le moyen des deux Messieur de Callaghan Pretre de son Pays, dont celui qui est vivant, a ete Precepteur de son fils, it fut puissamment assiste par la charite de Mr. le Duc de Luines retire aupres de Port Royal, qui lui fournit toute la depense pour se faire honnetement habiller, & faire lui quatrience le voyage de Pologne, pour offrir a ce Roy qui avoit alors une grande guerre sur les bras, ses armes & celles de ces cinq mille hommes, les quels il desirot par la tirer de l'extreme misere & de la desolation de leur pays". Mme Angelique to the Queen of Poland, 1655. M.-A., Arnauld, *Relations ecrites par la Mere Marie-Angelique Arnauld, de ce qui est arrive de plus considerable dans Port Royal*. [Paris?, 1716]. pp 214-6. The Queen, a Frenchwoman who regularly visited Port-Royal; replied positively to Mme. Angelique, *ibid*, pp 216-7. I am grateful to Charles Benson for drawing this reference to my attention.*



married Elizabeth Waterhouse, a number of a Fermanagh settler family with links through marriage to the Butlers who controlled Belturbet. He and his brother Robert (d. 1635) settled in Dublin at Baggotrath and Donore respectively. He was presumably the Mr. Madden that Boyle\* "[made] use of in my absence from Dublin" to lodge documents for Cork.<sup>305</sup> He was unrelated to the Gaelic Maddens.

#### RORY MAGUIRE (1619-1648), Fermanagh

2 s. Brian Roe Maguire, first Lord Maguire of Enniskillen, and Rose, da. Art Mac Baron O'Neill; m. May 1640, Deborah, da. Admiral Sir Henry Mervyn, Hampshire, and Christian Touchet, da. Lord Castlehaven, w. Leonard Blenerhasset, Hassettstown, Fermanagh;

Rory's election, despite his youth, was due to his position as the younger brother of Lord Enniskillen and the intended husband of Deborah Blenerhasset, the daughter and widow of wealthy local settlers. The marriage, which took place in St. Werburgh's Church, Dublin, brought him considerable property, including the castle at Hassettstown and an annual income of £900. It also made him Mervyn's\* brother-in-law, and linked him to another important family of landowners in Fermanagh, Lord Huntingdon, heir to Sir John Davies's property there.<sup>306</sup> Through the Mervyns\*, he was also connected to less rigorously protestant people, including Piers Crosby\*, John Fitzgerald\* and the Munster peer, Lord Castlehaven. His main connections were, however, with Gaelic families, including his cousins the O'Neills\*. He lived at Hassettstown and Deerpark, Fermanagh. He was presumably educated locally, possibly attending the same school as his brother and Sir John Clotworthy.<sup>307</sup> He joined the new army in 1640 as a captain in John Butler's regiment but, with his brother, he was also one of the plotters of the rebellion, holding the same rank in their forces. Despite their different views, he and Mervyn\* remained in contact, at least in the early stages of the rebellion, when Mervyn\* tried to persuade his brother-in-law to submit to the administration and he asked Mervyn\* to intercede with the crown on behalf of the Irish; neither convinced the other. He

305 Joshua Boyle to Cork, 5 October 1639. *N.L.I. MS. 13,237* (24).

306 Davies was m.p. for Fermanagh in 1613, *D.N.B.*, and McGrath, 1613. pp 110-1.

307 — *The Whole triall of Conner Lord MacGuire*. (London, 1645).



was accused of robbing his neighbour Sir Henry Spottswood in October 1641; two months later he captured Lisgoole and Tully Castle. He was governor of Fermanagh and quickly became part of the army of his uncle, Owen Roe O'Neill, and colonel by 1643; most of his military activity was confined to Ulster, especially Fermanagh and Monaghan, in the early 1640s, although O'Neill's Connaught and Leinster campaigns brought him to the west and east of Ireland later in the decade. His position as a rebel did not prevent his being in Dublin in March 1643, where he signed a bond at the Staple. He was a member of the 1645 General Assembly. In the following year he fought at Benburb, against John Piggott\* at Dysart (Queen's County) and was in action also in Westmeath and Connaught; he disagreed with Owen Roe about payment for the army and was arrested and put on trial at Kilbeggan, although the issue was resolved. He continued to support O'Neill through his 1647-8 campaign, fighting near Kilkenny and capturing Banagher; he died in action at Jamestown in November 1648.

PHILIP MAINWARING (c1589-1661) Carysfort

y.s. Sir Randle Mainwaring, Over Peover, Cheshire, and Margaret, da. Sir Edward Fitton; unmarried;

ed. Gray's Inns (1609), Oxford (1610), B.A. (1613);

Kt. 1634;

M.P. Boroughbridge (1624-6), Derby (1628), Clonakilty and Banagher (1634), Morpeth (1640), Newton (1661).<sup>308</sup>

Mainwaring came to Ireland in 1634<sup>309</sup> as Wentworth's secretary of state and a privy councillor; the appointment was against Laud's and Cottingham's advice, but he had good links with Wentworth, having formerly kept him informed of foreign affairs. The two had not always been so close, but Strafford was well acquainted with his brother, Edward, his fellow member of the

<sup>308</sup> Mainwaring unsuccessfully contested Steyning in 1621 and 1642 (nominated by Lord Arundell), his uncle had previously represented Boroughbridge. Wentworth's asked Boyle to have him returned for Clonakilty in 1634.

<sup>309</sup> Philip's Irish connections began before 1634; his grandfather, Edward Fitton, was president of Connaught 1569-75 and a cousin, Gilbert Domville, settled in Ireland by 1606, became the son-in-law of Archbishop Thomas Jones of Dublin and was returned to the two previous parliaments. Other members of the Mainwaring family settled in Ireland in the 16th. century, and two other men of that name were m.p.s in 1634 (Roger for Lifford and Banagher - when he chose to represent Lifford, Matthew Mainwaring replaced him for Lifford). Cheshire Record Office MS. DCH/Z/8.



Council of the North from 1627. In 1638 Philip became a commissioner for defective titles and *custos sigili*; in that year he was also named as a possible delegate to hear appeals from ecclesiastical courts. In 1641 he was appointed to receive all letters out of Ireland and undersign those sent there by Charles. As secretary of state he frequently travelled between England and Ireland, carrying much of Wentworth's correspondence. The Deputy's faithful adherent, he broke into Piers Crosby's\* study to search for papers in 1634. He was embroiled in Wentworth's dispute with Lord Ely, and it was to them and Robert Dillon\* that the Lord Chancellor's lands in Wicklow were transferred, to the use of Robert Loftus\*, in 1638. He was imprisoned in 1655 for refusing to reconvey the lands to Edward Loftus. These land deals did provide a connection with Wicklow, which may explain his return for Carysfort, although Wentworth's influence there is the more likely explanation. His returns for Clonakilty and Banagher may have been eased by Cheshire links with Bannister\* and Robert Leicester. Not all Mainwarings were as loyal to the administration. Randal, Edward, Charles and William Mainwaring, all of Wicklow, were indicted for rebellion in 1642. He had a personal interest in the work of the 1640 parliament, as it passed a private bill concerning his lease of lands from the Lord Primate.

HENRY MANNING

Clogher

s. \_\_\_\_ Manning; m. Ursula, da. James Heygate (Heigate) (d. 1638), Bishop of Kilfenora;

d. 1642+

Manning lived at Drumbrochas, Fermanagh, but had strong links with Clogher. He was chancellor of the diocese and a tenant of Bishop Spottswood; his father-in-law retained some connections with that diocese, although his bishopric was in Clare. His brother-in-law, Cooke\* inherited Manor Heygate from the bishop and a Charles Manning of Manor Heygate married Thomasina Heygate, widow of the Bishop's son James, between July 1639 and August 1641. He had land deals in Monaghan with Sympson\* and Robert Loftus\* and leases of some MacMahon lands in Cavan from 1637-8; he signed a bond on the Dublin staple in August 1641.



PATRICK MANNING

Navan

s. Edward Manning, Navan;

d. 1643+

Patrick was a merchant and property holder in Navan, and a member of one of the town's most prominent families. The Mannings were connected to the Taaffes\*, Husseys (Barons of Galtrim) and Nettervilles, all important Meath families, which provided m.p.s for previous parliaments. Like his father, he was active as a rebel from November 1641; he was an ensign in the company formed in Navan in that month. He was still alive in April 1643.

JOHN MARTIN (d. 1656)

Charlemont

s. George Martin, Wicke, Worcestershire, and Alice, da. Sir James Caulfield; m.

Katherine \_\_\_\_\_ (d. 1667).

As Lord Charlemont's cousin (his mother was the second baron's sister) John's return for the Caulfield borough is unsurprising. That family provided many of his Irish connections, including Peisley\*, Gore\* and King\*, and another link was forged when his son married Brownlow's\* daughter. With Lords Charlemont and Castlestewart, he signed a letter to Falkland from Dungannon, in favour of Patrick Groome O'Quin and Turlagh O Dulan in April 1624.<sup>310</sup> He lived at Lurgan and was joint controller of the customs in Drogheda from 1629. He was a lieutenant in Willoughby's regiment in 1640. In March 1642, with other settlers living near Limavady, Coleraine and Londonderry, he signed a petition to the lords justice requesting a commission for Philips\* to command troops. Three months later he was imprisoned with Brownlow\* in Dungannon. With Sympson\* he was sworn an alderman of Drogheda in October 1649. He may have been related to Anthony Martin, Bishop of Meath, an opponent of Wentworth. A George Martin was sovereign of Belfast in 1649.

RICHARD MARTIN, (d. ?1659+)

Augher

e.s. Oliver Martin, Galway; m. Margaret, da. Sir Peter French, Galway;

310 B.L. MS. SL. 3827, f. 41r



ed. Middle Temple, 1622-9; King's Inns, 1630;  
M.P. Athenry 1634.

Martin was a member of the small number of wealthy merchant families which had controlled Galway for centuries. He was Lynch\* and Darcy's\* brother-in-law. Both his father and father-in-law were deprived of their mayoralties (in 1632 and 1616 respectively) for refusing the oath of supremacy. His close personal and working relationships with his fellow Galwegians were very important, as they formed a tightly-knit groups of able and respected merchants and lawyers who worked well together in legal practice and politics. His links with Darcy\* were especially significant. The Martins were a wealthy family - Oliver's annual income from lands in Galway alone was estimated at £400 - and Richard also acquired lands in Mayo and other property in Roscommon, in addition to his estates in Galway, including some near Athenry. One of the most prominent lawyers in Ireland (Wentworth described him as "*very able*"), he had an extensive practice. He was permanently retained by Clanricarde and Cork, and, with Darcy\*, acted also for Lord Antrim. He received leases of land in Carlow from Ormond as recognition of his services. With Darcy\*, he was one of the leaders of the catholic faction in the 1634 parliament, sitting on a large number of committees, including the standing ones on privileges and grievances, and those to present petitions relating to the Graces. His relationship with Wentworth was chequered; his role in the 1634 parliament, his agency (with Sir Roger O'Shaughnessy and Darcy\*) of the Galway landholders resisting the proposed plantation of Connaught, led to his being disbarred and imprisoned in 1635. His submission in the following year (he was released in May 1636), however, and his representation of the freeholders of Clare, who conveniently cleared the way for the planting of their estates by acknowledging Charles's title to their lands before the inquisition, led to his readmission to the bar, and to Wentworth's optimistic, if misplaced, hope, that "*he will in truth I think futurely become a new man.*"<sup>311</sup> Being disbarred did not, however, prevent him and Darcy\* from acting as lawyers, and they continued to advise clients from prison. They were supported during their disgrace by a number of influential men, opponents of Strafford, and the case for their readmission was repeatedly made by Antrim. His links with m.p.s other than his fellow catholic

---

311 Wentworth to Coke, 27 November 1637. Wentworth Woodhouse MSS, Vol. 9; quoted in Clarke, *Old English*, p. 110.



lawyers are more difficult to reconstruct, although Richard Fitzgerald\* is recorded as owing him £200 in May 1637. His return for Augher can only be explained as part of the concerted move to have a number of men, including Darcy\* and Phelim O'Neill\*, in the house in 1641. Both he and Darcy\* acted as advisors to the catholic members before their own returns. On the outbreak of the rebellion, he, with other townsmen, sought to preserve Galway from the neighbouring Irish who rose. He wrote to Ormond to request arms and ammunition to defend the town, but this request was refused. He spent much of the 1640s in Galway, where he and Darcy\* were leading members of the Council of Eight, established to govern the city. William Hanmer deposed that they were the "*lawyers that first moved the Towne of Galway to Rebellion, both by their letters from Dublin and their instigatio (sic) when they came to Galway.*"<sup>312</sup> He was mayor in 1643-4 and "*promised to releve the fort there: But when he came to be Major proved as badd or worse than any other rebell and would not releve nor partake with them of the fort.*"<sup>313</sup> He was an active supporter of the Confederation, serving as agent for Galway to the 1642 General Assembly and as a member of the Connaught provincial council from that year to at least 1645. He was one of the agents to bring peace proposals to Charles in 1643 and a member of the 1644 General Assembly. He was involved in the 1645 peace negotiations with Ormond and acted as a confederate judge in Connaught two years later. He may have been the Richard Martin who was living in Castle Street, Dublin in 1659.

ROBERT MAUDE (c1618-1685) Inistiogue

y.s. Robert Maude, Yorkshire, and Catherine Tempest, Broughton; m. Frances, da. Sir Christopher Wandesford; ed. Burnsall, Rippon, Sidney Sussex, Cambridge (matric. 1633); bur. St. Mary's, Kilkenny.

Maude inherited family property in Yorkshire but settled in Ireland, buying lands near Dundrum in Tipperary, and Kilkenny. He was a colonel in the Irish army and fought as a royalist at Newark, but then settled in Rippon, took the covenant and oath in July 1646 and compounded. His estates, assessed at £200, including lands mortgaged to William Wandesford\* before 1639, were to be

312 William Hanmer's deposition, *T.C.D. MS. 830*, f. 134v.

313 *ibid*, f. 148v.



sequestered for non-payment in 1649, but he was discharged in the following year. He was included in the list of Commonwealth soldiers who had served in Tipperary, Meath and Cork in the 1650s. His return for Inistiogue is usually attributed to his marriage with Christopher Wandesford's\* granddaughter, but this occurred after 1640 and a general Yorkshire connection with the family was probably responsible for his arrival in Ireland and his election. His son was m.p. for Knocktopher in 1692 and Cashel in 1695.<sup>314</sup>

THOMAS MAULE (MAULL, MAWLE) (1586-93-1672) Tralee

e.s. Thomas Maule, Pitlivie, Scotland, and Margaret Lichtoun (d. c1595), Ulishaven; (Thomas rem. c.1597, Martha, da. John Forrester, Denhouse); m. c.1628 Letitia, da. William Crowe, Dublin, and Elizabeth, da. Dr. Stephen Lake, London; at least 1 s.;

M.P. Sligo 1634,<sup>315</sup> Convention, Carysfort, Carysfort 1661.

Maule's father was a younger son of the Panmure family and his brother Robert and cousin Patrick (in whose favour Thomas renounced his interest in the lands of Pitlivie in March 1615) were gentlemen of the bedchamber to Charles. Patrick was a correspondent of Wentworth and pressed for favours for his cousin; at Thomas's request, his patent for land was passed to, and his petitions passed through, Patrick.<sup>316</sup> He was Wemys's\* cousin and described Ormond as an old great friend, (a claim given credence by his appointment as lieut. colonel of Ormond's regiment in 1640). His brother-in-law Crowe\* provided a link with Lord Cork. He came to Ireland before February 1624 when he was one of Falkland's secretaries (and lived in Dublin Castle). Two years later he appeared in Lady Ranelagh's funeral procession and was surveyor of customs with Moncke\* from 1627, the year in which he received his denization. He was not averse to using his influence in court for others, and

---

<sup>314</sup> He presented a chalice to the church in Cashel; this is now on display in the G.P.A. Bolton Library in Cashel.

<sup>315</sup> Some authorities list Thomas Maunsell as m.p., but it seems clear that this is an error for Maule. This return was due to Hannay and Crowe\*, who held property there, and Radcliffe\*, with whom Maule worked in the customs farm.

<sup>316</sup> Patrick, later Lord Panmure, had links with Yorkshire, having married the sister of George Stanhope, precentor of York. He was also a former client of Buckingham and a connection of Lord Antrim. Peerage and Ohlmeyer, *Antrim*, pp 51-2.



received money from Cork for his interventions on his behalf.<sup>317</sup> He was granted lands in Wicklow with his compatriot, Robert Hannay, in 1629, and over 2,000 acres in King's County with a John Fowler. In 1634 he had land deals with his close associate Philip Perceval and Ormond. Lord Ranelagh intervened to help him collect debts due to his father-in-law's estate. His customs work was apparently his connection with Tralee, as the county town had a role in their collection; he also had some links with Sir Thomas Harris, sheriff of Kerry, and a former client of Falkland. He signed two bonds for substantial sums of money on the Dublin Staple, one for £3,000 with Robert Dillon\* for Terence McDermot of Roscommon in November 1640, and another for £650 for Coote\* in 1654. In July 1641, Charles ordered that he be granted a wardship and a marriage as a reward for his services. He divided his time in the 1640s between England and Ireland, but was settled in Kent by 1652. He returned to Ireland. He lived in St. George's Lane, Dublin, where he was a commissioner for the Poll Money Ordinance in 1660-1. He was still surveyor of customs in 1661, when his salary was £100.

JAMES MELVILLE (MELVIN) (1586-1600-1653+)

[Newtownards]

2 s. John Melville, (d. 1626), Raith, Fife, and Margaret, da. Sir William Scott, Balwearie; m. 1618, Jean Sinclair, w. George Seton, Parbroath (Lady Parbroath); ? ed. Aberdeen, M.A., 1608-12;

Melville lived at Admure, Co. Down. Melvilles had a distinguished record of service to the Scottish crown: his uncles included the first Lord Melville, the courtier Sir James and Sir Andrew, a member of the households of both Mary Queen of Scots and James VI. His eldest brother married the Earl of Kellie's niece and his sister Margaret was James\* Hamilton's mother. Jean Sinclair's father-in-law, Sir David Seton, was comptroller of Scottish revenue. The Melvilles had close links with their compatriots in Down; they were connected to the Echlins and Hamiltons\* and were on good terms with the

<sup>317</sup> "Given Mr. Thomas Mawle for his paines at Court in solliciting Endymyon porter & Sir Henry Holcroft to procure his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s lettres, Inhibitting the Lo. Chancellor to proceed in any causes in chancery against me, & my daughter Sara, 20 peeces ... gave Mr. Tho. Maule, one of my Lo Deputies gents ... x<sup>li</sup>. ster: to keep Sir Richard Smyth and ensign croker from being sheriffs of the county of Waterford." entries for June 1627, and 30 November 1627. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II, pp 219, 267. He also had some dealings with Cork through bills of exchange in 1632. G. Hooker to Cork, 20 February 1632. *N.L.I. MS. 13,237* (15).



Montgomeries\*; with two other members of the family, he formed part of the procession in Lord Montgomery's funeral in 1636. His uncle and namesake was buried in Inch, County Down, in 1628. The Melvilles were prosperous but indebted, hence their interest in settling in Ulster; Sir John held lands in Down from 1610, and James was included in a list of applicants for 2,000 acres of plantation lands. His father settled his estate in 1616 and his share of 1,000 marks was payable in 1620; he received an annual grant of 300 Scottish marks from his brother John and in 1635 a legacy of £1,000 Scottish from his cousin Robert, second Lord Melville, when John inherited that title. He was apparently still alive in 1653, perhaps as a merchant in Edinburgh.

ROBERT MEREDITH, (c1592-1668)      Athy / Ballyshannon

e.s. Dr. Richard Meredith (d. 1597), Bishop of Leighlin, and Sarah Bathow; she rem. Adam Loftus, Lord Ely; m. Anne, da. Sir William Ussher and Isabella, da. Archbishop Adam Loftus and Alice Purdon; ed. Lincoln's Inns, Trinity College Dublin; Kt. 1635.

M.P. Boyle 1613, Boyle and Augher 1634,<sup>318</sup> Jamestown, 1661.

Meredith's link with Augher and Ballyshannon were tenuous and it must be assumed that his return for these seats was due to his official position, rather than to any local connection. He was Robert Loftus's\* half-brother and had close links with the rest of the Loftuses\* in both houses of parliament. His step-father's position as Lord Chancellor, the extensive Loftus\* connections with the administration and with many new English families, were reinforced by his own marriage to the daughter of the clerk of the council, a member of an important administrative family of old English origin. This marriage made him William and John Usshers'\* uncle and also linked him to Philips\*, Blayney\*, and the Trevors\*, Moores\* and Parsons\*. His step-sister-in-law Eleanor Loftus linked him to Wentworth\*, Gifford\*, St. George\* and the Cootes\*. His brother Thomas<sup>319</sup> was Faithful Fortescue's\* son-in-law, and his own daughters married

---

<sup>318</sup> He opted to represent Augher in 1634 and Athy in 1640. His return for Athy is explained by his residence in Kildare and his tenancy on some of Ormond's property in Carlow, but he held no land in Roscommon, and although his nephew by marriage, William Ussher\*, had extensive property there, it was in Athlone Barony, the other side of the county from Boyle.

<sup>319</sup> m.p. for Old Leighlin and Newtownards in 1634.



Carr\* and Coote\*. These links were not merely familial; he acted as his step-father's secretary and Ely intervened to support him when Falkland took a case against him in the Star Chamber. He was a member of the 1624-5 Kildare commission for the peace. His Dublin residence was in Oxmantown (where he was a neighbour of the Parsons\*) and he also held lands in Blanchardstown. He had a lease of church lands in Leighlin but his request for an extension was refused. In 1633 Ormond granted him a lease of lands at Rathvilly (Carlow) and Kilkenny,<sup>320</sup> and six years later he was granted lands in Wicklow formerly held by Edward Brabazon and his father Lord Meath. His Kildare property (which explains his return for Athy) was confirmed by the Act of Settlement. Both he and his brother Thomas acquired extensive lands in Mayo between 1640 and 1660. He held a number of crown posts, most importantly that of chancellor of the exchequer from 1634, but also as clerk of the hanaper (by 1637) and commissioner of the court of Castle Chamber (1639). He was a privy councillor from 1635. With Adam Loftus\* and George Radcliffe\* he was a farmer of the customs. He remained in Ireland, chiefly concerned with administrative duties in the early 1640s, although as j.p. for Dublin, Meath, Carlow, Armagh and Roscommon in 1642-3 he examined people concerning events in those counties. In 1643 he was arrested and imprisoned in Dublin and later brought to London, but released (although he refused to be exchanged for Lady Moore), and, with King\* was appointed parliamentary commissioner in 1647. In the same year he was with Wharton\*, Clotworthy and King\*, appointed to treat with Ormond. In 1648 he was made keeper of the seals and two years later trustee to raise money for Ireland. In 1651 he was a witness in the long-running Gifford\*-Loftus\* case. He signed bonds on the Dublin Staple in 1654, including some with Nicholas Whyte\* and his father. He was a commissioner of the High Court of Justice in Kilkenny in the early 1650s and commissioner to set the assessment for Ireland in Dublin City and County and Kildare for the final quarter of 1654 and for Kildare in the second half of 1657; he was a j.p. for that county in the following year. He was a commissioner for the Poll Money Ordinance in Kildare and Dublin City and County in 1660-1. He was reappointed to his offices in 1660; he had an annual pension of £100 and an allowance of £31 10/- for wines.

---

320 in a deed witnessed by Richard Fitzgerald\*, and William Smyth\*; Comerford\* and Wemys\* were also parties to the deal. *N.L.I. MS. D. 3938.*



AUDLEY MERVYN (MERVIN) (1603-1675) Tyrone

2 s. Admiral Sir Henry Mervyn, Hampshire, and Lady Christian Touchet, da. Lord Castlehaven; m. 1) c. 1638, Mary, da. John Dillon, Castle Dillon, Armagh, w. Lieut. Francis Windsor, Ballydermot, Co. Londonderry; 2) Martha, da. Sir Hugh Clotworthy, Massereene, Co. Antrim, and Carrickfergus, and Mary, da. Roger Langford, Muckmaire, Antrim; 3) Olivia, da. Richard Coote and Mary, da. Sir George St. George\*;

ed. Oxford, 1618; King's Inns, 1658;

Convention, Tyrone, M.P. Tyrone 1661.

Several members of this family settled in Ireland - his uncle Edmund Mervyn died in Dublin in 1634 and Audley's older brother James died in Dublin in 1641, leaving him as his heir. He had already inherited lands in Tyrone (where he lived at Trillick or Castle Touchett) and Fermanagh from his uncle, Lord Castlehaven, which he undertook to plant. He held 59% of the land in Omagh Barony, and another connection, Lord Huntingdon, held a further 18%. He had many recusant connections: his sister Deborah married Maguire\*, Lord Castlehaven was a catholic and Dorothy Audley married Lord Mountgarrett's heir. The Touchetts also linked him to John Fitzgerald\* and Piers Crosbie\*. His own marriages were to members of the new English community in east Ulster; his father-in-law Dillon<sup>321</sup> was m.p. for Armagh in 1634. Martha Clotworthy provided connections with Langford\*, the Cootes\* and prominent members of the English parliament. Despite his lack of parliamentary experience, he quickly became a leader of the House, and was a member of the committee to draw charges against, and preside over the impeachment of Radcliffe\*, Bolton, Lowther and Bramhall. His prominence in parliament was presumably due at least in part to the role played by his brother-in-law Sir John Clotworthy and another family connection, John Pym, in the Long Parliament. He had dealings on the Dublin Staple in October 1641. An active soldier, he was a captain in Sir Henry Tichbourne's regiment in 1640, lieut. colonel under Gore\* in the following year, and, with Waller\*, Arthur Hill\* and James Montgomery\*, formed a committee to petition Charles for support of the army in Ireland in 1642, when his own regiment was based in Raphoe and Omagh. In the following year he brought letters to Leicester in England. He took part in Monro's

---

<sup>321</sup> This John Dillon was a member of a Staffordshire family, settled in Armagh. He should not be confused with the old English Dillons\*, to whom he was not related. Hill, *Plantation*, p. 405.



campaign in 1644 (the year in which he became governor of Londonderry) and Coote's\* Connaught campaign two years later, when he also had a regiment of foot in Ulster. He was colonel in that province in 1648 and, with Robert Stewart\* was arrested by Coote\* and sent to England. He was allowed to return to Ireland in May 1649, on his promise to live peaceably there, but he fought against Coote\* at the siege of Derry later that year. In 1655 he was imprisoned in Carlow. He was a commissioner for the poll money ordnance in Tyrone in 1660-1; he was speaker of the 1661 Commons and a strong defender of the 'Protestant interest' in Ireland. He was appointed prime serjeant in 1661. He held over 1,260 acres in County Dublin at the time of his death.

CHARLES MONCKE

Coleraine

s. Henry Moncke, Devon, and Jane Heathcote, Buckinghamshire; m. 1) Elizabeth (d. 1638), da. Sir John Blenerhasset (d. 1624), Norfolk and Fermanagh, and Ursula Dukes; 2) Rebecca Thimbleby, Dublin, w. Sir Nathaniel Catlin (d. 1637); ed. Lincoln's Inns, 1607; King's Inns, 1617; d. c1644.

M.P. Strabane 1634.

As the son of his father's second marriage, Charles had relatively poor prospects in England. His education at Lincoln's Inns was probably limited, as he entered the King's Inns as an attorney, normally a term used for men whose legal education was gained through practical work rather than academic study.<sup>322</sup> He came to Ireland with Chief Justice Sir John Denham in 1609 and was appointed clerk of the peace in Wexford in 1616; eight years later he became a freeman of Youghal, apparently as part of Falkland's retinue, when the lord deputy visited the town.<sup>323</sup> His connection with Denham and the Blennerhassets was the key to his advancement in Ireland as there was a strong link between those families. Denham and Blenerhasset came to Ireland at the same time and were important members of the administration. His 1616 Wexford appointment may be traced to Blenerhasset's influence as a commissioner for the plantation there in the

---

<sup>322</sup> His father-in-law Blenerhasset was a bencher of Lincoln's Inns and treasurer of King's Inns; the latter position may have eased Moncke's passage into that institution.

<sup>323</sup> *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II, p. 372; 36 gentlemen, apparently all accompanying Falkland, received this honour, as well as the lord deputy, 29 August 1624.



previous year.<sup>324</sup> He was involved in administrative work with ports and the customs from at least January 1623, when Falkland sent him to investigate activities in the Munster ports of Cork, Waterford, Youghal and Dungarvan, and he became joint surveyor (with Maule\*) of the customs in 1627. His customs work provided his links with his constituencies and his reports show his familiarity with Ulster ports, including Coleraine.<sup>325</sup> His first marriage linked him to the administration and the new English settler community, as Blenerhasset was baron of the exchequer, commissioner of the court of wards and a settler in Fermanagh; Elizabeth Blenerhasset's sisters married Philip Fernley (clerk of the 1634 commons) and the settler Francis Sacheverell of Armagh, and there was also a Blenerhasset connection with Mervyn\* and Maguire\*. His second wife was the widow of a judge, recorder of Dublin and Speaker of the 1634 Commons. His land deals were in Kildare and Dublin (with Nicholas Whyte\* and his father) and Westmeath. He lived in St. Stephen's Green, Dublin. Charles's will was executed by his Kildare neighbour, Sir Erasmus Borroughs. He was an active member of the 1634 parliament, sitting on a number of committees, but his only recorded appearance in the 1640 commons was to answer questions about the customs.

Sir Hugh Montgomery came to Ireland in 1605 from Scotland and built up extensive landholdings in County Down, in partnership with the Hamiltons\*. Sir Hugh, m.p. for Down County in 1613, was created Lord Montgomery of the Ardes in 1622<sup>326</sup> and the three Montgomeries in the 1640 parliament were his son and two grandsons. The Hamilton and Montgomery families dominated the parliamentary representation of the county from 1613 but they also retained their Scottish interests; they worked closely together in building up their property in Ireland and fostered strong networks with other Scottish settler families in Ulster.

---

324 Blenerhasset was m.p. for Belfast in 1613. McGrath, 1613. p. 97; Ball, *Judges*, I, p. 323.

325 Moncke and Thomas Allen to Falkland, 23 January 1623, *B.L. MS. Harl. 1581*, f. 248; his 1637 report *B.L. MS. Harl. 2138*, ff 167-192 is also referred to by Perceval-Maxwell, 1641, pp 32,42-3, where he is referred to as George.

326 McGrath, 1613. pp 106-7 and *Peerage*.



GEORGE MONTGOMERY (1624+-1674) Newtownards<sup>327</sup>

y.s. Hugh Montgomery, (d. 1642), second Lord Montgomery of the Ardes, and Jean Alexander, da. Lord Stirling; she rem. General Robert Monroe; m. Anne or Grisel, da. \_\_\_\_\_ McDowell, laird of Garthland, Galloway; ed. Newtownards; bur. Newtownards.

George was Hugh's\* younger brother, and James's\* nephew. Like them he travelled on the continent but, unlike them, was regarded as "unbookish". He received his military education as a soldier in the Netherlands and commanded a troop of horse, quartered in Comber, in Ulster in 1642. He signed the petition of Charles's protestant subjects in 1643 and commanded a troop in Dromore under his step-father the following year. He held lands at Ballilassen and Balibrately, Down, and was living at Ballilassen in 1660. His youth makes it unlikely that he made any substantial contribution to the work of the House; he is not recorded as a committee member.

HUGH MONTGOMERY (1623-1663) Newtownards<sup>328</sup>

e.s. Hugh Montgomery, (d. 1642), second Lord Montgomery of the Ardes, and Jean Alexander, da. Lord Stirling; she rem. General Robert Monroe; m. 1) 1648, Mary, da. Charles, Lord Moore, and Alice, da. Sir Adam Loftus, Lord Ely, and Sarah Bathow, w. Bishop Meredith, Leighlin; 2) Catherine, da. Arthur Jones, Lord Ranelagh; 3rd. Lord Montgomery of the Ardes, 1642; Earl of Mount Alexander, 1660.

Hugh was George's\* brother and James's\* nephew and also had links to Meredith\* and the Loftuses\*. Like James\*, he travelled on the continent when young, learning French, fencing, music and military skills, and returned to Ireland *via* the English court, He maintained close contact with Lord Eglinton, the Scottish head of the Montgomeries\*. He was a staunch royalist in the 1640s, serving as colonel of a regiment in 1642; he signed the petition of Charles's protestant subjects in the following year and 400 foot of his troops formed part of the army sent out of Scotland in that July. He took part in his step-father's

<sup>327</sup> a writ for his replacement was issued on 5 March 1641.

<sup>328</sup> Like George\*, Hugh's youth limited his contribution to the parliament and he requested the house to accept his resignation on grounds of sickness, on 12 October 1640. The request was referred to a committee.



campaigns at Lisnegarvey and became president of the Council of War in Antrim in the following year. He fought at Blackwater in 1646 and was taken prisoner at Benburb. He was released by August 1648. He repudiated the solemn league and covenant in 1649, an action which provoked a furious response from his fellow presbyterians in Bangor.<sup>329</sup> He became commander in chief of the king's forces in Ulster by that May, with Robert Stewart\* as his subordinate. Three months later he marched to join Ormond in attacking Michael Jones at Dublin and in December fought the Cromwellian forces at Lisnegarvey. He was imprisoned in Kilkenny by Ireton in 1651 and in the following year was exempted from pardon by Cromwell and banished to the Low Countries, although he was in London with other Scots in 1653 to protest against the threatened transportation of the Scottish colony in Ireland; he joined with his brother-in-law Henry Moore\* to reach a settlement of their estates, an action aided by the lukewarmness of his episcopalianism. He was imprisoned in Kilkenny again in 1655, transferred to Dublin and was released from close custody in the following April on health grounds. He was forbidden to leave Dublin and granted a weekly allowance of £4 for his board. Four years later the religious independents, who were again in control, started proceedings against him.<sup>330</sup> At the restoration he was made master of the Ordnance, governor of Londonderry, Tyrone, Donegal, Fermanagh and Cavan, admitted to the privy council and granted an earldom.

JAMES MONTGOMERY (1598-1600-1651) Down County

2 s. Sir James Montgomery, first Viscount Montgomery of the Ardes (d. 1636) and Elizabeth Shaw; m. 1) 1631, Katherine, (d. 1636), da. Sir William Stewart\*, Ramelton, Donegal, and Frances, da. Sir Robert Newcomen and Catherine, da. Thomas Molyneux, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Ireland; 2) 1636-46, Margaret, da. Sir William Cole\* and Susan, da. J. Croft, Lancashire, w. S. Segar, Lieutenant of Dublin Castle; 3) 1647, Frances St. Laurence, da. Nicholas, 23rd. Lord Howth, and Jane, da. Bishop George Montgomery;

ed. St. Andrews, M.A., Gray's Inns, 1621;

Kt. 1630;

M.P. Strabane 1613, Down 1634.

<sup>329</sup> Carrickfergus Presbytery, *The Complain of the Boutefev, scorched in his own kindlings ...* (London, 1649); Bangor Presbytery, *A Declaration ... setting forth the apparent ruine of Religion ...* (s.l., 1649).

<sup>330</sup> Barnard, *Cromwellian Ireland*, pp 122-3,132,152.



James lived at Greyabbey and Rosemount, County Down on lands granted to him by his father; his house being close to Downpatrick. With his older brother, he received his denization in 1610. He was admitted freeman of Dublin in 1632. He was Hugh\* and George's\* uncle, William Stewart's\* and Cole's\* son-in-law and Robert Stewart's\* nephew by marriage. His first two wives connected him to a number of Scottish and new English settler families, including Moynes\*, Philips\* and the Usshers\*, Parsons\* and Loftuses\*. His third wife linked him to many important old English families, although this contact must have been limited by the upheavals of the 1640s; Frances St. Laurence was, however, already connected to him through his uncle George, Bishop of Derry and Raphoe. He received a conventional education and, like many other members of his family, also travelled through Germany, Italy, France and Holland, to complete his education and spent some time at the English court where he was gentleman usher to Charles. He acted as his father's agent there (especially in dealing with Sir Thomas Smith's complaints) and in Ireland. He was a member of the Tyrone 1624-5 commission of the peace and was admitted freeman of Dublin in 1632. He took little part in the proceedings of the previous parliaments but was a member of a number of committees in 1640-1, including that appointed to take the grievances to Charles in England in November 1641. He gave evidence for the prosecution in Wentworth's trial. With his brother Hugh, second Lord Montgomery, he received a commission to raise troops in Lecale and Ardes, which were stationed in Antrim on the outbreak of the rebellion, when James wrote to Charles through Galbraith\*. He was still in charge of these regiments two years later. He was prominent in the defence of Lecale in 1641; with Waller\*, Arthur Hill\* and Mervyn\* he formed a committee to petition Charles for support of the army. His troops formed part of the army sent out of Scotland in the summer of 1643. He fought with Monroe (who married his sister-in-law Jean Alexander) at Lisnagarvey in 1644, when he had the rank of colonel and at Benburb in the following year. He was one of the Ulster commanders who decided to refuse the covenant. After Monroe's defeat, he and Hugh\* refused to join Monck on his march to Coleraine, in 1648; he, Robert Stewart\* and Mervyn\* were arrested later that year and sent to England. James was allowed to return to Ireland in May 1649, having promised to live peaceably. He fled to Scotland five months later and travelled through England



under the name James Huson, but was killed by privateers at sea on his way to Holland. He was posthumously excluded from pardon in the 1652 Act for the Settlement of Ireland.

The Moores came to Ireland in the sixteenth century and established two separate branches in King's County and in Louth / south Armagh. Both branches built up extensive possessions and networks of influential connections, especially with the Loftuses\*, and it is no surprise to find them strongly represented in early 17th. century parliaments. The head of the Louth branch sat in the lords as Viscount Moore and the King's County branch was based at Croghan, near Banagher, on property which came to the family through the marriage of one of the Moores to a daughter of the settler Sir Henry Colley.

HENRY MOORE (1624-1675)

Ardee

e.s. Charles, Viscount Moore (d. 1643) and Alice, da. Sir Adam Loftus, Lord Ely and Sarah Bathow, w. Bishop Meredith of Leighlin; m. Alice, da. Lord Spencer; ed. Cambridge, 1639, M.A. 1640; Viscount Moore, 1643.

Henry's return was due to his father's position in Louth, where he held considerable property and lived at Mellifont. He was the nephew of Fortescue\*, Meredith\* and Robert Loftus\*, and cousin of the other Loftuses\* in the Commons; he was also a cousin of Moore\* and Nicholas Whyte\*, and the other members of that family network, including De Renzi\* and Digby\*. He was Hugh Montgomery's\* brother-in-law and connected to Blayney\*, King\* and Lord Ranelagh. His wife was Lord Sunderland's sister and a connection of Lord Leicester. Given his youth and his enrolment in Cambridge, it is unlikely that he played any significant part in parliamentary business; he is not recorded as having been nominated to any committee. In January 1643 he received a proposition of the Confederates and three months later commanded 1,000 foot and some horse which was sent to the north of Ireland; that July he was with his troops near Dundalk. In the same year, on Ormond's recommendation and despite his youth, he was appointed to his father's positions as commander of a



troop of horse and governor of Meath and Louth, although his position must have been complicated by his mother's involvement in a plot to betray Drogheda to the Scots in 1644-5. He was granted special livery of his estates in 1645, although he was still technically a minor.<sup>331</sup> He was included in the lists of the army establishment in Ireland in 1646. He was appointed governor of Drogheda by Inchiquin, but replaced by Ormond (and rumoured to have been hanged) in August 1649 as part of his defence against Cromwell's expected attack. His estates were sequestered in the following year but he clearly came to terms with the new order, as Mellifont was restored to him three years later, following his petition to Parliament. He signed a number of bonds on the Dublin Staple in 1647 and 1654-5. He joined his brother-in-law Montgomery\* to effect a settlement of his lands in 1654 and two years later was *custos rotullorum* of Louth (a post he held also in 1663). On the restoration he was a commissioner to satisfy the arrears of the '49 Officers, captain in a troop of horse and governor of Drogheda and Louth in 1662. He was a Poll Money Ordnance commissioner in Meath and Louth in 1660.

JOHN MOORE (1620-1682)

Philipstown

e.s. Thomas Moore (d. 1638) and Margaret (rem. Philip Digby), da. Sir Ambrose Forth and Anne, da. Sir Thomas Cusack, Lismullen; m. 1) 1639, Mary, da. William Sambach; 2) Elizabeth, da. Dudley Colley.

Moore's grandfather, Sir John, settled at Croghan, near Banagher, and acquired extensive possessions in King's county, which John inherited from his father, m.p. for Philipstown, 1634. Sir John was a cousin of Garrett Moore<sup>332</sup> who married a daughter of Archbishop Loftus\*; through them, he was connected to Henry Moore\*, the Fortescues\* and Chichesters\* and the Loftus\* network in both houses of parliament. Through his own mother, (whose second husband was Digby's\* brother and Langford's\* brother-in-law), he was Forth's\* nephew and a cousin of the Cusacks\* and their many connections. He own marriages linked him with the administration and Gifford\*. He was also a cousin and brother-in-law of De Renzi\* and linked through his aunts' and uncles' marriages to members of the other local Dempsey\*, Coughlan\* and St. George\* families.

---

<sup>331</sup> The reasons for this exceptional proceeding are unclear, but it may have been to free up his estate to enable him to support his troops.

<sup>332</sup> first Lord Moore, see *Peerage*, and McGrath, 1613. p. 115.



ROGER MOYNES (MOIGNES, MOINE) (1610-1641-2) ?Cavan  
e.s. Bishop Thomas Moyne, Kilmore, and Abigail, da. Roger Dod, Bishop of  
Meath; m. 1) Margaret, (d. - 1635), da. Sir Samuel Mayart and \_\_\_\_\_;<sup>333</sup>  
2) Dorothea \_\_\_\_\_.

Moynes sat on three Commons committees, all appointed in February 1641. His father came to Cavan as bishop of Kilmore in 1612-3, and established his home at Moynehall. Bishop Moyne acquired over 2,000 acres in Loughtee Barony, partly through land deals with his relative, the Dublin merchant, John Greenham, and Roger inherited the property in 1629. Part of his lands were let to the Irish, although the 28 men he presented at the 1630 Cavan muster all had British names. He had other Cavan connections, including some with the Taylors of Ballyhaise<sup>334</sup> through his sister Jane's marriage to a member of the Armagh settler family of Cope. Most of his official connections were through his father and grandfather's episcopal positions, but his first father-in-law was a justice of the common pleas, and provided links with the administration. His step-mother-in-law Dorcas Mayart had connections to James Montgomery\*, and the Usshers\*, Parsons\* and Stewarts\*. After the rebels surprised their house on 28 October 1641, Dorothy sheltered in Bishop Bedell's house while he, with many of his neighbours, joined a company of soldiers under Captain Aldrich, who went to relieve Drogheda; he was killed, presumably in action, before March 1642. His widow made a number of depositions, claiming losses of roughly £1,613, plus debts, and an annual income from lands of £210.<sup>335</sup> She also signed the petition of distressed gentlewomen to the English Parliament.<sup>336</sup>

THOMAS NANGLE (1580-1642-54) Navan  
e.s. Martin Nangle, Baron of Navan, and Allison, da. Sir Francis Herbert,  
Ballycotland (Coughlanstown), Kildare; m. by 1598, Marian (d. 1623), da. Ald.  
Christopher Fagan, Dublin; 6 s., 1 da.

<sup>333</sup> Samuel Mayart rem. as her third husband, Dorcas, da. Sir Robert Newcomen and Catherine Molyneux, w. Francis White (d. 1622)); Dorcas's second husband, whose identity is unknown, d. 1625. Playfair, V, pp cxliii-v.

<sup>334</sup> Brockhall Taylor of Ballyhaise was m.p. for Cavan town in 1634.

<sup>335</sup> Depositions of or on behalf of Dorothy Moyne, *T.C.D. MSS 832*, ff 66v-7r, 94v-95r; 833, ff 12r, 19r, 36v, 200r.

<sup>336</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 840*, f. 27r.



**ROBERT** The Nangles were descended from the old Norman family de Angulo (of the Corner), one branch of which settled in Galway and became the McCostelloes, and the other established itself in Meath and acquired the courtesy title of Barons of the Navan, near which town they held land, originally granted to them by Sir Hugh de Lacy, and whose trade they generally controlled.<sup>337</sup> Thomas was the seventeenth titular baron of the Navan and a commissioner to raise money in Meath for the army in 1627. He succeeded his grandfather Patrick Nangle in 1598 and inherited his lands in Dublin and Meath. His mother was the daughter of a new English settler; his own marriage connected him with one of the more important Dublin merchant families. He was also connected with old and new English families of Dublin and the Pale. His aunt, Catherine, daughter of Baron Patrick Nangle, married Dudley Bagnal of Carlow, providing a link with Blakeney\*, and his eldest son (who predeceased him) married Jane, daughter of Edward Bolton. Another son, Martin, married one of the Holywoods\* of Artane. He was indicted for rebellion and strongly supported the rebel cause in Meath. He attended the meeting of Meath gentry at Tara in December 1641. There is no record of his transplantation, so he presumably died before 1654.

**GEORGE NETTLETON (1606-1640)** Killyleagh  
2 s. Thomas Nettleton, Thornhill, Yorkshire, and Mary Baylie; unmarried;  
d. 9 July 1640; bur. Christchurch, Dublin.

George and Robert's\* mother was George Radcliffe's\* half-sister and they were thus a first cousin of Thomas Radcliffe\* and Carr\*; they may also have been connected to the Littles\*, who were from Thornhill. George and Thomas Little\* leased lands in Mullingar from Lord Moore in April 1640. George's sister married their fellow Yorkshireman, Sir Richard Osbaldstone, attorney general of Ireland.<sup>338</sup> George's Irish links were entirely through his personal connection with the administration and he lived in Dublin Castle.

<sup>337</sup> *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, VI, pp 395-8.

<sup>338</sup> Osbaldstone's first wife, Ellen Westrop, who died in 1638, was also a Yorkshirewoman. Osbaldstone appears to have had a connection with the Bysses\*, see note under Robert Bysses\*.



ROBERT (ROBIN) NETTLETON, (1601-1673) Lifford  
e s. Thomas Nettleton, Thornhill, Yorkshire, and Mary Baylie; m. Frances, da.  
Richard Rawlinson;  
ed. Gray's Inns, (1619); Oxford, B.A. (1621), M.A. (1623).

Robert, as George's\* brother, was closely connected with the administration. He returned to Yorkshire, where he lived until his death, after falling from a horse. Like his sister Mary Osbaldston and their cousin Thomas Radcliffe\*, he was buried in Thornhill.

Neither Robert not George\* had any particular connections with his constituency but their links with the administration explain their returns.

JOHN NUGENT, Fore  
3 s. Richard Nugent, Lord Westmeath and Jane, da. Christopher, 9th. Lord Kileen; m. Catherine, da. James Dillon, Ballymulvey, Longford;  
d. 1653+  
M.P. Fore 1634.<sup>339</sup>

John held lands in Moydowne and Ardagh Baronies, Westmeath and Drumeng, Longford, but as he supported the Confederation, they were declared forfeit and at least part of them were granted to Sir Boyle Maynard. He was involved in the Confederation's financial work and may have been the Corporal John Nugent who was in the Confederate Army. He was transplanted to 565 acres in Roscommon. He was linked to the Barnwalls\*, Cheevers\* and Fitzgeralds\* and other old English Leinster families.

DERMOT O'BRIEN Clare  
3 s. Teige O'Brien (d. 1612), Dromore, and Joan, da. Sir Dermot O'Shaugnessy, Gort, Co. Galway; m. Una, da. Donough\* O'Brien and Slaney, da. Teige O'Brien, Smithstown, Clare, or Margaret, da. Sir John Burke, Derrymaclaghny;  
d. 1647-50.

<sup>339</sup> Nugent replaced his cousin, Thomas Nugent of Dunfert, who died in October 1634.



rebellion by 1642 and held a commission from the Confederation to protect his  
cousin. Dermot was a nephew of the fourth Earl of Thomond, cousin and son-  
in-law of Donough\*, and cousin of Inchiquin. He was also connected to  
Wingfield\*, who had cousins in Clare, the St. Legers\*, and Ogle\*. His marriage  
reinforced links with the other branches of the extensive O'Brien\* clan.

He held lands in Clare, especially at Dromore. He signed a bond with  
Perceval in July 1641. He was a captain in Butler's\* regiment in the new army in  
1640; when the Irish army was to be disbanded he agreed to take his troops to  
serve in Spain.<sup>340</sup> On the outbreak of the rebellion he was appointed a captain  
in the forces raised by his cousin Thomond to defend Clare, but he joined the  
rebels by 28 December 1641, when he was accused of robbing the English widow,  
Frances Bridgement in Clare, and of besieging other English within the county,  
by which time he was clearly one of the leaders of the rebels there. He held the  
rank of colonel in the Confederate army by October 1642, and was one of the  
besiegers of Limerick in that year. He was a member of the 1642, 1644 and 1647  
General Assemblies, one of the Irish agents to meet Charles at Oxford and a  
commissioner to negotiate peace with Ormond and Glamorgan. He repudiated  
the 1646 Ormond peace.

DONOUGH O'BRIEN (1584-86-1651), Clare

2 s.s. Sir Turlogh O'Brien, (d. 1623), Dough, and Annabella, da. Sir Henry Lynch,  
Galway; m. 1) Margaret, da. Sir John Burke, Derrymaclaghny; 2) Slaney, da. Teige  
O'Brien, Smithstown, Clare;  
M.P. Mallow 1634.

The O'Briens of Dough were descended from Sir Donal, a brother of the  
second Earl of Thomond. Donough was Dermot's\* father-in-law and Lynch's\*  
cousin. He was connected by marriage to the St. Legers\*, Ogle\* and McCarthy\*.  
Donough held lands in Rathboney Parish, Clare, which his father devised to him  
in 1607. He served under Owen Roe O'Neill on the continent in the 1610s. As  
Donough O'Brien of Dough and Newtown, (a tower-house near Ballyvaughan)  
he was a member of the Clare 1624-5 commission of the peace. He joined the

---

<sup>340</sup> This implies some former military experience, although Jennings, *Wild Geese*, provides no  
evidence of this.



rebellion by 1642 and held a commission from the Confederation to prevent his cousin Thomond's tenants paying their rent. His military experience was useful to the Confederation and he joined their army, holding the rank of captain by 1647, when he was captured at the battle of Knockenosse. He was released but recaptured two years later, fighting with Ormond against Jones near Dublin. He was a hostage for the negotiation of the treaty on the surrender of Limerick to Ireton in 1651 and was killed by Waller\* later that year.

JOHN OGLE (?1592-1604-1663) Tallow

e.s. Sir John Ogle, Pinchbeck (Pickenham), Lincolnshire, and Elizabeth de Vries, Dort, Holland; unmarried;

ed. Jesus College, Cambridge, 1633;

Kt. 1646;

bur. Westminster Abbey.

Sir John Ogle was a soldier<sup>341</sup> and John was born in the Low Countries during his father's service there; with his siblings, he received his denization in 1622. His return for Tallow is explained by his uncle Sir William St. Leger's\* influence. He was St. Leger\* jr.'s cousin, Kingsmill's\* brother-in-law and a connection of the O'Briens\*. Other family relationships were with Sir John Manwood<sup>342</sup> and the Duke of Buckingham, through his aunt's marriage to Sir Francis Beaumont. These family connections were maintained and Lady Ogle's house at Minehead was regarded as a safe channel for letters to St. Leger\* in February 1642.<sup>343</sup> He was a man of property before he came to Ireland - his father settled some English lands, including an interest in the manor of Pinchbeck, on him in 1629. Sir John also tried, apparently unsuccessfully, to transfer the command of his own company in the Irish army to him.<sup>344</sup> The reasons for this failure are unclear, as he was then pursuing a military career and participated in

---

<sup>341</sup> Ogle sr. was an experienced and respected soldier who served with Sir Francis Vere in the Low Countries; he was governor of Utrecht in 1610 and corresponded on military matters with his cousin Salisbury and Dudley Carlton, and on religious matters with Bishop Lancelot Andrews, to whom he sent a book by Utenbogardt in 1614, which the prelate forwarded to the king. Ogle gave military advice to Buckingham and was a member of the council of war, 1625-7.

<sup>342</sup> Another brother-in-law, and chief justice of the common pleas in England.

<sup>343</sup> Minehead was one of the usual ports for embarkation to Ireland.

<sup>344</sup> He had been granted the command in 1625. Other Ogles settled in Ireland in the 17th. century, especially in Ulster, and it is not clear whether it was John or another man of that name who was fined £200 and imprisoned for taking compositions on defective titles without authority, in 1632.



the 1625 Cadiz expedition as lieutenant in the master of the ordnance's regiment. He became serjeant-major of Wharton's\* regiment in 1640 and fought at Grangemellon in May 1642. His foot company was part of Ormond's regiment which was quartered in St. Michael's Lane, Dublin in autumn and winter 1643. He returned to England to serve Charles. He was clearly a valued soldier, and was described as a great engineer, and his Flemish connections were also useful - he was sounding out support there for Charles in 1644 and buying arms in Calais, where he was lieutenant colonel to Lord Widdrington. He was governor of Winchester when it fell to Cromwell in 1645. He was knighted at Oxford but submitted a petition to the Committee of Both Kingdoms in March of the same year. He compounded for his Lincolnshire estates in 1650.

KEAN O'HARA, (1613-7-1675) Sligo

2 s. Thady (Teige) O'Hara, Colooney, Sligo, and Sheila O'Rourke; m. 1) Anne, da. Sir Adam Loftus\* and Jane, da. Walter Vaughan, Golden Grove, w. Richard Parsons; 2) Rose Newman.

Kean was a member of the most prominent old Gaelic family of Sligo; his father represented the county in 1613 and the O'Haras still had substantial property there.<sup>345</sup> He inherited his his older brother's lands and position as head of the family in 1634. As Sir Charles Coote's\* ward, he was brought up a protestant and remained true to that faith even during the upheavals of the 1640s, taking the Oath of Supremacy in 1643. He was Adam\* Loftus's son-in-law, Arthur\* and Walter's\* brother-in-law and Nicholas's\* nephew; he was also linked to the Parsons\* (his wife's first husband's family) and the Boyle\* networks and with the local settler family of Croftons\*. He separated from his second wife who, like other family members, regarded him as mean, cantankerous and litigious.<sup>346</sup> As sheriff of Sligo in 1639, his return was technically illegal. He is not known to have taken part in the upheavals of the 1640s and 1650s; his property was not confiscated. He was a commissioner for the Poll Money Ordnance in Sligo in 1660 and 1661 and sheriff in 1664. He should not be confused with his son and namesake.

345 McGrath, 1613. p. 93.

346 N.L.I. MS. 482, ff 20,151,382-4.



BRIAN (BRYAN) O'NEILL<sup>347</sup>

[Killyleagh]

s. Owen O'Neill; m. 1) Jane Finch; 2) Sarah, da. Patrick Savage, Portaferry, Down, and Jean, da. Hugh Montgomery, first Viscount Montgomery of the Ardes, and Elizabeth Shaw;

Bart. 1643;

d. 1670.

Brian was returned before 4 February 1641 and became a very active m.p.<sup>348</sup> He became heavily involved in a dispute about the collection of contributions to support the committee in England which led to conflict with a number of members of the House of Lords; the incident, which took place at the quarter sessions, apparently in County Down, was witnessed by one of the Hamiltons\* and Paul Reynolds, and was investigated by a Commons committee.<sup>349</sup> A soldier who had fought in the Low Countries, he was part of the force which fought against the Scots in 1639. He was Phelim's\* cousin and, through his second marriage, James Montgomery's\* nephew and Hugh and George Montgomery's\* cousin. He held lands at Lecale, County Down, and a house and garden in the suburbs of Dublin. His deposition claimed losses of £1338, including an annual income in rents and profits of £588 in 1642.<sup>350</sup> In the following year he was with the royalist party at Oxford, and fought for the King at Edgehill (for which services he received his baronetcy). He was at Rayland Castle in February 1644, from where he wrote to Prince Rupert on military matters.<sup>351</sup>

---

<sup>347</sup> The various men of this name are hard to distinguish, but it seems clear that he was not the Bryan who was with Owen Roe O'Neill in Flanders and brought messages from him to those plotting the rebellion in 1641. This Brian's election and his remaining in Dublin free to make a deposition of his losses in June 1642 render it impossible that he should be the man described by one of the plotters, Coll McMahon (on the rack) as the "*Capt. Bryan O Neale meetinge wth. this examinante att finglasse neare to Dublinge, upon ye 22nd of 8<sup>ber</sup>, did tell this examinante, yt ther would bee 20 persones, out of every Countie in ye Kingedome to assiste in ye takinge of the castle of Dublin;*" Coll identified this man as a grandson of Sir Tirlagh McHenry who would bring Coll to meet the members of the parliamentary committee in England who would have the commission from the King. Coll McMahon's examination 22 March 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 841*, f. 5v.

<sup>348</sup> He was appointed to committees, or spoke in the House, almost every sitting day after his election, *C.J.(I.)*, 4 February 1641 ff.

<sup>349</sup> Sir Richard Blake's\* report on the committee's findings, *C.J.(I.)*, 24 July 1641.

<sup>350</sup> Deposition of Bryan Neill of the City of Dublin Esq., 7 June 1642. *T.C.D. MS. 810*, f. 22r, 169; see also his examination, 3 July 1645, *ibid*, ff 359-363v; he stayed out of obvious trouble at that point, although his brothers Art and Tirlagh were listed as rebels in Down, January 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 837*, ff 66r-80v.

<sup>351</sup> Bryan O'Neill to Rupert, 20 February 1644, *B.L. MS. Add. 18,981*, f. 50r.



He was back in Dublin in July 1645, where he was examined about contemporary events. His movements over the following few years are unclear but he was living in Lecale in March 1651, under suspicion from his protestant neighbours, and described as a "*troublesome spirited man*", plotting with the Irish there and having great differences with the commissioners for the applotment of Down.<sup>352</sup> He was apprehended in Downpatrick and brought to his house at Ballyhoonan, Down, in March 1653; two months later recognisances were taken against his and his brother Art's appearance at Carrickfergus.<sup>353</sup> His troubles at that time may have been due to his position as a royalist and a supporter of his brother, a man with a record as a rebel from the early 1640s, rather than as a papist, as he survived into 1670, continuing to hold lands in Dublin.

PHELMIM O'NEILL (1603-4-1653)                      Dungannon

e.s. Tirlagh O'Neill (d. 1608), and Catherine, da. Tirlough MacHenry of the Fewes (she rem. Robert Hovenden); m. 1), \_\_\_\_\_ Magennis (d. 1641), da. Lord Iveagh; 2) Louise, da. General Thomas Preston; 3) 1649, Lady Jean Gordon (w. Claud Hamilton, Lord Strabane), da. Lord Huntley and Henrietta Stuart, da. Duke of Lennox and Catherine de Balsae, France; ed. Lincoln's Inns, 1621; Kt. 1639.

Phelim replaced Chichester\* or Madden\* as m.p. in the summer of 1641, but was expelled for rebellion in November of that year.

A member of the most significant Ulster Gaelic family, Phelim's first wife linked him to another important Ulster family and his second to the family of Lord Gormanston and a network of Pale gentry, including Lucas Fitzgerald\*. He was a cousin of O'Reilly\* and O'Neill\*; his brother Tirlagh Og married Lord Antrim's illegitimate sister: Antrim's interest secured Phelim's knighthood. His grandfather, Tirlagh MacHenry, was the defeated candidate for Armagh County in 1613. He inherited extensive lands in Tyrone (especially at Kinnaird) and Armagh. Brought up a protestant, and given the conventional education of a member of the gentry he conformed and played an active role as a local

352     *T.C.D. MS. 837, ff 40rff.*

353     *T.C.D. MS. 837, ff 66r-80r.*



landowner and administrator, (although he was excluded from membership of the 1624-5 Armagh commission of the peace). He was clearly on good terms with his neighbours, whether new English or Gaelic, and signed a bond with Arthur Hill\* at the Dublin Staple in June 1640.<sup>354</sup> Despite his inheritance, he was in considerable debt by 1641. He was one of the chief plotters of the 1641 rebellion, attended the meetings of Meath gentry in December 1641 and based himself at Bewley in Louth for an attack on Drogheda in February 1642. He was a member of the 7th. and 10th. Supreme Councils. He was chosen commander in chief of the Ulster catholics and was a strong leader of his co-religionists in Ulster.<sup>355</sup> He was accused of many atrocities in contemporary pamphlets<sup>356</sup> and was executed in 1653.

PHILIP MAC HUGH O'REILLY (1599-1657?) Cavan County

s. Hugh O'Reilly (d. 1629), and Katherine MacMahon; m. 1) by 1628, Rose O'Neill; 2) 1642+, Frances O'Farrell, Moate; ed. ? Inns of Court?<sup>357</sup>

Philip was the son of the chief of his clan in Cavan and a nephew of Hugh O'Reilly, catholic Archbishop of Armagh. He had extensive connections with the old Gaelic families of Ulster and other parts of Ireland. He was a brother-in-law of Owen Roe O'Neill (and thus Maguire's\* uncle by marriage), and his daughters married sons of Lords Maguire and Iveagh and Lewis O'More, a member of the Pale family. There were also marriage connections with Farrell\* and the O'Briens\*. He also had a link to the local protestant clergyman, Richard Parsons, who married his cousin. He was a soldier, who served as a commander of foot and horse in France. He inherited lands in Cavan from his father and lived there at Ballanacarry; he also owned some tithes in Meath. He was active in local administration, serving as a member of the 1624-5 Cavan commission of

---

354 Clarke notes his good terms with Lord Caulfield in "The Genesis of the Ulster rising of 1641". in P. Robuck (ed.), *Plantation to partition: essays in Ulster History in honour of J.L. McCracken*. (Belfast, 1981). pp 29-45.

355 His military career in the 1640s is sketched in the *D.N.B.*

356 Including the murder of an Englishman, Henry Cowel, "a gallant and wel-bred Gentleman ... murdered because he would not consent to marry a beastly trull Mary Neale, a neere kinswoman to Sir Philem". D. Harcourt, *A Remonstrance of the barbarous cruelties ...* (London, 1644). p. 7.

357 Froude describes him as a lawyer but his name does not appear in the published registers of the Inns of Court.



the peace and sheriff in 1629 and 1644. He was an active m.p., sitting on the committee on privileges and that to draw up charges of treason against Bolton, Radcliffe\* and others. He was one of the chief architects of the rebellion, for which, with Phelim O'Neill\* and Maguire\*, he was expelled from the Commons on 16 November 1641. He was colonel of rebels from the beginning of the rising, took Belturbet, Kells, Ardrackan and Navan in 1641 and besieged Drogheda in the following year. He took Sir Francis Hamilton's\* castle on quarter that June and was commander in chief at the sieges of Augher, Drogheda and Strabane. He fought at Enniskillen in 1645. He was a member of the first Supreme Council and the 1644 General Assembly; his nephew, Myles O'Reilly, was a commissioner of trust. He petitioned Ormond in 1650. Throughout the rebellion, his conduct was recognised as honourable, even by his enemies. On his capture of Belturbet in October 1641, he was careful to preserve the lives of its inhabitants and his mother brought a number of local settler women to safety in the house of the Rev. George Crichton in Virginia. He was reported as restraining his wife from murdering English and Scots in April 1643.<sup>358</sup>

HENRY OSBOURNE (d. 1657+)                      Tralee<sup>359</sup>  
 s. \_\_\_\_\_ Osbourne, Devon;

Henry was Richard sr.'s\* brother, and shared his office of clerk of the crown in Limerick and Tipperary from 1616. A Thomas Turner claimed a debt from Henry and his nephew Richard\* jr. in 1642. Both Richard jr.\* and Henry inherited money from their relative, Dr. William Osbourne, in 1646. Henry was commissioner for tithes in County Cork in 1657. He should not be confused with other men of the same name, the alderman of Derry or the London adventurer, who settled in Ireland in the 1650s.

RICHARD OSBOURNE                                      Waterford County  
 s. \_\_\_\_\_ Osbourne, Devon; m. \_\_\_\_\_, da. Roger Dalton, (d. 1603),

<sup>358</sup> *T.C.D. MSS. 816*, ff 235r; 817, f. 165r; 832, ff 149r,211r; Crichton stated that he was a distant relative of Mrs. O'Reilly through the house of Argyle and Mrs. O'Reilly brought Mrs. Heygate and Mrs. Allen to Crichton because, as a Scot, he was safe, at least in the early stages of the rebellion.

<sup>359</sup> Henry had no known connection with his constituency and a writ for his replacement was ordered to be issued in 1641.



Kirkbymisperton (Kyrkby over Carr), Yorkshire, and Knockmoan, (Knockmellon), Waterford, and ? Katherine Wood, w. Richard Bealby, or Alison Dalton;

? Kt. -1615;<sup>360</sup> Bart. 1629;

d. 1667.

M.P. Waterford County 1634, 1661.

Richard settled in Ireland before 1614 when he leased lands from Boyle;<sup>361</sup> two years later, with his brother Henry\*, he was granted the office of clerk of the crown in Limerick and Tipperary.<sup>362</sup> He settled in Waterford and Tipperary where he acquired considerable lands (partly through his marriage) and standing. The Knockmellon (Knockmoan) estate formerly belonged to Sir Christopher Hatton.<sup>363</sup> He also leased lands from the Fitzgeralds of Dromana at a very low rent<sup>364</sup> and had dealings with Perceval. In 1642, his deposition claimed losses of £3,386 and £1,163 in two separate claims for his property in Waterford alone. He claimed a further £4,386 6 /- for loss of debts and profits of his offices.<sup>365</sup> He was Richard's\* father and nephew of Dr. William Osbourne, a canon of Salisbury, former fellow of All Souls College. This connection proved useful, as William persuaded Laud to write to Wentworth in support of his case against Lord Cork in 1635; the case was arbitrated by Fitzharris\*. He was usually on rather better terms with Boyle: he sold his interest in Ballyin to the Earl for £360 in 1615 and Boyle was Richard\* jr.'s godfather. He was active in local administration, serving as a member of the 1624-5 commissions for the peace in Waterford and Tipperary<sup>366</sup> and as a commissioner to raise money in Waterford

---

<sup>360</sup> Boyle refers to him as Sir Richard from 1615. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., I, p. 79.

<sup>361</sup> He may, in fact, have arrived as early as 1606, when a man of the same name was chancellor of Limerick and treasurer of Lismore by the following year.

<sup>362</sup> This seems to have been a family office, as it was transferred between Richard, Henry\*, and Richard's sons Richard\* and Nicholas over the following thirty years.

<sup>363</sup> MacCarthy-Morrogh, *Munster plantation*. pp 109-110; Osbourne did not, however, enjoy quiet possession of the property - another member of the Dalton family disputed his possession, and, supported by Boyle, Dalton's godfather, contested it in the courts; Knockmoan was close to Dungarvan. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., IV, pp 14,27-8. Dalton became a catholic in 1642. *T.C.D. MS. 824*, f. 207v.

<sup>364</sup> With Boyle, Lord Sarsfield and Sir John Everarde, he took the Inquisition Post Mortem of Sir John Fitzgerald of Dromana at Clonmel in October 1620. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., I, p. 263.

<sup>365</sup> Depositions made by him or on his behalf by his younger son, Nicholas, *T.C.D. MS. 820*, ff 93r, 214, 221-2. The depositions were taken by Sir Piercy Smith.

<sup>366</sup> He may have been j.p. as early as February 1619 when he was summoned to attend the Dungarvan quarter sessions. He did not attend and the sessions was not held. It is not clear whether the summons was sent to him as a j.p. or as clerk of the crown. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., I, p. 210.



for the army in 1627. He was one of the agents to London in 1628 and in 1634 was a commissioner to inquire into the King's title to lands in Tipperary. He was clerk of the crown in Tipperary and Limerick City and County in July 1642. He was besieged in Knockmoan Castle in 1642 and relieved by Broghill, who brought him to Lismore. He was living at Youghal in 1646. He was a commissioner for the Poll Money Ordnance in Waterford in 1661.

RICHARD OSBOURNE (d. 1685)      Dungarvan

s. Richard\* Osbourne, and ? Katherine Wood, w. Richard Bealby, or Alison Dalton; m. c1645, Elizabeth \_\_\_\_\_;  
ed. Gray's Inns, 1628;  
2nd. Bart, 1667.

Richard's birth date is uncertain but he was presumably born in Ireland, as he was Cork's godson and assisted Boyle in clearing the bounds of his estates in January 1621. He settled at Ballintaylor and Ballinrouke, Waterford and also held lands in Tipperary. He succeeded his father as deputy clerk of the crown in Tipperary by 1634 and j.p. by 1639. He witnessed a number of deeds for Waller\* and Perceval. He was in England in July 1642 when his brother Nicholas, who was clerk of the crown in Munster from 1639, claimed losses of £4,750 17s. 6d on his behalf for property in Waterford. With his mother, brother and uncle Henry\*, he inherited money under his great-uncle, Dr. William Osbourne's will in 1646. In June 1642 he was chosen as ensign to serjeant-major Thomas Ogle in Philip Wharton's regiment for service in Ireland; he fought at the siege of Lismore in 1645, when he was described as the rebel "*Richard Hosbourne of Knockmoan*".<sup>367</sup> As captain Richard Osbourne he was summoned to give evidence against Lord Coventry in January 1652, and was collecting the assessment for Ireland in Waterford in the final quarter of 1654. He was sheriff of Waterford in 1671.

ROBERT PARKE

[Roscommon]<sup>368</sup>

e.s. Roger Parke, Newtown, Leitrim, and \_\_\_\_\_, da. Griffith Jones, Denbeigh;

---

367      *T.C.D. MS. 820, f. 354r.*

368      Parke was elected before 28 July 1641, when he first appears in the *Commons Journals*.



m. Anne Povey, Roscommon, 1 da;

d. 1661+

M.P. Sligo, Roscommon and Leitrim, 1659, Convention, Sligo Leitrim, 1661.

Parke was the son of an Englishman settled in Leitrim and a sister of Sir Roger Jones;<sup>369</sup> he was later connected to James Dillon\*, who married his cousin Mary Jones. He lived in Newtown<sup>370</sup> near Dromahair, Leitrim, and in Sligo. He was juror in an inquisition in Sligo in 1627 and feodary of Connaught by 1632. He had considerable landed property in Leitrim, Sligo and Tyrrawley (Mayo). With his uncle and close business associate Roger Jones and others, he took a case against Sir James Erskine<sup>371</sup> in 1635. Newtown became a refuge for protestants fleeing Sligo on the outbreak of the rebellion; he was apparently reluctant to attack supporters of the rising but gradually became active as a soldier, fighting mainly in Connaught and was a member of the council of Connaught. His castle was besieged in 1642 and 1647. He was active in local administration in north Connaught in the 1650s, serving as sheriff of Sligo in 1651 and 1656, taking examinations in Roscommon and Sligo in 1653 and collecting the assessment for Ireland in the latter county and Leitrim in the final quarter of 1654 and in Roscommon and Leitrim in the second half of 1657. He was a commissioner for the Poll Money Ordinance in Sligo and Leitrim in 1660-1. At the restoration, he became a privy councillor. He was included in the decree of innocents and was granted large parcels of land in Sligo and Leitrim under the Act of Settlement.

RICHARD PARSONS (d. - 1651) Wicklow

e.s. Sir William Parsons\* and Elizabeth, da. Ald. John Lany, Dublin, and Katherine Bostock; m. Lettice (d. 1633), da. Sir Adam\* Loftus and Jane, da. Walter Vaughan, Golden Grove;

M.P. Fethard 1634.

---

<sup>369</sup> Jones was m.p. for Sligo 1634; he was the son of Griffith Jones and settled in Ireland by 1602, when he was appointed constable of Sligo. He was a soldier and active in local administration. He died in 1637 and is buried in Sligo; his magnificent memorial is in St. John's Church, Sligo. This information corrects a statement made in McGrath, 1613. pp 59-60.

<sup>370</sup> Also known as Parkes Castle; a plantation castle, c12 miles from Sligo, built by his father, it is now restored as a national monument and open to the public.

<sup>371</sup> A Scottish settler in Tyrone, which county he represented in 1634, when his son and namesake was returned for Augher.



The Parsons\*, Loftus\* and Boyle\* families formed the three most influential new English networks in Ireland, and Richard was a cousin of the Earl of Cork, brother-in-law of Paul Davys\*, William Ussher\*, Arthur Hill\* and Arthur\* and Walter\* Loftus. He had dealings on the Dublin Staple with Lord Fitzwilliam and others, in trust for Cork, in 1636-39. With his uncle-by-marriage Nicholas Loftus\*, he was joint surveyor of the court of Wards from 1630, a position which increased his father's control of that court, of which Sir William was master from 1622. His return for Wicklow followed his father's acquisition of lands in that county in the 1630s<sup>372</sup> but his sister's marriage to William Ussher\* provided another link with a powerful local family. He should not be confused with his cousin, Captain William Parsons's\* brother, who died in 1634.

WILLIAM PARSONS (c1570-1650) Wicklow County

e.s. James Parsons, Leicestershire, and Catherine Fenton; m. Elizabeth, da. Ald. John Lany, Dublin, and Katherine Bostock; 5s., 7 da.;

Kt. 1620; Bart. 1620;

M.P. Newcastle Lyons, 1613, Armagh County and Athlone, 1634.

William had no difficulty in being elected to all three parliaments although it seems strange that a prominent official with so much property and influence throughout Ireland, should not have found a more secure parliamentary seat. His return for Wicklow is explained by his grant of 2,136 acres in Ranelagh in 1628; he acquired more lands there, formerly held by Lord Meath, in the 1630s.<sup>373</sup> He and his brothers, Laurence and Fenton followed their uncle Sir Geoffrey Fenton to Ireland before 1602, when he succeeded Geoffrey as surveyor general. He used this position to acquire lands throughout Ireland - he was commissioner for the plantations of Ulster, Wexford, Longford, Ely O'Carroll and Leitrim. He was granted lands in Tyrone and Cavan in the Ulster Plantation and 1,374 acres in the Leitrim plantation; he acquired the manor of Tassagard (Dublin) in 1620 and also held lands in Fermanagh by 1630. He was seneschal of the liberty of Newcastlelyons from 1622. With this background, it is hardly surprising that he was a strong advocate of plantations and hoped that the 1641 rebellion would facilitate the confiscation and redistribution of even more lands

<sup>372</sup> The history of this process is traced in Kearney, *Strafford in Ireland*. pp 173-6.

<sup>373</sup> *ibid*, and Brabazon, *Humble petition*.



in the protestant interest. In 1639 he was excused all other duties to work on the proposed plantation of Connaught.<sup>374</sup> He naturally opposed Ormond's policy of discriminating between the old Irish and old English in plantation policy. He was a member of the 1624-5 Dublin commission of the peace.<sup>375</sup> He became master of the court of wards in 1622 and a privy councillor in 1623. It was no coincidence that the court of wards was "*the only organ of the administration which did not incur the charge of inefficiency and which Wentworth himself made no attempt to adapt*".<sup>376</sup> His chief privy council associates before Strafford's arrival were Boyle, Coote\* and Ranelagh. He offered no active opposition to Wentworth during his term of office, due, presumably, to Wentworth's outwitting him over the grant of Byrne's country shortly after his arrival in Ireland. He retained his position in the administration and in 1636 was one of the commission appointed to investigate Mountnorris's work as treasurer and was made a member of the Court of Castle Chamber in 1639. He also sat on the Commission for Defective Titles. He was created lord justice in 1640 and, with Borlace\*, was responsible for the government of Ireland until removed and imprisoned in 1643. The lords justices' attitude to the old English and Irish was partly responsible for the rapid spread of the rebellion. His connections were extensive and influential: he was Cork's cousin by marriage and his brother Laurence had been Cork's close associate. He was Richard's\* father, William's\* uncle and father-in-law of Paul Davys\*, Arthur Hill\*, William Ussher\* and Richard Barry's\* son James. He was Robert Dillon's\* brother-in-law and thus James Dillon's\* uncle. He lived at Merchant's Quay and Bellamont, Dublin and Garradyce, Leitrim. His house at Milltown, Wicklow was burnt by the rebels by November 1643.

WILLIAM PARSONS (1614-1652) King's County  
 e.s.s. Sir Laurence Parsons, Birr, and Jane Maltham, Yorkshire; m. 1636, Dorothy, da. Sir Thomas Philips, Limavady and Dorothy Paulet, (? da. Sir George Paulet (d. 1608), vice-provost of Derry) or, less probably, Alice, da. Sir William Ussher).

374 For a discussion of his views on plantations, see Perceval-Maxwell, 1641. pp 17-19,28.

375 It might have been expected that he would be a member of other commissions also, but perhaps his absence (he was not listed as one of those to be excluded from the individual commissions) was due partly to his increasing national interests and partly to the presence of his brothers Laurence and Fenton on the commissions in King's County and Leitrim and Tyrone respectively. *T.C.D MS. 672*, ff 174-187v.

376 Kearney, *Strafford in Ireland*, p. 81.



William's older brother Richard died in 1634 and he inherited his property, including the castle and lands of Birr (Parsonstown), King's County.<sup>377</sup> Laurence was Cork's close associate, serving as his secretary and as town clerk of Youghal (a town in which Boyle's influence was strong) on his nomination; he was m.p. for Boyle's borough of Tallow in 1613.<sup>378</sup> He was Sir William's\* nephew<sup>379</sup> and Richard Parsons's\* cousin. He was also Cork's cousin and thus linked to the Boyle\* network. His marriage made him Philips\*, Paul Davys\* and Hoye's\* brother-in-law and linked him to the Usshers\* and Cootes\* and their connections. On the outbreak of the rebellion, he joined Chidley Coote in leading the protestant forces of King's County, and the local rebels threatened to hang him and Peisley\* at their own gates.<sup>380</sup> He commanded all the troops in Ely O'Carroll and his castle at Birr withstood a siege of 13 months, surrendering to Preston in January 1643. Later that year he was court-martialled when Captain Richard Thatcher accused him of wrongfully detaining his troops; he lost the case and appealed to Ormond, who upheld his appeal and he later formed part of Borlace's\* regiment which was quartered in Oxmantown, Dublin.<sup>381</sup> The Birr garrison was disbanded without pay in the spring of 1644 when it refused to go to England to fight for Charles. William, Francis Hamilton\* and Coote\* travelled to Oxford as agents of Irish protestants and were received by the king. He remained in London where he was questioned several times by the Parliament. As Captain William Parsons, he was living in Martin's Lane, London in October 1646. His will (drawn up in April 1650), was proved by his daughter, Dorothy, in 1653.

WILLIAM PEISLEY<sup>382</sup> (PEASLEY) Augher  
 y.s. Bartholomew Peisley, (d. 1638), Dublin, and Catherine de la Moore, Moore and Walton, Oxfordshire; m. 1) Anne Calvert, da. George, Lord Baltimore; 2)

377 for his rents in Birr, see Perceval-Maxwell, 1641. p. 37.

378 McGrath, 1613. pp 84-5.

379 William should not be confused with his cousin, Sir William's\* son.

380 *T.C.D. MS. 814*, ff 48r,79r.

381 The Parsons held property in Oxmantown, so it is possible that the troops were quartered on William's property; the main street outside the Castle in Birr is still called Oxmantown St.

382 Several members of the Peisley family appear in the army lists and other Irish official records of the time. Bartholomew was Wentworth's nominee for Tallow in 1634; his sons included Francis (m.p. for Athboy, 1642-9), and Joseph, agent for Radcliffe\* and Wentworth in business.



Lettice Caulfield, Charlemont.

d. c. October 1646; bur. St. John's, Dublin.

M.P. King's County, 1645.

Peisley replaced Karnes in a hurried second election, but was himself replaced by Martin\* after his removal from the House, apparently due to his involvement in the tobacco monopoly. As a garrison town, Augher might be expected to return a soldier, especially one connected to Caulfield\*, one of the county members. His links with Wentworth suggest that he was wanted in the House and had failed to be elected for another seat.<sup>383</sup> His first father-in-law was an old associate of Wentworth and the Calverts also connected him to Talbot\* and Lord Netterville. The Calverts were catholic (although Peisley was clearly not) and, being from Hampshire, may have had some connections with Sir Henry Tichbourne, a soldier with property in Tyrone. Strafford had some correspondence with Peisley as early as 1627, when he addressed his letters care of Baltimore and in the following year he was, with Christopher Wandesford\*, the official candidate for the Yorkshire borough of Aldborough.<sup>384</sup> Bartholomew Peisley was associated with the Littles\* and Carpenter\* in the tobacco monopoly and, with Radcliffe\*, Billingsley\* and Carpenter\*, was Wentworth's agent to purchase lands in Kildare. William lived at Knocknamease, King's County, and in Dublin, where his daughter was baptised in St. John's Church in 1636. He may have been the man of the same name who was searcher, packer and gauger of Kinsale in 1633-4. A soldier, he was chief serjeant at arms from 1625 (sharing the office with his father) and provost-marshal of Munster from 1630. He was a captain in the new army of 1640, when he was sergeant-major of Coote's\* regiment. He was responsible for the murder of 11 people at Golden Bridge, Tipperary, on 24 October 1641 and of Philip Ryan, an action which provoked a rising of the gentlemen of Tipperary in support of the rebellion. He was still

---

<sup>383</sup> There is no evidence that Karnes was disliked by his neighbours, and if so, he would probably not have been elected by them in the first place. It is possible that his being Scottish was not regarded as a point in his favour, and that Peisley's influential connections saw Augher as a safe seat for his return. This, and his late return, would suggest that he had stood unsuccessfully for other, more probable, seats. In the light of his replacement by Martin\*, the notion of Augher as a "safe seat" for the administration seems somewhat ironic.

<sup>384</sup> Wandesford\* was elected, Peisley not. Gruenfelder, *Influence*, p. 94; J.K. Gruenfelder, Yorkshire borough elections, 1603-1640. *Yorks. Arch. J.*, Vol. 49, (1977). pp 101-114; R. Carroll, Yorkshire parliamentary boroughs in the 17th. century. *Northern History*, III (1968). pp 70-104; T. Lawson-Tancred, Parliamentary History of Aldborough and Boroughbridge. *Yorks. Arch. J.*, 27, (1923). pp 325-362.



active in Munster in the following year. He was no more popular in King's County (Knocknamease was a place of refuge for local protestants), where the local rebels threatened to hang him and William Parsons\* before their own gates. They survived this threat and the surrender of the castle, on terms which included an agreement that the Irish of King's County could burn the castle down to prevent its being taken over by another English garrison.<sup>385</sup> By 1643, he was a major in Lambert's regiment, and his troops were quartered in Back Lane, Dublin, in that December. He took a Castle Chamber case against Tallis\* in 1634, although the basis of the proceedings is unclear.

**THOMAS PEPPARD** Drogheda  
 only s. Patrick Peppard, and Katherine, da. Bartholomew Russell; m. 1) Mary, da. John Dowding, Drogheda, and Joanna Taylor, Swords; 2) Agneta Hamlin; d. 1640.  
 M.P. Drogheda, 1634.

Peppard was a merchant and an alderman of Drogheda. He married into the north Dublin / Louth family of Taylor\*. He held property in Louth where he had many land deals, especially with other Peppards and Russells. He was presumably not the Thomas Peppard who was provost of Leixlip in 1608, or who married Granny Duff, the daughter of Phelim MacFeagh Byrne.

**EDWARD PETTIT** (d. 1647+) Mullingar  
 e.s. Garrett Pettit (d. 1634), Boardstown, Westmeath, and Maria, da. Theobald Dillon, Viscount Costello-Gallen; ed. Middle Temple, 1631;  
 M.P. Mullingar, 1634.

The Pettitts were an old English family, descendants of the Norman Le Petits. Redmond Pettit represented the borough in 1585. Edward's 1634 return may have been eased by his relationship with the sheriff, Adam Pettit. He lived at Boardstown and Irishtown, Mullingar and was a merchant and landowner near the town. He was well-connected to other prominent families. Through

<sup>385</sup> T.C.D. MSS 814, ff 48r,79r,100v-101r.



his mother, he was a nephew of Robert\* and Sir James\* Dillon, and cousin of the other members of that family; the Dillons\* also linked him to Nicholas Whyte\*, Ulick Burke\* and Taaffe\*. He was also connected to Hope\*, whose sister-in-law Ellis Barnwall, daughter of Patrick\*, married a Pettit. His own sister Marian married James Nugent of Clonlost, and he and his brother were executors of James's will in 1627. His activities after 1641 are unclear, although he and other members of his family were listed as rebels.

DUDLEY (AUDLEY) PHILLIPS (1610-1661+) Limavady

e.s. Sir Thomas Philips (d. 1636) (rem. Alice, da. Sir William Ussher), Middlesex, and Limavady and Dorothy Paulet, (? da. Sir George Paulet (d. 1608), vice-provost of Derry); m. a) Elizabeth, da. Bishop George Downham, Derry; b) Maria, da. John Piggott\* and Martha, da. Sir Thomas Colclough, Tintern Abbey, Wexford; c) Frances, da. Sir Robert Newcomen and Catherine, da. Thomas Molyneux, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Ireland; d) \_\_\_\_ Paulet; e) Katherine \_\_\_\_; ed. Merchant Taylor's School, London;

Sir Thomas Philips established Limavady, so Dudley's return for the borough is unsurprising. Dudley was born in Middlesex a year before his father settled in Ireland (although Sir Thomas had been involved in Ireland from 1598 as a soldier) after 20 years service in France, and been granted lands in Coleraine in 1604. He surrendered this property and was granted the castle and lands of Limavady in the Plantation. At the same time, he and Dudley (then an infant) were granted daily pensions of 6s. 8d. His father's second marriage connected him to the extensive Ussher\* network, and his sisters Anne and Dorothy married Chidley Coote (son and brother of Charles Coote\* sr. and jr.) and William Parsons\* respectively. When his eldest son signed a bond on the Dublin Staple in 1653, it was guaranteed by William Ussher\* and Paul Davys\*. His own marriages (the order of which is unclear) linked him firmly to other members of the settler community, especially the Piggotts\*, and to James Montgomery\*, the Stewarts\* and Moynes\*. He inherited his father's lands; he also leased lands from Archbishop Bramhall and rented salmon pools on the river Roe from the crown. On the outbreak of the rebellion, he petitioned the lords justice for a command of troops in Coleraine and Derry. He fought as a



major in the 1640s, maintaining a garrison of 300 in Limavady at his own expense and was associated with Robert Stewart\* (who described him as "*a most discreet and forward gentleman and exceeding zealous in this cause*"<sup>386</sup>) in the defence of Derry. He was still commanding the troop of 60 horse in Ulster in 1644. Limavady castle was besieged in April 1650. He collected the assessment for Ireland in County Londonderry in the last quarter of 1654 and the second half of 1657.

JOHN PIGGOTT, (-1590-1646) Queen's County

s. Sir Robert Piggot (d. 1643), Dysert, and Anne, (d. 1599), da. Warham St. Leger; he rem. Thomasin, da. Christopher Peyton and Anne, da. William Palius, London; m. Martha, da. Sir Thomas Colclough, Tintern Abbey, Wexford, and Martha, da. Archbishop Adam Loftus and Alice Purdon; at least 3 da. and 2 s.  
M.P. Queen's County 1634.

John's paternal grandfather settled in Queen's County in the previous century and was granted lands at Dysart in 1563; he married Joanna Walsh, presumably from an old English family. His maternal grandfather was m.p. for Queen's County in 1585 and his father in 1613.<sup>387</sup> His step-mother, Thomasin Peyton, was the daughter of the auditor for Ireland. He was Thomas's\* father and a cousin of the St. Legers\* and Davills\*. His marriage connected him to the Loftuses\*, Thomas Butler\*, Nicholas Barnwall\* and Esmonde\*. Not all his family were of new English origin - his sister Sibilla married the gaelic Bryen Oge O'Doyne (described as a "*rank puritan*")<sup>388</sup> and another sister Thomasine married the parliamentarian Prime-Iron Rochfort. His daughters Maria and Martha married Dudley Philips\* and Henry, son of Sir William Gilbert\*, respectively; another daughter married a member of the Crosbie\* family. He was a member of the 1624-5 Queen's County commission of the peace. He inherited his father's extensive property in Queen's County but Sir Robert had already settled considerable estates there on him in 1611; in 1622 father and son were

386 Robert Stewart to the Lords Justice, 21 June 1642. Hogan, *Letters and papers*, p. 46.

387 McGrath, 1613. pp 60-1.

388 The O Doynes (or Dunnes) of Brittas were an old Gaelic family, but a number were enthusiastic protestants, including Brian's uncle, Dr. Charles Dunne, the first man to be awarded a doctorate from Trinity College Dublin, and m.p. for Dublin University in 1613. K.W. Nicholls (ed.), *The O'Doyne (O Duinn) Manuscript*. (Dublin, 1983), and McGrath, 1613. p. 47.



involved in land deals in Louth. A dispute over the rectories of Enis Dysert and Kiltale, which the privy council seems to have awarded against them, was ordered in their favour by the Commons in July 1641. He had also anticipated a grant of 1,000 acres in the proposed plantation of Ormond. He fought in Ireland in the 1640s with the rank of captain in 1642. His castle was besieged in 1642 and relieved by Coote\*. He disapproved of the cessation and gave up his command some three months after its agreement; nevertheless, he held the rank of major on his death, being killed in action at his castle of Dysart O'Lalor in Leix in October 1646, despite having been granted quarter on its surrender. In recognition of his services and the loss of an estate valued at £900 *per annum*, his widow was awarded £200 by the Committee for the Advancement of Money.

THOMAS PIGGOTT (d. 1673) Mallow

yr. s. John Piggott\* and Martha, da. Sir Thomas Colclough, Tintern Abbey, Wexford, and Martha, da. Archbishop Adam Loftus and Alice Purdon; m. 1) \_\_\_\_\_, da. Lady Jephson, Mallow; 2) 1642-5, Florence Poulett, da. first Lord Paulet, w. Sir Thomas Smyth, Long Aston, Somerset; M.P. King's County, 1661.

As John's\* son, Thomas was connected with the Loftus\* network and Sir Thomas Butler\*, Nicholas Barnwall\* and Esmonde\*. He was also Philips's\* brother-in-law. His return is explained by his first marriage which connected him to the dominant local settler family and to Gifford\* and Kingsmill\*. Through his grandmother he was the St. Legers'\* cousin and he retained his close links with the Jephson-Perceval network after his wife's death: his second marriage reinforced the link and connected him to William Smyth\*.<sup>389</sup> In June 1640, with Bettsworth\* and Gethings\*, he witnessed a St. Leger\* deed. He followed a military career, holding the rank of captain as early as 1627 and being appointed serjeant at arms in Munster in 1636 (presumably due to his Jephson and St. Leger\* connections). When the new Irish army was formed in 1640, he was made major and serjeant major in St. Leger's\* regiment. He fought with Inchiquin (also a St. Leger\* connection) in 1642, although he was also reported to

<sup>389</sup> Both Florence's brother, Sir John Poulet, and first husband, were members of the Long Parliament; Florence was also the granddaughter of Henry, Lord Norris, ancestor of the Jephsons. There were two Sir Thomas Smiths (Smyths) in the Long Parliament. Florence's husband was William Smyth's\* half-brother; the other Thomas was a cousin of Mainwaring. Keeler, *op. cit.*, pp 101,342-3.



have protected some rebels in Queen's County in that year.<sup>390</sup> He settled in England after 1643, where he acquired a fine estate in Somerset through his second marriage. Long Aston was worth £2,000 annually and he also purchased the manor of Brockley. This marriage provided him with additional political allegiances: although the Poulets were originally parliamentarians - Lord Poulet was one of the 'popular' peers who negotiated at Ripon - they later became royalists and he fought for Charles at Bristol in 1643 and was taken prisoner by Sir William Brereton at Drayton, Shropshire. In the following year he was a colonel of cavalry. Being based near Bristol, he was an important link in Perceval's chain of information. He signed the letter to Essex in August 1644. In January 1646 his cousin Brereton\* asked him to transmit letters to Lady Glamorgan at Raglan. He compounded in 1646, when he was assessed at £2,000, but doubts about his loyalty persisted, despite his delivering letters from Inchiquin to the English parliament in November 1647, for which he was granted a reward of £50. In the following year he was referred to the Derby House Committee by the English Commons; he was granted leave to cross to France with soldiers, although it seems improbable that he did so. He was governor of Great Island, Cork, in November 1649 and surrendered the fort to the parliamentary forces. He seems to have lived quietly in England for much of the duration of the Commonwealth, but retained sufficient Irish links (and credibility with the administration) to act as a collector of the assessment for Ireland in Queen's County in the second half of 1657. At the restoration he was classed as a '49 Officer, became master of the Court of Wards (he was awarded an annual pension of £300 in compensation on its abolition in 1663), and a member of the Irish privy council. He was also a commissioner for the settlement of Ireland. In 1661, with Forth\*, he was a commissioner to issue licences for the possession of gunpowder in King's and Queen's Counties. He was sheriff of King's County in 1663. He found himself excluded from the civil list in 1673 and petitioned Charles for restoration, reinforcing his request with a letter from Lord Coventry to Lord Lieutenant Essex. He died in England.

NICHOLAS PLUNKETT

Meath

3 s. Christopher Plunkett, Lord Killeen, and Genet, da. Sir Lucas<sup>391</sup> Dillon, Lord

---

390 *T.C.D. MS. 815, f. 73r.*

391 *Irish Memorials of the Dead, VIII, pp 407-9, gives Genet's father as James Dillon.*



Kilkenny West; m. 1) Catherine, da. and coh. Ald. William Turner, Wexford; 2) Mary, da. Christopher Plunkett, the Grange; 3) Catherine, da. James Aylmer, Lyons, and Carrickbrien, Clare; ed. Gray's Inns, 1622; King's Inns, 1628; Kt. 1647;<sup>392</sup> bur. Killeen. M.P. Meath 1634.

Nicholas Plunkett of Balrath was a member of one of the most important old English families of the Pale. His mother was a sister of James, Earl of Roscommon, and Nicholas was therefore a first cousin of Robert\* and James\* Dillon, and related to the other Dillons\*. His eldest brother was created Earl of Fingal and married, successively, members of the O'Donnell, Fitzgerald\*, Brabazon, Bagnal and Preston families. His sisters Joan and Ellice married Richard, Earl of Westmeath, and Lord Slane, respectively, and his nephew and niece married into the Barnwall\* (Kingsland), and Dowdal\* families. His own marriages were to members of the old English gentry. His brother Patrick was bishop of Ardagh and Meath. Thus, he was connected with virtually every old English family in both houses, and to many of the new English as well. He held land in Meath and Monaghan. He was one of the foremost lawyers of his day. He was retained by Lord Cork<sup>393</sup> and was counsel for the Galway jurors who failed to find the king's title to their lands. In 1637 he was counsel for Thomas Lord Costello-Gallan in the case of tenures upon the commission of defective titles.<sup>394</sup> His legal expertise was clearly a factor in his election and his prominent role in parliament, where he was a very active member. He was one of the drafters of the declaration of willingness to grant subsidies and played a particularly important leadership role before the return of Darcy\* and Martin\* to the House. He was one of the agents from the Irish parliament to Charles, when, with Geoffrey Browne\*, he was suspected of directing the King's Irish policy, through Cottington's agency. He gave evidence at Wentworth's trial. On the outbreak of the rebellion, he was one of the m.p.s who drew up the

<sup>392</sup> Carte and Ware\* claimed that Nicholas was knighted by the Pope. *Gilbert MS. 169*, p. 244.

<sup>393</sup> Although he had also acted against Boyle in 1634, when his client was Cork's former servant, Richard Blacknall. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., IV, p. 35.

<sup>394</sup> This was an unusually important case and the judgment was published by the justice of the Common Pleas, James Barry, with a dedication to Wentworth, who had requested that it be printed. J. Barry, *Case of tenures upon the Commission of Defective Titles, argued by all the Judges of Ireland ...* (Dublin, 1637).



proclamation, issued by the lords justice, admonishing "all that were freeholders, not having their hands in blood, within 10 dayes to submit themselves before any justice of the peace."<sup>395</sup> He attended the meeting of the Meath gentry at Crofty in December 1641 and, with his fellow lawyers Gerald Aylmer and Robert Berford, was appointed to advise the Meath County Council on legal matters. He was elected speaker of the Confederation and was a member of the 1647 General Assembly, and all but the fourth, 9th. and 10th. Supreme Councils. In 1644 and 1646-7 he was an agent to negotiate a peace with Ormond; after the treaty with Inchiquin in 1648, he travelled to Rome to present the case for that peace. As a commissioner of trust, he was in Galway in February 1651, dealing with the Duke of Lorraine's ambassador. In the following month he was drafting an agreement between Clanricarde and Lorraine. He left Ireland for Brussels in that April. His lands were declared forfeit and he was transplanted to Galway and Mayo. Like the other old English lawyers with whom he worked, Plunkett was essentially a man of the gown, rather than the sword, and he worked consistently for a peaceful, legal solution to the problems in Ireland, and did not follow Lake's\* example in taking to the battlefield. Despite his involvement in the catholic cause of the 1640s, he survived the 1650s and became the chief spokesman for his co-religionists with Charles II in the 1660s, especially over the Act of Settlement. With his wife, he was adjudged an innocent papist in November 1663. He should not be confused with the author of the manuscript *History of the Irish Rebellion*.

OLIVER PLUNKETT

Kells

d. 1641.<sup>396</sup>

Plunkett was a burgess of Kells and lived near the town. He was a member of one of the most important Meath families, but it is unclear to which branch he belonged. He may have been of Dewleene, owning 40 acres on the borders of Navan and Kells Baronies in 1640<sup>397</sup> or, perhaps more probably, the Oliver Plunkett of Clonebrenney, whose widow Katherine held tithes worth £50 annually in county Meath in the same year. If so, he may be the man of that

<sup>395</sup> \_\_\_\_\_, *The False and scandalous remonstrance of the Inhumane and bloody Rebels of Ireland ...* (London, 1644). p. 70.

<sup>396</sup> He died after 1 March 1641 (see *C.J. (I.)* for that date).

<sup>397</sup> *Civil Survey, Meath*, p. 251.



name, originally from Carstown, Louth, who married the daughter of Patrick Hussey, Baron of Galtrim, by 1612.<sup>398</sup>

WILLIAM PLUNKETT, (1592-1660+) Newborough

2 s. Walter Plunkett and Ales (Alsoon), da. Theobald Blake, merchant, New Ross; m. Hester, da. Serjeant John Hoye (Hoey) (d. 1612) and Maria, da. Ald. Brice, Drogheda (she. rem. Roger Downton, William Sparke, Thomas Hibbotts and Lord Netterville);

ed. King's Inns, 1636;

Kt. 1660.

Walter was a younger son of Richard Plunkett of Bewley, Louth, but was a protestant and became clerk in chancery. William was a son of his second marriage; (his first wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Art McEdmund Cavanagh). The sons of Walter's first marriage all died without issue, so William's prospects were rather better than most other younger sons of second marriages.<sup>399</sup> He followed his father's religion and became pronotary of the common pleas, with fees of £10 in 1629. His marriage firmly linked him to the administration, especially his brother-in-law Hoey\*, Paul Davys\* and the Parsons\* network. His Wexford connections would have increased his links with the Loftus\* family. He had received 400 acres in Scarawalsh Barony in the Wexford plantation and increased this to 3,600 acres, with a mortgage on 400 more, by 1640. He was one of Newborough's original burgesses on its incorporation in 1619 and his step-father-in-law Hibbotts also received lands in that plantation. He also held lands with Sir James Ware\* in Kildare and had other property in Dublin, Meath, Louth and Longford. His deposition claimed losses of £500 p.a. in rents alone in those counties and Wexford. His other losses included £1,000 in arrears, £400 in livestock, and £500 annually from his offices; his total losses were £2,900, of which £1,000 was his estimated annual income.<sup>400</sup> He lived at Rathbeale, Dublin

---

<sup>398</sup> *Civil Survey, Meath*, p. 91; *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, VI, p. 587; Hussey was m.p. for Meath in 1613 and 1634. He married Margaret, da. Robert Rochford, Kilbride, and died in 1635. McGrath, 1613. pp 57-8.

<sup>399</sup> He should not be confused with his cousin, William Plunkett of Bewley, a rebel in 1642. *T.C.D. MS. 816*, f. 31v; it is not clear which William signed a bond on the Dublin Staple in July 1641. *B.L. MS. 19843* f. 94v.

<sup>400</sup> William Plunkett's deposition, 4 March 1642-3, *T.C.D. MS. 809*, f. 318r; the figures indicate that he was including some anticipated losses.



and was a member of the 1624-5 commission of the peace there. He was living in Fishamble St., Dublin in 1646, when he was assessed for cess.

JOHN POWER, Waterford County / Kilmallock

e.s William Power, Downhill, Waterford; m. Giles, da. Sir John Og Fitzgerald, Dromana, and Eleanor, da. 2nd. Lord Dunboyne, and Ellen Roche, da. David, Lord Fermoy; by 1641, 2) Margaret \_\_\_\_\_;<sup>401</sup>

d. 1648+

M.P. Waterford County, 1634, and ?1613.

Power was a major landowner in Waterford, holding 5,601 acres valued at nearly £400 annually, and a mortgage of £1,000 on a further 435 acres. Most of the property was in Middlethird and Upperthird Baronies, and the rest in Glanehery. He lived at Downhill but was also described as "of Kilmeadan" in the neighbouring parish. He does not appear to have held any property in Kilmallock. His marriage connected him to James Butler\*, Redmond Roche\* and Digby\* (whose sister Mabel married Gerald Fitzgerald of Dromana). There was a further connection with John\* and Valentine\* Browne, through Eleanor Browne, who married into the Powers. He was listed as a rebel in Waterford, '41-2 and supported the Confederation, sitting in the 1647 General Assembly and acting with Sir Piercy Smyth as an agent to oversee the cessation in Waterford in 1648. A John Power of Downhill leased 300 acres in Cork from Sylvanus Spenser in 1611; this may have been John's grandfather.

---

<sup>401</sup> A dispute over lands at Kilbarrymedan, Waterford, was brought into the Commons by Richard Butler\*, who was disputing possession of the property with John Power FitzWilliam and his wife, Margaret and others. John Power sat on relatively few committees, but on one, appointed on 9 July 1641, he is described as John Power FitzWilliam. *C.J.(I.)*, 25 May 1641. It seems improbable, however, that he was the son of Sir William Power who was used by his father as a messenger to transmit payments to Boyle for property he leased from him in 1617-8, and John also arbitrated a dispute Boyle was having in 1636. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., I, pp 149,195; II, p. 9; IV, p. 213. The depositions consistently record the rebellious activities of David Power, grandson and heir apparent of Sir William of Kilbolane, Cork, in 1642, and indicate that David was the son of John, Sir William's eldest son. David and William are not described as being of Downhill or Kilmeadan, and the phrase "heir apparent" suggests that John was dead by that date. John of Downhill was still alive six years later, and is, in any case, unlikely to have had such extensive land-holdings during his father's lifetime. *T.C.D. MSS 821*, f. 78v; *823*, ff 171v,178v; *824*, ff 60-1; *825*, f. 145r; *829*, f. 350r.



TOBIAS (TOBY) POYNTZ (POINES, POINTS) Newry<sup>402</sup>

e.s. Sir Charles Poinés, Acton, Gloucestershire and Poyntz Pass, Newry, and Christian Whitechurch; m. Rose, da. and coh. Theophilous Buckworth; 1 s., 2 da.; Kt. 1662; d. 1691+

Poyntz was a second generation settler, as his father was a servitor in the plantation and his mother came from another settler family. His father and uncle were original burgesses of Newry in 1612 and Charles was sheriff of Armagh in 1613 and 1639 (when he was returning officer for m.p.s from the county including his son). Charles, his brother-in-law Marmaduke Whitechurch, Edward Trevor\* and Faithful Fortescue\* were close associates and Toby's cousin Frances Whitechurch married Marcus Trevor\*. He was also cousin of Ormond and of McCarthy's\* wife.<sup>403</sup> He was sheriff of Armagh in 1659, 1660 and 1670. He held property in Antrim and Down and his election is explained by his possessions and his extensive family and other connections in the county, including his father's friendship with the Trevors\*. His activities in the 1640s are poorly documented but he was clearly on relatively good terms with the Commonwealth administration, as he was collecting the assessment for Ireland in the final quarter of 1654 in Armagh and Down and for the second half of 1657 in Armagh. He was still alive in 1691, when he wrote to Ormond, claiming his protection, as he was old and, due to the war, poor and about to be imprisoned for debt. He asked for Ormond's help in obtaining a pension, which he claimed the king had promised him.<sup>404</sup>

GEORGE RADCLIFFE (RATCLIFFE) (1593-1657), Sligo County

e.s. Nicholas Ratcliffe (d. 1599), Overthorpe, Yorkshire and Margaret Marsh; m. 1) \_\_\_\_, da. Baron Finch, Keeper of the Great Seal; 2) -1623, Anne, da. Francis Trappes; ed. Oldham; University College, Oxford, 1609, B.A. (1613); Gray's Inns, 1612, Bar, 1618, Bencher, 1632;

<sup>402</sup> Writs were issued for his replacement on 19 July 1641, apparently at his own request.

<sup>403</sup> Ormond's mother was Elizabeth Poyntz of Acton. Charles Poyntz perpetuated his family's name and origin in placenames in County Armagh, where Acton is only four miles from Poyntz Pass.

<sup>404</sup> Poyntz to Ormond, 20 August 1691 from Acton, and 9 November 1691 from Armagh, *B.L. MS. Add. 28877*, ff 127,149.



Kt. 1633;

d. Flushing.

M.P. 1628,<sup>405</sup> Armagh County, Armagh and Tralee, 1634.<sup>406</sup>

Radcliffe was an active m.p. in 1634 serving on many conference committees and others concerned with petitions, but on few relating to bills. He was Thomas's\* father, the Nettletons'\* uncle and cousin of the Wandesfords\* and Carr\*. His second wife was Wentworth's\* cousin. Other members of the Trappes family were active in Ireland by the early 1640s. He was a long-standing friend and political associate of Strafford and his man of business since 1627. They had both opposed the forced loan, and he had been imprisoned in the Marshalsea. He was Wentworth's secretary as president of the North and King's attorney there. Lady Radcliffe stood godmother to Wentworth's son Thomas. He held substantial lands in Yorkshire, where the rent for his sequestered property was set at £490 in 1648. As Strafford's chief legal advisor, he and Wandesford\* preceded Wentworth to Ireland<sup>407</sup> and were admitted to the Irish Privy Council at Strafford's request. He was Wentworth's principal secretary; in 1636 he was appointed commissioner for ecclesiastical causes and two years later was named as a possible delegate to hear appeals from ecclesiastical courts. His influence with Wentworth was widely recognised - he was described during Strafford's trial as "*his bosom friend*",<sup>408</sup> and one petitioner to the privy council had written "*What he wotes the lord Deputy most commonly orders. ... It's the voice of Sir George Ratcleif that must help more than the advice of the best counsel*"<sup>409</sup> He managed the business of the early stages of the 1640 Irish parliament but shared Strafford's disgrace and articles of impeachment were drawn up against him, although these were later dropped. Articles of impeachment were also drawn up against his father-in-law, Baron Finch in England. He profited from his time in Ireland, acquiring lands in Fermanagh, Dublin (where he held 566 acres at Rathmines) and Sligo; in November 1640 he guaranteed a bond of the merchant Gerard Baxter of Sligo at the Sligo staple.<sup>410</sup> He advised Boyle on the marriage

---

405 His English constituency is unidentified.

406 He opted for the county seat.

407 Radcliffe arrived 18 January 1633. *Gilbert MS. 169*, p. 209.

408 Rushworth, *Trial*, p. 725.

409 Francis Lloyd to R. Herbert, 18 April 1635. W.J. Smith (ed.), *Herbert Correspondence*. (Dublin, 1963). p. 189.

410 Not all his relations with other inhabitants of Sligo were amicable - the Lords Justice decided a case between Radcliffe and O'Connor Sligo in October 1641. *T.C.D. MS. 809*, f. 154r.



settlement of the latter's son to Elizabeth Clifford in 1634 and was a party to the marriage settlement of Robert\* Loftus and Eleanor Rushe. He was imprisoned in 1641; on his release in 1643 he joined the king in England and remained his adherent, staying with him in Oxford (when the university granted him a doctorate in laws) and advising him on Irish affairs. He maintained his old friendships, writing to Ormond in 1644 about helping Carpenter\*. He requested permission from the House of Lords to go abroad in 1643 and by 1647 was in exile in Caen. He was regarded as a delinquent in arms and sequestered in 1648. He was in Rouen in July 1649, when he was asked to present a translation of a book on Charles I's death to Charles II. He was part of the Duke of York's entourage and a member of his council and remained with him on the continent, living in Brussels (1650-1), where he encouraged the Duke of Lorraine's interest in Ireland, and Paris (1653). He was an able lawyer and advised Wentworth on his defence for his trial. His qualities were not always admired. Pym dismissed his defence that he was a mere instrument of policy, maintaining that as a lawyer he was more culpable in his actions in Ireland than Strafford. Mervyn\* described him as "*little inferior in wickedness*" to Strafford, accusing him of abusing his position as a lawyer by publishing "*false opinions, unjust judgments and sentences, in extra judicial manner against law*", and, less probably, "*also cuntenanced Papists and yeelded to the building of Monasterys, to alienate the affections of the Irish from the subjection of England.*"<sup>411</sup> Nicholas described him as "*a very busy and meddling person and none of the most secret or the most discreet.*"<sup>412</sup>

THOMAS RADCLIFFE (RATCLIFFE) (1623-1679), Sligo

e.s. George Radcliffe\*, Overthorpe, Yorkshire, and Anne, da. Francis Trappes; unm;

ed. Grey's Inns (1632), Trinity College Dublin, 1638;

d. Dublin, bur. Thornhill.

M.P. Naas 1665.

Thomas was expelled from the Commons 27 May 1641 on the grounds that he was a minor at the time of his election. George's\* son, he was a cousin of

<sup>411</sup> A. Mervin, *Ireland's complaint against sir George Radcliffe ... declared in Parliament ...* (London, 1641). pp A1v-A2v.

<sup>412</sup> *Nicholas Papers*, I, p. 292.



Wentworth\*, Carr\*, the Wandesfords\* and Nettletons\*, and as a boy he spent time at Wentworth Woodhouse. He entered Gray's Inns improbably early, perhaps because the family was soon to move to Ireland. Despite his youth, he was a witness to a deed in September 1637 in Dublin. His election was clearly due to his father's influence but he had some local connections, as his father purchased lands for him in Sligo before 1640. He was with his father in Oxford in 1643 and Rouen in 1649 and seems to have remained on the continent until the restoration, when he returned to Ireland and was admitted to the privy council. He replaced Carr\* or Wentworth\* as m.p. for Naas (thanks, presumably to the continued influence of the Wentworths there). He retained his links with Sligo, where he was sheriff in 1673, and a j.p.

GEORGE RAWDON (REYDON, RAUDEN, ROWDEN, ROWDON) (1604-1684),  
Belfast

o.s. Francis Rawdon, Rowdon, Yorkshire, and Dorothy, da. William Aldborough, Otley, Yorkshire; m. 1) 1635, Ursula, da. Sir Francis Stafford, Portglenone, and Anne Grogan, w. Francis Hill; 2), 1654, Dorothy, da. 2nd. Viscount Conway; ed. Bradford, York; Bart. 1665;

M.P. Down, Antrim, Armagh 1659; Convention, Antrim County; Carlingford, 1661.

Rawdon was unusual in Ireland in the 1630s in being a Yorkshireman who had not come to Ireland as part of the Wentworth\* / Wandesford\* / Radcliffe\* network. His prosperity was not due to the administration's favour, but to his connection with Lord Conway, the principal secretary of state, whose secretary he became in 1625; he was employed in the Hague Treaty. After Conway's death in 1631, he became agent for the second Viscount's Irish estates<sup>413</sup> and arrived in Ireland in 1633. He lived in Conway's house at Lisnagarvey (Lisburn), although he also acquired his own lands in Antrim and Down and over 1,000 acres in Dublin County. He was also Conway's tenant at Carrickfergus. He was a careful and attentive agent - one of his duties included

---

<sup>413</sup> The family's Irish interests were established by Sir Fulke Conway, m.p. for Antrim in 1613, and one of the original burgesses of Belfast; he died without issue, and his property passed to his nephew the first Lord Conway. McGrath, 1613. p. 96.



pursuing a lengthy law suit about disputed lands with the Langfords\* - and his second marriage reinforced his Conway links. His first marriage connected him to Arthur Hill\*. His return for Belfast is explained by his business connection with the Conways. He is reported to have spent the year before the rebellion in England, and he is certainly not recorded in the *Journals* as being an active m.p. He was admitted a freeman of Belfast in March 1643. He did not confine himself to administrative work on behalf of the Conways and commanded a company of soldiers in Ireland in 1635. Five years later he was captain in Arthur Hill's\* horse regiment. His own house at Brookshill was pillaged within a fortnight of the beginning of the rebellion. He commanded a troop of 60 dragoons when, with Arthur Chichester\* and Lord Conway, they defeated Phelim O'Neill\* at Lisnegarvey in 1642. Rawdon rose to the rank of major by 1644 and took part in Monroe's campaign that summer. Three years later he was sent by the Committee of Both Houses to brief Fairfax on Irish affairs. In February 1648 he fought in Antrim. After Cromwell gained control of Ireland, he became a commissioner to examine the condition and value of confiscated lands and took examinations in Antrim, Armagh and Monaghan in 1653. He signed a bond for £300 at the Dublin Staple in February 1656. He was a commissioner to raise the assessment in the final quarter of 1654 and second half of 1657 in Antrim and Down. With Clotworthy and Arthur Hill\* he selected j.p.s in Antrim and Down in 1655. He was active in the movement for the restoration; he was commissioner for the poll money ordnance in Antrim and Down in 1660-1 and also for Carrickfergus in the later year. He became a privy councillor in 1660 and governor of Carrickfergus. He was included in the 1661 general pardon and was a commissioner for the settlement of Ireland; he was classed as a '49 Officer. He was a commissioner to value ecclesiastical livings in 1673.

WILLIAM READING, Newry<sup>414</sup>

d. 1668.

Reading was based in Newry and was j.p. and sheriff of Down in 1638-9. With Edward Trevor\* and Arthur Tyringham, he was surprised by the rebels in Newry on the outbreak of the rebellion, but was released in April 1642. He was presumably the man of that name who was joint taster of wines in 1660 and died

---

414 A writ for his replacement was issued in March 1641, but no reason was given.



in Dublin eight years later. A John (or Joshua) Reding, presumably a relative, took examinations in County Down in 1653.<sup>415</sup>

#### HUMPHREY REYNOLDS Leitrim

e.s. John Reynolds, Loughscur, and Margery O'Malley; m. by 1622, Grizell (Russell), da. Sir James Ware and Mary Briden;  
d. c1660.

Humphrey was a member of a family of Gaelic origin, (MacGrannell, a junior branch of the Farrells\*) which had been protestant for at least two generations. John Reynolds was constable of Leitrim and his brother William was m.p. for that county in 1613.<sup>416</sup> Despite the plantation, John retained 2,207 acres in Leitrim and he and his sons Charles and Humphrey were all members of the 1625 commission of the peace. Humphrey's younger brother was county member in 1634 but died in 1638, leaving him his lands, as his own son was mentally handicapped. He inherited the family property at Loughscur and also held some lands in Meath; he had dealings with Boyle as early as 1616 and 1617. He was joint constable of Leitrim with his father from 1607 and auditor of the commission on wards from 1619 (his salary in 1634 was £35 11s. 1d). He was brother-in-law of the Wares\*, Schout and Dudley\* Loftus, a cousin of Bryan Jones\*<sup>417</sup> and connected by marriage to Cruise\*. Although he was a protestant, his servant, Patrick Offlin and several members of the Reynolds family joined the rebels in 1641 and he also came gradually to support this side during the 1640s and 1650s. Earlier in the rebellion his son John was taken prisoner by the rebels and he was reported to have saved the protestant clergyman, Thomas Johnson of Mayo.<sup>418</sup> He was transplanted to Boyle but was living at Loughscur in 1660 and was a collector of the poll money ordnance in 1660.

#### PAUL REYNOLDS (RAYNALDS, RAYNOLDE), Killyleagh

s. \_\_\_\_\_ Raynold, Scotland;

415 *T.C.D. MSS 837*, ff 63r,186; *838*, ff 131r,209-10,214,216ff.

416 William was a catholic. McGrath, 1613. p. 89.

417 Humphrey's grandmother was Julia McGeoghegan; Jones\* was executor of Humphrey's will, which was drafted in 1660.

418 Both events occurred in 1642. *T.C.D. MS. 831*, ff 7v,155.



d. 1647-50.

M.P. Killyleagh 1634.

Reynolds was a Scottish settler, resident in Bangor in July 1632, when he received his denization, and in Killyleagh. He may have had some legal training as he sat on a large number of parliamentary committees in 1634, usually an indication of a background in law. He received a letter from the parliamentary commissioners in 1647. He may have been the Col. Reynolds who fought with Cromwell in Ireland in February 1650.

DOMINIC ROCHE

Cork

d. 1642+

Roche was a merchant and an alderman of Cork. He received £87 sterling as payment for his attendance in parliament in 1641. There were a number of aldermen of this name, including the son of William, mayor in 1609, who lent the corporation £10 in 1624 and was responsible for re-roofing the king's castle there two years later. He was common speaker in 1625 and is recorded as the first known whiskey distiller in Cork. He built a market house in New Street in 1630. Alternative identifications are the son of James Roche, sheriff in 1614, serjeant at mace in 1634-5, or Dominic Roche FitzEdmund, serjeant at mace in 1638-9 who may also have rented lands from Lord Cork from 1616. Ald. Dominic Roche of Cork discharged a mortgage from John Roche of Castlequin, Fermoy, in March 1638 and a Captain Dominic Roche was listed as one of "*the chiefe commanders & incendiaries to this rebellion*" in Munster in December 1641.

PATRICK ROCHE, (d. 1642-58) Kinsale

2 s. Richard Roche (d. 1638), Poulnelong, and Jennet, da. Patrick Gould, Cork;  
m. Katherine, da. Thomas Sarsfield, Cork; at least 1 s.

Richard Roche FitzPhilip FitzJames was a former sovereign of Kinsale, and a j.p. His three marriages were to the daughters of fellow member of Cork



merchant families; Patrick was a son of his second marriage and Philip\* of his third. Another son, Dominic, was m.p. in 1613.<sup>419</sup> Patrick married a member of another Cork merchant family. A dispute with his step-mother Nicola Roche about his father's will was the subject of legal processes in England and he claimed parliamentary privilege to avoid being served with a writ which would oblige him to answer questions about the estate.<sup>420</sup> He inherited his father's castle at Poulnelong, on the river between Bandonbridge and Kinsale. It was besieged in 1642 and 100 rebels were slain. He held lands in Cork, part of which were leased to the English settler Tristram Whitcombe, mayor of Kinsale in 1642. Whitcombe alleged that he stole his grown corn, barley and oats, and took back the castle which he had rented from him some time between the outbreak of the rebellion and April 1642. A number of other settlers claimed debts due to them from him and his son Philip. While he was listed as a rebel, no precise evidence of his activities is included in the Cork depositions. His will was proved in 1658 and 1664.

#### PHILIP ROCHE, Kinsale

3 s. Richard Roche (d. 1638), Poulnelong, and Nicola, da. Garrett Gould, Cork; m. \_\_\_\_\_; at least 1 s.  
 ed. Gray's Inns, 1633;  
 d. 1654+

Philip was Patrick's\* half-brother. He lived in Cork Street, Kinsale and leased lands in the town from Kinsale Corporation in March 1639. With his fellow merchant Richard Roche FitzThomas he signed bonds before the Dublin Staple in October 1639 and November 1640. On the outbreak of the rebellion he left Kinsale and lived in the Irish quarters. As Captain Philip Roche, he was listed as one of "*the chiefe commanders & incendiaries to this rebellion*" in Munster in December 1641 and attended the meeting of the gentry of Kinalea Barony at Bolgolly, near Kinsale, at the following Candlemas, where they

419 McGrath, 1613. p. 72. His return was presumably eased by the fact that his father was sovereign and therefore returning officer for that election. *An. Hib.*, XV, p. 164. This Dominic had a number of land deals with Lord Cork in 1616-7, *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., I, pp131,152,157; he was still alive in 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 827*, ff 32r-33r.

420 *C.J. (I.)*, 30 June 1641.



considered “*an authority*” from St. Leger\*.<sup>421</sup> He was also involved in privateering. He moved to Macroom, where he built a defensive house and although he was later imprisoned, he was released and returned to Kinsale on the cessation. He was living in Bantry in February 1654, but later went to Spain. He was granted 565 transplantation acres in County Galway.

REDMOND ROCHE<sup>422</sup>

Cork County

5 s. David Roche, Lord Fermoy (d. 1635-6), and Joan, da. Lord Buttevant; m. 1) Jane, da. Sir John Dowdall, Kilfinney; 2) Alice, (w. William Wiseman, Bandon, (d. 1636))<sup>423</sup> da. Sir Richard Smith, Ballinatray, and Mary Boyle, sister of the first Lord Cork;  
d. 1654+

Redmond replaced his nephew by marriage, McCarthy\*. His first marriage made him Waller's\* brother-in-law and connected him to the local settler family of Southwell and to Rotherham\*. His second marriage connected him to the whole Boyle\* network in Munster and throughout Ireland.<sup>424</sup> He was the only member of his family to marry into the settler community; his siblings married into the families of Lord Power, Kilmallock, Kerry and Muskerry\* and the local gentry of O'Connor Kerry, Everarde and McCarthy, providing connections with John Fitzgerald\* and Power\*. His connections with the Upper House were, if anything, stronger than with the Commons. His first wife was her father's co-heiress and must have brought him substantial property. He held lands at Ballyhendon, Fermoy Barony and Garranadrolane (where he lived), and Kilmacane. He was clearly in financial difficulties in 1635, when he mortgaged Ballyhendon to Boyle for £700 in November, and sold lands at Kilbyrne to the settler William Grove for £200.<sup>425</sup> As Redmond Roche of Ballyheiden, he signed a bond before the Cork Staple in November 1639. He was

421 *T.C.D. MSS 824*, ff 5r,7v,11v,267r; 826, f. 106.

422 He should not be confused with Redmond Roche of Kilbride, Wexford, the son of Walter Roche, Clonlough, who was also active in the rebellion. *T.C.D. MS. 819*, ff 193r-194r,242v.

423 m.p. for Bandon in 1634, and escheator of Munster.

424 He was on friendly terms with Boyle, through whom he was also connected by the marriage of one of Boyle's daughters to Lord Buttevant. Roche and Boyle rode together to visit the latter's daughter in November 1634. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., IV, p. 58.

425 Grove was still claiming that Redmond owed him money in 1642. *T.C.D. MS. 825*, f. 170v. Grove's address was given as Cardowgan, so it was presumably his castle that Redmond took two years later.



raising troops for service in Brussels in 1641. He was active in Munster in the early days of the rebellion, acting with Theobald Purcell, Baron of Loughmoe; he was indicted for rebellion in 1642, and his lands were declared forfeit. He was imprisoned by Cork on St. Leger's\* orders in early 1642, but, having submitted, St. Leger\* ordered his release.<sup>426</sup> However, he seized the castle of Caherdongen in April 1644 and kept possession of the house. A supporter of the Confederation, he was a member of the 1647 General Assembly. Cromwell granted him protection in 1649 perhaps because of his connection with Waller\*.

HUGH ROCHFORD (1607-1651+) Fethard

e.s. James Rochford (d. 1657) and Ales, da. Michael Keating, Baldwinstown, Wexford; m. - 1635, Catherine Williams, (d. 1641, bur. St. Michan's, Dublin); ed. Middle Temple, 1628; King's Inns, 1635; d. 1651+

Hugh was a wealthy man, even during his father's lifetime, as he held lands at Taghmon (Tagunna), Forth Barony, where he lived and his wife's dowry was £1,500. He was high sheriff of Wexford in 1641. His legal education was presumably the reason for his being returned, rather than his father. He was expelled for being in rebellion, joined the Confederate army and was a captain from very early in the rebellion. He was a commander at the siege of Duncannon and was with his troops at Tintern Abbey in July 1642. He was a member of the Wexford County Council in 1641-2 and continued to act as high sheriff under the Confederation. His brothers Matthew and John also fought for the Confederation, John as lieutenant colonel. The Confederation used his legal training and he was a judge of assize in Leinster in 1646, recorder of Wexford in 1649 and a commissioner to judge prizes in ports. He was a member of the 1647 General Assembly and the eighth Supreme Council. He was involved in privateering and was engaged in the rebellion under Ormond in October 1647. He was in Wexford in late 1649 and 1650, when, with Geoffrey Baron,<sup>427</sup> he tried

---

<sup>426</sup> "Notwithstanding my former letter for continuance of Mr. Redmond Roche in restraint, I have thought fit upon better consideration and his submission to his Matie, and laying hold of the proclamation lately published, to discharge him out of restraint, for which I pray and require your Lop. to give present and effectual order, and to acquit him of any further [restraint]." St. Leger to Cork, 1 April 1642, N.L.I. MS. 13,237(27).

<sup>427</sup> M.P. Clonmel 1634. See D.N.B.



to persuade the town to come to an agreement with Cromwell. He is last reported in June 1651, preparing to leave for La Rochelle with Bishop Nicholas French.

THEOBALD RONANE

Youghal

d. 1642+

M.P. Youghal 1634.<sup>428</sup>

Ronane was an alderman of Youghal. A member of a long-established local merchant family, he was admitted freeman in 1611, served as bailiff in 1627 and mayor two years later. A merchant, he had important connections, being on good terms with Walter, Earl of Ormond, for whom he acted in matters concerning his collection of prize wines.<sup>429</sup> He contributed £12 to the general assessment to provide sack for the Confederate army in 1642. He was a witness to the will of Thomas Ronane of D'Laughtane, brother-in-law of John Hore\*. He was included in the decrees of innocents.

CHRISTOPHER ROPER, (1616-1619- 1661-1665) Dingle

2 s. Thomas, Viscount Baltinglass (d. 1637), Roper's Rest, Dublin, and Kerry, and Anne, da. Sir Henry Harrington; m. Anne, da. Roland Wilcokes, Coventry, w. Sherringham Talbot, Ridgehall, Shropshire.

Roper's election is explained by the influence of his brother, the second lord Baltinglass and his brother-in-law Denny\*. Despite being a younger son, he was well provided for. His father took out leases on lands in Carlow from Ormond in his sons' names in 1621 and also arranged a pension of £146 for Christopher's life in 1623. He also acquired an annual income of £300-£400 from his wife's lands in Shropshire and Leicestershire. Despite this, he was imprisoned for debt in 1643. He was a soldier in Tyrringham's regiment in 1640 and Piers Crosby's\* in the following year. His inexperience in battle was regarded as one of the reasons for the government's defeat at Julianstown in 1641, when he was serjeant-major. In the following March, he and Borlace\* sr. brought the

---

428 He received 41 votes in his election that year and 44 in 1640.

429 Ronane to Ormond, 14 February 1631, from Youghal. *N.L.I. MS. 2304*, p. 1.



news of the victory at Drogheda to Dublin. In 1643 he commanded a company in Lord Kildare's regiment, with the rank of major. He crossed to England and served in the royalist army as a colonel and cavalry officer. He fought in north Wales with Lord Loughborough in January 1646. He compounded for his Leicestershire property two years later. He survived the upheavals of the 1640s and 1650s, partly by living in Shropshire. He petitioned for his arrears of pay of £2080 in 1660 and compensation for his sufferings in the following year.

PIERCE ROTHE<sup>430</sup> (1590-1654)                      Kilkenny

s. John Rothe FitzPiers (d. 1621), Kilkenny, and Rose Archer; m. 1610, Lettice, da. Walter Lawless and Margaret Rothe; ed. Inner Temple, 1611; King's Inns, 1629.

The Rothés, like the Archers, were prosperous Kilkenny merchants and the family's wealth may be judged from the house Pierce's father built on the main street in Kilkenny in the 1590s.<sup>431</sup> The Confederation met in a building almost opposite this house. He was an alderman and held lands in Kilkenny county and in Wexford (where he inherited 350 acres worth £23 annually in Bantry Barony) and 400 acres in Tipperary. He was an active member of the Commons, sitting on many committees, including that which drew up articles of impeachment against Radcliffe\* and others. After his expulsion for rebellion, he became equally active in the Confederation, taking the Oath of Association and was an adherent of Rinuccini. In 1644 he was paid £400 by the Confederation for Lord Castlehaven. His will was proved in 1654.

THOMAS ROTHERHAM, (d. c1648)      Tuam

2 s. George Rotherham, Somery, Armagh, and Luton, Bedfordshire; m. 1) 1609, Elizabeth, da. Francis Evington, London; 2) Margaret, (d. 1640), da. John Southwell, Suffolk and Limerick, w. William Methwold; Kt. 1605; M.P. Tuam, 1613, 1634.

---

<sup>430</sup> He should not be confused with Peter Rothe, m.p. for New Ross in 1634.

<sup>431</sup> The house is still standing, and is known as Rothe House. John Rothe Fitz Piers was mayor of Kilkenny, and its m.p. in 1585.



Rotherham came to Ireland in 1596 as a soldier (he served under Clifford and Mountjoy at the Curlews and Kinsale) and his father was granted lands in Armagh. He was appointed governor of Galway in 1607 and was mayor of the city in 1612. His address at the time of his first marriage was given as St. Mary at Hill, London, but he generally lived in Ireland. He was commissioner of civil causes and deputy to Clanricarde in 1615. Two years later he became surveyor general of buildings. In 1624-5 he was a member of the Galway commission of the peace and deputy lieutenant of the county in 1627. He continued to hold army commissions and brought a troop of 50 infantry from England in 1625. He was included in the army lists of 1640, although he must by then have been quite elderly. He was a privy councillor by July 1631. His first father-in-law was a London merchant tailor. His second marriage connected him to the important Munster settler family whose connections included Waller\* and Redmond Roche\*. He benefited from the plantations in Fermanagh, Cavan, Longford, Leitrim and King's County - he was involved in surveying the lands intended for plantation in Longford and Leitrim and received 1870 acres there. He built a castle at Shannonbridge on the Galway borders. He seems to have lived mainly in Dublin from 1630 (he had a house in Bride Street), although he was at the English Court in January of that year. He continued to be listed as an alderman of Galway until 1643.

EDWARD ROWLEY, Londonderry County  
o.s. John Rowley (d. 1618), Cheshire and Castleroe, and Mary, da. Robert Gage, Randles, Northampton, she rem. 1) 1620, George Trevelyan (1579-1620); 2) Lord Kirkcudbright; m. - 1634, Lettice, da. Sir Hugh Clotworthy; she rem. Robert Blaire. d. 1641.  
M.P. Coleraine, 1634.

Rowley lived at Castleroe and Ballymacstoker, a mile from Coleraine. John Rowley, a Cheshire draper, came to Ireland in 1611 as an agent for the London Society (although he had corresponded with Richard Boyle before his arrival), and was one of Coleraine's original burgesses and m.p. for Coleraine County in 1613.<sup>432</sup> Mary Gage's brother William came to Ireland as supervisor of

<sup>432</sup> McGrath, 1613. pp 102-3.



buildings for the London Society. Her second marriage connected Edward to Culme\*, Wray\*, the Fortescues\* and Chichesters\*.<sup>433</sup> These connections with the settler community continued into his generation: his wife linked him to Coote\* and Langford\* and his sister married Tristram Beresford of Londonderry.<sup>434</sup> He was searcher of Carrickfergus, Strangford, Bangor and Belfast in 1623. He inherited his father's lands in Coleraine, where he held over 4,000 acres, some jointly with George Cary,<sup>435</sup> and was engaged in a land dispute with the Bishop of Derry. He also had leases of land in Kilmacrennan and Maghera. He was one of the agents who brought the Remonstrance to England in November 1640. He was appointed captain of a troop of soldiers in Londonderry in November 1641 and unsuccessfully appealed to Conway\* for help in defending that county; he was killed by rebels in Coleraine in December.

GEORGE ST. GEORGE (1584-1660) Carrick-on-Shannon

4 but 2 s.s. Sir Richard St. George, Clarenceux King of Arms, and Elizabeth, da. Nicholas St. John, Liddiard Tregose, Cornwall, and Elizabeth Blount; m. Mary, da. Richard Gifford (d. 1598), Ballymagarrett, Roscommon and Castle Jordan, Meath, and Mary, da. Sir Henry Duke and \_\_\_\_ Moore, she rem. 1) Francis Rushe; 2) Sir John Jephson; Kt. 1627; bur. St. Nicholas's, Galway.

George and his three brothers came to Ireland, presumably with their uncle, Sir Oliver St. John<sup>436</sup> around 1605. All were soldiers, two of whom died fighting under Dowcra; Richard (m.p. for Athlone 1613)<sup>437</sup> and George survived to establish families in Leitrim and Roscommon. He remained a soldier, based in the garrison town of Carrick-on-Shannon (Carrickdrumrusk); he was appointed surveyor general of the ordnance from 1608 and a lieutenant of foot

<sup>433</sup> George Trevelyan, m.p. for Belfast 1613, Lord Deputy Chichester's nephew. McGrath, 1613. p. 97.

<sup>434</sup> A member of one of the most prominent planter families and m.p. for Londonderry County in 1634.

<sup>435</sup> Another settler, m.p. for Londonderry City and County in 1613 and 1634 respectively, and brother-in-law of Tristram Beresford. McGrath, 1613. p. 104.

<sup>436</sup> Lord Grandison, master of the ordnance and vice president of Connaught, and m.p. for Roscommon County in 1613. McGrath, 1613. pp 91-2.

<sup>437</sup> He is referred to in the *Commons Journals* as Richard St. John, but this is clearly an error for St. George. McGrath, 1613. p. 63.



from 1613. Four years later he became surveyor general of the customs and in 1620 vice-admiral of Connaught, and King's\* deputy as muster master; he received a pension in 1623. He held the rank of captain by June 1627, when he petitioned the English privy council for his arrears; in the following year he was granted the reversion of a company of foot on the death or resignation of his uncle St. John, who died two years later. He held a commission in the lord deputy's regiment in 1640 and was serjeant-major at a daily salary of 9/-. His Irish connections were mainly from the midlands; he was a member of the 1624-5 Leitrim commission of the peace, and commissioner to raise money for the army in Leitrim and Roscommon in 1627. He formed part of Thomas Rushe's funeral procession in 1629 and, with his servant, of Lord Aungier's in 1632. His marriage linked him to the Wentworths\* and Loftuses\* and, through his brother-in-law Gifford\*, he became involved in the Gifford-Loftus\* case. His daughter married Richard Coote, son of Charles sr.\* and brother of Charles jr.\* and his eldest son married Elizabeth Hannay, a sister of Coote's\* second wife, and a connection of Francis Hamilton\*. His brother Richard married a member of the Pinnock family, based in Dublin and Roscommon, who were related to the Bysses\*. The Coote\* connection was a close one; he fought with Coote\* and Captain King around Athlone and Elphin in 1641-2. He commanded regiments in Athlone and Carrick in 1642 and 1645 respectively and the St. Georges adhered to the parliamentary side in 1649, when they were recommended by Coote\*, who described them as having "*lost all they had for their fidelity in the state's service.*"<sup>438</sup> Soldiers from his company in Coote's\* regiment were dispatched to America in 1656-7. He remained in Ireland in the 1650s, still serving as a soldier and as commissioner to raise the assessment for Ireland in the final quarter of 1654 in counties Roscommon and Leitrim, and in Leitrim and Galway in the second half of 1657; he was sheriff of Sligo in 1655. He signed bonds with other Roscommon residents at the Dublin and Galway staples in 1654 and 1655. Lands in Roscommon (where he already possessed extensive estates) were reserved for George and his family during the transplantation, and he was living in Carrick in 1660; he was constable of Maryborough at the time of his death. With Coote\*, he supported the restoration, and his sons Oliver and George sat in the Convention for Galway County and Carrick-on-Shannon respectively.

---

438 C. Coote, *Two letters from Sir Charles Coote ...* (London, 1650). p. 5.



The St. Legers were involved in Ireland since 1540, when Anthony St. Leger was made lord deputy. The family established itself in Carlow and King's Counties and later, through the interest of Sir Warham St. Leger, president of Munster, in that province. Warham's son, Sir William\*, held extensive possessions in Cork, and he expanded into Tipperary and Limerick in the 1630s.

WILLIAM ST. LEGER (c1580-1642) Cork County  
e.s. Sir Warham St. Leger and Elizabeth Rothe, Kilkenny, w. Humphrey Mackworth and Henry Davills; m. 1) 1616 Gertrude de Vries, Dort; 1 s., 1 da;  
2) Gertrude Heywood, 2 s.;  
Kt. 1618;  
M.P. Cork County 1634.

William was connected to Davills\* (whose wardship he was granted in 1613), Rothe\* and Harpole\*. He was also the Piggotts'\* cousin, and cousin and uncle by marriage of Kingsmill\* and Ogle\*. His first wife was Dutch and their children who were born abroad were naturalised by an act of the 1634 parliament. Through his children, he built up close connections with other new English families and old English and Gaelic families with protestant inclinations. His daughters married Inchiquin, Barrett\*, Phillips's\* brother and John Gilbert (Sir William's\* son and William's\* brother) - Phillips and Gilbert were also Piggott\* connections. His eldest son William\* represented Kilmallock and another son married the Chichesters'\* sister Mary. He left Ireland at the time of the flight of the earls and, like O'Neill, surfaced in Brussels in late 1607. He fought in Belgium and Holland from then until the 1620s<sup>439</sup> and was serjeant major of Cecil's regiment there. Throughout this time he divided his interests between the Low Countries, Ireland and England; he was granted £1,000 worth of lands in Ireland in 1618, in recognition of his father's service to the crown. His son was baptised in the Hague in 1620, with Ogle's\* father as proxy godfather for Salisbury. The key to much of his activity was his relationship with Buckingham and Sir John Ogle - in 1623 when he requested leave to go to Spain to accompany Charles on his journey to Britain, he was favoured "*as a particular servant of*

---

439 Jennings, *Wild geese*, no. 305, note a; he became involved in Lord Herbert of Cherbury's quarrel with Lord Walden in 1610. J.M. Shuttlebury, (ed.), *The Life of Edward, first Lord Herbert of Cherbury, written by himself*. (London, 1976). p. 56.



Buckingham."<sup>440</sup> With Ogle, who was a member of the Council of War, he was increasingly involved in military matters in England, fitting ships for an expedition to Scotland in 1623, examining the state of martial affairs in Kent in the next year, with troops stationed at Dover for France, exchanging soldiers in the Low Countries and as serjeant-major of the army in England. With Blundell\*, Ogle\* and perhaps also Waller\*, Carleton\*, Gibson\* and Gifford\*, he was one of the chief commanders of the ill-fated 1625 Cadiz expedition. He was granted a company for service in Ireland in that year and left Barnstaple for Youghal with 500 foot soldiers, recruited in Devon and Cornwall. In the following January, however, he was billeted in Somerset. With these connections, and especially as one of Buckingham's Irish agents, it is unsurprising that he was granted the reversion of the office of president of Munster, after Buckingham's half-brother, Edward, in 1625. Three years later he became president, with a commission to execute martial law, and a privy councillor. He held many local offices, including membership of the 1624-5 commission of the peace for Cork and three years later was made a freeman of Cork City. He built a "*faire & sumptuous house*"<sup>441</sup> at Doneraile in 1633. He was an active m.p. in 1634, sitting on many committees. He was much less active in 1640, being nominated only to the standing committee on privileges, and his interest in its proceedings seems to have been low, until the outbreak of the rebellion, when he wrote "*I have a very good mind to bee at the beginning of the sitting of the Parlement (if it be held) to see if my friend D[arcy] will hold up his nose as confidently as he was wont to doe.*"<sup>442</sup> The St. Legers' Irish land interests were in King's and Queen's Counties, Clare, Westmeath (he was pardoned for alienating lands in these counties in 1625) and Tipperary where he lived, and where he was granted the right to hold fairs and markets in 1633. He proposed the plantation of Ormond in 1630; 7 years later he tried to buy lands from Ormond.<sup>443</sup> Through his secretary, Gethings\*, and other servants, he claimed

<sup>440</sup> *Cal.S.P.Dom.*, 1623, p. 167; see also his letter to Buckingham, 24 March 1623, *B.L. Harl. MS. 1581*, f. 256 and L. Parsons to Boyle, 29 November 1623, *N.L.I. MS. 13,237(4)*. St. Leger also held lands in Queen's County for Buckingham, Ohlmeyer, *Antrim*, p. 68.

<sup>441</sup> *T.C.D. MS. 820*, f. 318v; it was destroyed early in the rebellion; he also built the church there, *Irish memorials of the dead*, III, pp 242-3. Boyle intended to use Doneraile as a model for a house he was building for his son Francis at Carrigaline, in October 1636. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., IV, p. 210.

<sup>442</sup> St. Leger to Perceval, 1 November 1641. *B.L. MS. Add. 46925*, f. 165v; he remained in Munster for some time, however, as he wrote to Perceval four days later to ask him whether the parliament had been postponed, *ibid.* f. 178r.

<sup>443</sup> St. Leger to Ormond, 21 April 1637, from Mallow. The letter also refers to his "*good friend Sir Edward Fitzharris*". *N.L.I. MS. 2305*, p. 199.



losses of £3,224 in Cork in May 1642.<sup>444</sup> He had a regiment of the new army in 1640 and, as serjeant major general, was responsible for training the whole army. His actions in late 1641 were regarded as one of the reasons for the rapid spread of the rebellion throughout Munster; on 3rd. December he killed 200 rebels between Clonmel and Waterford, and three days later executed 40 'ringleaders' in Cork. In April 1642 he was besieged in Cork by Theobald Purcell, Richard Butler\* and Lords Roche, Ikerrin, Dunboyne\* and Muskerry\*. He was succeeded by his son-in-law Inchiquin as commander of forces in Munster on his death in May 1643. With Wentworth\* and Ormond, he helped settle Strafford's affairs after the latter's execution.

WILLIAM ST. LEGER (1617-9-1644) Kilmallock  
 e.s. Sir William St. Leger\*, and Gertrude de Vries, Dort; unm.

William was born in Altkmond in the Low Countries and naturalised by Act of Parliament in 1634-5. He was a brother-in-law of Inchiquin and Barrett\*, and through his siblings' marriages linked also to Phillips\*, the Chichesters\*, Gilberts\* and O'Briens\*; he was a cousin of Kingsmill\*, Davills\*, Ogle\* and the Piggotts.\* With Stoughton\* he was godfather to Denny's\* son William in 1638. He guaranteed a bond of the Nagles before the Cork Staple in July 1641. He was a captain of a company in 1640 and his father's request for a lieutenant colonelcy for him was refused by the lord lieutenant; a second application, in May 1642, this time to the Commissioners for Ireland, which described him as a "*captain in his majesty's service in the North, and since sent into France for his better improvement*"<sup>445</sup> who returned to Ireland on the outbreak of the rebellion, was apparently successful, as he was chosen by Lord Wharton as a field officer in the 7th. troop for Irish service, and he was Lieut. colonel to Lord Kerry in the service of the parliament by that August. He was part of Inchiquin's forces which arrived in Bristol without clothing. He was appointed lieut. colonel in the Duke of York's regiment.<sup>446</sup> He crossed to Ireland with his troops, but without arms or clothing, and was in Dublin in July-August 1643; later in that year he returned to England, and was killed fighting on the

444 T.C.D. MS. 824, f. 112.

445 Hogan, *Letters and papers*, p. 32.

446 Copy of the commission, undated, in which he is referred to as 'Sir William.' B.L. MS. Harl. 6804, f. 59.



royalist side at Newbury. His father ensured his return for Kilmallock; the president of Munster had general electoral influence in the province, but Sir William\* had specific power in Kilmallock, and a John Walsh, with an address in that town, described himself as a servant of the president in December 1641.<sup>447</sup>

WILLIAM SAMBACH (SANDBATCH, SAMBADGE), Carrickfergus  
e.s. Anthony Sambach, Giles Wickcross, Gloucestershire; m. \_\_\_\_\_; at least 1 da.  
ed. Middle Temple, 1606, Bar, 1626, King's Inns, 1637;  
Kt. 1639; d. 1651-3.

Sambach arrived in Ireland before 1630 when he was appointed recorder of Carrickfergus. From 1634, Cork retained him as a lawyer (including on his lengthy dispute with Blacknall and his widow) and he also had legal connections with Lord Charlemont. He became sargent at law in 1637 and acted with Nathaniel Catlin and Nicholas Plunkett\* as counsel for Gifford\* in his dispute with the Loftuses\*; in the following year he was named as a possible delegate to hear appeals from ecclesiastical courts in Ireland. In 1640 he was appointed solicitor general. A resident of Dublin, he held 860 acres in Dundrum; he also lived at Ballyna, Kildare. He claimed losses of £906, including rents of £200, for his Kildare property in March 1642. A separate deposition claimed further losses of £3,800 for his Dublin lands, and other debts and bonds. He was John Moore's\* father-in-law. In 1644 he was an agent in Oxford, advising Charles on Irish affairs. In the following year he was one of the lawyers Ormond consulted about the possibility of legalising the saying of Mass, as part of the negotiations for peace with the Confederates. He testified in 1651 in the Gifford\*-Loftus\* case in parliament.

PATRICK SARSFIELD, (d. 1666+) Kildare  
e.s. Peter Sarsfield, Tully, and Eleanor, da. Sir Terence O'Dempsie, 1st. Viscount Clanmaliere (d. 1637), and 1) Mary Fitzgerald, Lackagh (d. 1614); m. Anne, da. Rory O'More, and Jane, da. Sir Patrick Barnwall, Turvey, and Mary, da. Sir Nicholas Bagnall.

---

447 T.C.D. MS. 829, f. 350r.



Patrick had extensive connections with other m.p.s and the old English gentry of the Pale. He was Nicholas Barnwall's\* brother-in-law, Dempsie's\* nephew, Fitzharris's\* grandnephew and a cousin of Maurice Fitzgerald\* of Lackagh. His aunt Katherine's marriages to a Bellew\* and a Dillon\* provided links to those families and his own marriage connected him to O'Reilly\* and to several members of the Lords. His grandmother Mary Bagnal, supplied connections to the new English community, especially the Trevors\*. His uncle, William Sarsfield of Lucan, whose lands he inherited, was excluded from the 1624-5 commission of the peace, although he himself was a member of the Dublin commission.<sup>448</sup> Apart from his uncle's property, he also had dealings in 1617 with James Ware\* about lands in Carne. Given his links with Rory O'More (who stayed with him at Tully in January 1642), his support for the rebellion was understandable. He organised the collection of money for the Confederation in Kildare in 1642. He was transplanted to 888 acres in Clare and Galway but, although he was ordered to be restored to his lands in 1661 and was consistently recommended for restoration over the following years, he experienced considerable difficulty in regaining his estates. His wife was granted £5 for her maintenance in October 1661 by the crown. In 1666 he signed the petition to Charles concerning religious freedom. His son and namesake was the Jacobite commander, the Earl of Lucan.

BERNARD SAUNDERS (d. 1643) Carlingford

Saunders was a soldier, with the rank of lieutenant in the army; he was a captain by August 1640. He may have been deputy remembrancer of the exchequer. The surname Saunders occurs in Carlingford from 1439 so he may have been old English. An Edward Saunders was a soldier in Tyrriugham's regiment and was imprisoned in Newry in 1641, aged 22.

CHRISTOPHER SHERLOCK, (d. 1642+) Naas

e.s. Richard Sherlock, Little Rath, Kildare; m. 1) Eleanor \_\_\_\_\_; 2) Anne, da. James Fitzgerald, Osbertstown, Kildare;  
M.P. Naas, 1613 and 1634.

<sup>448</sup> T.C.D. MS. 672, ff 174r,175r.



Sherlock's family had also provided m.p.s in 1560 and 1585. Christopher was a merchant, sovereign of Naas in 1610 and a member of the 1624-5 Kildare commission of the peace. He was expelled from the Commons in 1642. He held lands at Gingerton, Naas and was living in that area in January 1642 when he was collector of protestant cattle and corn for the lower Naas barony; he lent the Kildare Council of War £800 to support the army. His closest links were with other Kildare gentry, but he had influential connections in his sons - John (1603-1654), m.p. for Dublin County in 1647, was gentleman of the bedchamber to Charles<sup>449</sup> and Philip was Maurice Eustace's\* brother-in-law.

FRANCIS SLINGSBY, (1569-?1652), Bandon

9 s. Francis Slingsby, Knaresborough, Cleveland, and Lady Mary Percy, da. Duke of Northumberland; m. c. 1603, Elizabeth, da. Hugh Cuffe, Cuffeswood, Cork and Somerset; 2 s., 5 da;  
Kt. 1605.

Francis came to Ireland before 1599 and was a captain in the Nine Years' War; through his marriage to a member of a local settler family, he acquired the seignory of Kilmore where he lived and a family link with the Cootes\*. He had other close connections with the settler community through his daughters' marriages to Sir Maurice Berkeley of Askeaton and Francis Willoughby and to a member of the Cosby\* family, but his son Henry, owner of Kilmore in 1641, was a catholic. He also held the castle of Kilgoban and some lands there from McCarthy Reagh by 1606. He had land deals with Lord Cork in March 1623 and was Robert Boyle's godfather four years later. His progress in Ireland was presumably assisted by this brother William's influence with George Carew, and by his connections with Buckingham and Wentworth. His nieces Elizabeth and Eleanor married John Villiers, Lord Purbeck (brother of the Duke of Buckingham and of Edward Villiers, president of Munster) and Wentworth's old Yorkshire neighbour, Sir Arthur Ingram, respectively.<sup>450</sup> His nephew Guildford Slingsby was one of Strafford's secretaries, and m.p. for Carysfort in 1634; his annual

449 Sir John married Katherine Ashburnham, daughter of Lady Richardson, c. 1634. Cork was a party to the marriage settlement. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., IV, pp 34-5. Sutton\* gave a pass for letters from John to his father, ?December 1641. *T.C.D. MS. 816*, f. 10r.

450 Ingram was also a connection of Cole\*.







tenant and agent in the early 1630s - some of his business letters to the Earl are dated from Cork house and Kildare was his daughter's godfather. He lived at Inch (Eglish, the Island), and Ballinkennoge, three miles from Parsonstown, King's County, on lands rented from Lord Kildare; his annual profits from those lands were worth £270, according to his widow's deposition (she claimed losses of £1,155).<sup>455</sup> He was a captain in the army by 1632 and took depositions for the Admiralty Court as "one of the messengers of the King's Chamber" in May 1637.<sup>456</sup> His castle became a place of refuge for many local protestants in November 1641. He and up to 30 of his protestant neighbours were killed at Christmas 1641 during a raid on the home of Teigue MacOwen O'Molloy; he was decapitated and his head was brought to Philipstown. His wife and children took refuge in Birr and were living at Eglish in 1660.

WILLIAM SMITH (1590-1655) Clonmel

illeg. s. Hugh Smith, Long Ashton, near Bristol; m. Mary Kinsman (d. 16 May 1658);

bur. Damagh Church, Kilkenny.

William's half-brother Thomas, whose widow remarried Thomas Piggot\*, sat in the Long Parliament. He came to Ireland with Ormond whose secretary he was. This connection explains both his settling at Damagh and his election; he and Gethings\* were admitted freemen of Clonmel after their selection as m.p.s on 6 February 1640.<sup>457</sup> He was heavily involved in the earl's business affairs and witnessed many Ormond deeds and the earl's marriage settlement. Ormond granted him lands at Callan, Ballycine and Westcourt, Kilkenny, and arranged for his grant of arms in 1635 with the motto *Ditat Servata Fides*. Comerford described him as "cousin".<sup>458</sup> A rumour circulated in June 1642 that he was replaced as secretary, having joined the rebellion but this was clearly incorrect, as he was with Ormond's son in Chester in 1647 and successive earls reaffirmed his loyalty. He was a committed protestant and built the church

455 Deposition of Grace Smith, 25 February 1643, *T.C.D. MS. 814*, ff 163r-6r,168r.

456 Appleby, *op. cit.*, p. 247.

457 Clonmel town book, *N.L.I. MS. 19,171*, f. 319; Ormond's influence in the election of Clonmel's officers was acknowledged by Henry White, m.p. in 1634, and mayor in 1638-9, White to Ormond, 23 September 1639. *N.L.I. MS. 2306*, p. 215.

458 *N.L.I. MS. 2306*, p. 117.



at Damagh. His son Laurence died at the siege of Drogheda in 1649 and Laurence's son Valentine was steward to Ormond and his successor.

WILLIAM SOMERS (SUMMERS, SOMMERS), Athlone

s. \_\_\_\_\_; m. 1), 1621, Elizabeth Wart; 2) 1634, Katherine Lux;  
King's Inns, 1656;

d. 1669+

M.P. Roscommon, 1661.

Somers's origins are unclear but he was in Ireland by 1621, when he married in St. John's Church, Dublin. He was serjeant at arms for Connaught and petitioned the lord deputy for an inquiry into the forfeiture of that office in 1629. Most of his influence at that time came from his position as secretary to Ranelagh, president of Connaught and he normally resided at Athlone, the presidential seat of government. It was as William Somers of Athlone esq. that he signed a bond with Perceval before the Dublin staple in August 1641. He witnessed many Jones' deeds and it was presumably as client of that family that he witnessed John Chichester's\* will in 1643. He remained in Ireland in the 1640s and 1650s, working mainly in an administrative capacity, although he was agent for Connaught in England in 1643, when he and John Davies\* were questioned by the Irish committee about the embezzlement of funds. When Viscount Dillon became president of Connaught in 1644, he remained in Athlone with him and delivered letters to Ormond in July 1645. He held the offices of clerk of the first fruits (1645), and register in chancery (1655). He was a commissioner to collect the assessment for Ireland in Meath in the last quarter of 1654. He may also have been involved in the tobacco monopoly, as he owed money to Dutch merchants for that commodity in that year. He was appointed attorney for Wharton\* in the following year. He was admitted to the King's Inns in 1656 as a barrister, so he must have attended the Inns of Court at some stage. Two years later, he and other Roscommon protestant gentlemen including Coote\* supported Martha Hatt's petition. He was living in Bridge St., Dublin, in 1660, when he was described as "mayor". His connection with the Joneses continued and may explain his 1664 appointment as customer of Limerick.



NICHOLAS STAFFORD (1610-1654+) Fethard (W.)

e.s. John Stafford (d. 1638), Ballynakerne, Wexford, and Allison, da. Peter Devereux, Ballimagire, Wexford; m. 1632, Mary, da. Peter Barnwall\*, Drimnagh.

Staffords settled at Ballynakerne before 1411 and played an active role in Wexford administration and society - John Stafford was sheriff in 1610. Nicholas's mother came from an equally notable Wexford family. His marriage, however, connected him to the wider network of old English families, especially the extensive Barnwall\* clan, as Peter Barnwall's\* son-in-law and Richard's\* brother-in-law. He inherited his father's property in Wexford. He was appointed governor of Wexford county by the lords justice in late 1641 and, with William Browne\*, was given the rank of colonel and empowered to raise forces for the defence of Wexford. Finding that his orders as governor were disregarded, he followed the mood of his fellow old English and raised forces and provisions for Mountgarrett and Preston in the following year. He was a member of the Wexford County Council and high sheriff for the Confederation in 1643-4. He took advantage of the cessation to sign a bond with Hollywood\* on the Dublin Staple in December 1644. He was imprisoned by Preston in June 1647, when Ormond asked for his release. He was transplanted. His family was similarly involved on the Confederate side - his brother Jasper was an ensign in the Confederate forces and Melchior, a priest, was executed in 1649. He should not be confused with his Wexford neighbour, Nicholas Stafford of Coddstown.

THOMAS STANIHURST

Newry

? s. Henry Stanihurst,<sup>459</sup> Corduff, County Dublin; m. by 1628, Mary Grizzell, da. Nicholas Seaver, Lusk, County Dublin;  
d. after June 1642.

Stanihurst replaced Poyntz\* in July 1641 but was expelled for non-attendance in 1642. He was indicted for rebellion in 1642 when his address was given as of Dublin or Corduff. He lived at Newcastle, County Down and near

---

<sup>459</sup> He may have been the son of Walter Stanihurst who served as a soldier in the Low Countries, but he is more likely to have been the son of Henry, the only one of James's sons to remain in Ireland, and who lived at Corduff in north County Dublin, on lands which Thomas inherited.



Lusk. A Dubliner, he was probably the nephew of the historian, Richard (1547-1618), and grandson of James Stanihurst, recorder of Dublin and speaker of the 1557, 1560 and 1569 Commons. The Stanihursts were part of the capital's old governing elite and the Usshers'\* cousins. His wife came from one of the oldest-established families of north Dublin. His father was presumably a protestant, as he nominated the original burgesses of Newcastle-juxta-Lyons on its incorporation in 1613; his inclusion in a similar list for Newry at the same time suggests that he was one of those who, like Esmond\*, outwardly conformed and chose to support the catholics, whose sympathies he secretly shared, only in 1641. He served as a soldier in the Low Countries; a captain in the new army, he held the same rank in a regiment raised around Lusk on the outbreak of the rebellion and his company fought at Swords early in 1642. His brother Richard was a lieutenant colonel in the Irish forces and was reported to be keeping Arthur Maginness of Iveagh's mother a prisoner in 1642; Richard was dead by that June but Thomas survived him.

JOHN STANLEY

Drogheda

y.s. John Stanley; m. ? Maud Barnwall, Crickstown;

d. 1645+

Stanley was a merchant and alderman and mayor of Drogheda in 1634, although he was also a merchant and freeman of Dublin from 1624, in which capacity he signed bonds with Robert Loftus\* in 1635 (when he also had a land deal with Cork) and 1640 and with Lord Henry Blayney in November 1640. He leased 145 acres to Patrick Dowdall of Killaley, Louth and lived at Marliestown (Marlettstown, Mallettstown) in Louth, and had other property in Tyrone. He was a regular signatory of Dowdall deeds. He met with other Louth gentry at Tullaghesker in November 1641 when they appointed captains for Louth and was one of those who met Phelim O'Neill\* and other lords and gentry of the Pale about the taking of Drogheda in February 1642. In early 1642 he was described as a rebel in both Louth and Armagh, and was "*employed by the Rebels to goe to Gallway in the Province of Connaught to furnish Sr. Phelim O Neale and the Rebels in the North with Arms & Munitions & carried wth him great summes of mony for that purpose*".<sup>460</sup> He was indicted for rebellion in 1642 and forfeited

460 T.C.D. MS. 836, f. 55v.



lands in Dundalk. He was a member of the 1642 Leinster Council and the 1644 General Assembly. He received £26 13s. 4d from the Confederation in 1644, and £177 7s. in 1645. His lands were not restored.

STEPHEN STEPHENS, Athy

2 s. John Stephens, Banna, Wexford; m. Frideswide (Friswood), da. Bishop George Andrews, Ferns, and Ellen, da. Bishop John Ryder, Killaloe; she rem. October 1643 Henry Lee;

ed. King's Inns, 1623;

d. 1642-3.

John Stephens was customer of Waterford and New Ross and was expelled from his home at Banna, New Ross, early in the rebellion. Stephen was based in Dublin but had strong links with his constituency through his wife's uncles, Walter Weldon and Henry Andrews.<sup>461</sup> He was filacer of the common pleas; his admission to the King's Inns as an attorney implies that his legal knowledge was gained through his work rather than study in the Inns of Court. He did, however, work as a lawyer and acted for Lord Cork in a case against the Bradys in 1636. In April 1642, his servant Ensign Henry Lee claimed losses of £1,132 on his behalf; these included damage to his Dublin property, loss of £28 rent on lands in Queen's County and £300 for loss of profits of his office. He took under his care the daughter of Thomas Iremonger, who was robbed by rebels in Cavan. He died shortly after June 1642 and his widow petitioned Ormond for debts due to his estate from John Bellew\* and others in 1649.

OLIVER STEPHENSON [Limerick County]

e.s. Richard Stephenson, Ballyvoghane, Tipperary, and Margaret O'Brien; m. \_\_\_\_\_; d. 1643.

Oliver's grandfather and namesake, a recusant new English settler in Munster in the 1580s, was granted the Wall family lands in Limerick. Oliver sr. married Una O'Mahony and his brother Thomas married David Crosbie's\* sister.

<sup>461</sup> Weldon was m.p. for Athy in 1613, McGrath, 1613. p. 50; Andrews was m.p. for Sligo, but was also clerk of the peace in Kildare. McGrath, 1613. p. 94.



Richard married Lord Inchiquin's aunt, so Oliver jr. was connected to the O'Briens\*, St. Legers\*, Stoughton\* and Ogle\*, as well as Piers and David Crosbie\*. His sisters Catherine and Elizabeth married Donough O'Brien of Carrigogunnell and Lucas Taaffe (Theobald's\* brother) respectively and there were other family links with John\* and Valentine\* Browne. His father represented Limerick County in 1634 and was active in the rebellion, serving as sheriff of Limerick and besieging Waller's\* castle at Kilfinney. Oliver was also active for the Confederation and died in action at Liscarroll, having killed Lord Kinalmeakey.

The Stewart brothers, William and Robert, were apparently the sons of Andrew and Katharine Stewart of Garlies, Whitethorn, Wigtonshire, Scotland, who came to Ireland as soldiers in 1608 to assist in suppressing O'Doherty's rebellion. Both built up estates in west Ulster and became privy councillors.

ROBERT STEWART

Londonderry

m. Katherine Barclay; ? also Alice Legge?

Kt. by July 1643.

d. September 1662.

Robert and his older brother William\* were granted lands in Donegal and Tyrone; he also held lands in Leitrim, Cavan and Fermanagh. He had many influential connections in Ireland and England, having been gentleman of the bedchamber to James. His sister-in-law Frances Newcomen connected him to Phillips\*, Perceval, the Usshers\* and Loftuses\* and made him James Montgomery's\* uncle by marriage. He was a very experienced soldier who fought under Mansfeldt and the kings of Denmark and Sweden. He was governor of Derry from 1610 to 1643, and of Culmore fort, where he lived and was licensed to raise troops for the king of Sweden in 1637. He was a captain in Strafford's regiment of the new army in 1640, and received a commission to raise 1,000 foot and a troop of horse for Charles, under Ormond's command, in November 1641. A royalist officer throughout the 1640s and a commander of the Lagan army, he defeated Phelim O'Neill\* at Raphoe in 1642 and Owen Roe O'Neill in Clones in the following year, when he also fought in Monaghan and Tyrone. With the Montgomeries\* and his brother William\*, he met at Belfast in



January 1644 and agreed in principle to refuse the Covenant (although he later accepted it); he participated in Monroe's campaign in June-July of that year. With Mervyn\* he was captured by Coote\* and Monck to prevent their declaring for the king and was sent to London in 1648. He escaped in February 1649 and fled to Holland, meeting Charles II in the Hague and returned to Ireland with commissions to command all horse and foot in Ulster immediately under Hugh Montgomery\* and to command five regiments - his own and his brother's, Cole's\*, Mervyn's\* and Lord Folliott's, if Lord Montgomery did not engage. He was also empowered to levy and command a regiment and to appoint inferior officers. On his return to Ireland, he fought with Mervyn\* against Coote\* at the siege of Derry in May 1649. Like his nephew, James Montgomery\*, he was excluded from pardon in 1652. He held the rank of captain of foot in 1660 and was a commissioner for the poll money ordnance in Tyrone in 1661.

Sir WILLIAM STEWART

[Trinity College Dublin]

m. Frances, da. Sir Robert Newcomen and Catherine, da. Thomas Molyneux, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Ireland; 5s., 2 da.;

Kt. 1619; Bart. 1623;

d. c. June 1647.

M.P. Donegal County, 1613 and 1634.

William received his denization in 1610 and was granted escheated lands in Wexford and extensive tracts in Dunconally, Coolelaghie and Gortavaghie in Donegal (where he lived at Ramelton) and Tyrone (where his residence was Newtownstewart); he purchased further property in Omagh in 1638.<sup>462</sup> In 1624-5 he was *custos rotollorum* of Donegal and a member of the commission of the peace there and in Tyrone; two years later he was a commissioner to raise money for the army in Donegal. He was James Montgomery's father-in-law\* and through his wife was connected to Phillips\*, Moynes\*, Perceval and the Usshers\* and Loftuses\*. He was a soldier and captain of 50 foot from 1616; he obtained an order for his soldiers' back-pay in 1627. He kept troops at his house at Newtownstewart and had a commission to raise 1,000 foot and a troop of horses in 1641. He was very active against the rebels, raising the gentry and inhabitants of Donegal as a force to oppose them and his troops

<sup>462</sup> One of his tenants was John Karnes, the original m.p. for Augher in 1640.



were alleged to have murdered Irishmen who joined them. On the outbreak of the rebellion he went to Strabane and Londonderry and he remained active as a royalist, defeating Phelim O'Neill three times. In 1644 he was one of the agents sent to England to advise Charles on the treaty and was a witness at Lord Maguire's trial in the following year.

ANTHONY STOUGHTON (c1600-1666+)      Ardfert

e.s. Anthony Stoughton, (d. 1626), and Margaret Deering; m. 1) Mary, da. Henry Mainwaring, Kilkenny and Elizabeth, da. Ralph Skipwith; 2) Honora O'Brien, da. Dermot, 5th. Lord Inchiquin (d. 1624);  
ed. Trinity College Dublin, B.A., 1622, M.A., 1625, and Inner Temple, 1624.

Anthony's father and uncle came to Ireland from Surrey in 1586 and were joint clerks of the Court of Castle Chamber.<sup>463</sup> He inherited his father's property at Rattoo, Kerry and his crown office. He was well-integrated into Kerry society: in 1629 he bought a lease of Ormond's tithes there and with William St. Leger\* jr., was godfather to Denny's\* son William in 1638. His first wife's family settled in Ireland in the previous century and Mary Mainwaring's sister Elizabeth married the Rev. William Bulkeley, son of Archbishop Bulkeley of Dublin. His second marriage connected him to the O'Briens\*, St. Legers\* and Ogle\*. He was in Kerry in 1642, making local agreements with his catholic neighbours. He signed the letter of support for Inchiquin from Cork in 1646. His wife wrote to John Perceval from Rattoo in August 1653. In 1663 Clarendon assigned him £4,600 of his money from Adventurers' lands.

NICHOLAS SUTTON

Naas

o.s. William Sutton, Tipper, and Catherine, da. Nicholas Wogan, Rathcoffey, Kildare; m. Ellen, da. Patrick Scurlock (Sherlock), Rathcredan, County Dublin;  
d. 1644+

Nicholas inherited his grandfather, the lawyer John Sutton's property at Tipper and Barberstown, Kildare. The property, valued at over £167 annually, was declared forfeit on his indictment for rebellion in 1642. The Suttons were

463      Anthony was m.p. for Askeaton in 1613, McGrath, 1613. p. 79.



prominent Kildare gentry with strong connections to other old English and Dublin merchant families. His grandfather and great-grandfather represented Kildare County in 1613 and 1585 respectively and his father-in-law represented Newcastle juxta Lyons in 1634. In early November 1641, he and Dongan\* signed a bond with Philip Perceval for £250 for the use of his fellow Kildaremen, Maurice Eustace\*, Maurice Fitzgerald\*, William Archbold and Sir Nicholas Whyte. He was one of the leaders of the rebels in Kildare, being appointed colonel for the county at a meeting of local gentry in December 1641 and was accused of robbing his neighbour John Marre in 1641-2. He was active in the administration of Kildare, granting safe-conducts and raising money for the Confederate army. In February 1642 his house and corn were burnt by Coote\* and others and the administration offered a reward of £400 and a free pardon for his capture. He was a member of the 1644 General Assembly.

WILLIAM SWANTON

Enniscorthy

e.s. William Swanton, London; m. \_\_\_\_\_, at least 1 da.;

ed. Middle Temple, 1609; bar 1617;

d. 1643.

Swanton followed his father, a reader in the Middle Temple, into the law. He settled in Wexford as Sir Henry Wallop's agent; he lived near Enniscorthy, the borough Wallop controlled. He was expelled from his home at Mount Main in Wexford (which he rented from John Jessop of Clonmore, Kilkenny for £230 annually) very early in the rebellion and his son-in-law Simon Bellers of Dublin claimed losses of £4,000 in Wexford on his behalf. Bellers alleged that his Irish estate was valued at £400 and that he had other property in England. He drowned when rebels scuttled his ship as his family escaped from Enniscorthy.

NICHOLAS SYMPSON

Monaghan County

m. \_\_\_\_\_; at least 1 s.

d. 1653-60.<sup>464</sup>

---

<sup>464</sup> He was not included in the 1660 census, so he was probably dead by then.



Sympson lived at Glaslough, Monaghan, where he was a commissioner to raise money for the army in 1627, and Cavan, where he appeared on the muster roll for Stephen Butler's estate in 1630. He may have been the Mr. Simpson who was paid £5 for work relating to the Casey family of Rathcannon (connections of Waller\*) in 1639.<sup>465</sup> In October 1641 he was chosen to present a remonstrance of the grievances of the inhabitants of Monaghan county to the administration, for transmission to the king.<sup>466</sup> On the outbreak of the rebellion he was initially imprisoned at Glaslough by the sheriff of Monaghan, Tirlough Og O'Neill, Sir Phelim's\* brother. Tirlough protected him for the first months of the rebellion and brought him to Armagh around March 1642, where he acted for the inhabitants in agreeing articles for the town's surrender. He remained imprisoned in Armagh for some time. In the following year he signed the petition of Charles's protestant subjects. He and John Martin\* were sworn aldermen of Drogheda in 1649, where he still lived four years later. With Edgeworth\*, he oversaw Champion's\* widow's will, proved in 1651, under which he received a legacy of £20. He may have been from Lincolnshire. There were many Simpsons living in Cavan and Monaghan, but it is not possible to establish clear links between them, although they were presumably related. Francis Sympson was a clergyman at Kilmore and a Mrs. Sympson kept a school at Belturbet.<sup>467</sup>

#### THEOBALD (TIBBOT) TAAFFE (c1603-1677) Sligo County

e.s. John Taaffe, first Viscount Taaffe of Coren, and Anne, da. Theobald Dillon, Viscount Dillon of Costello Gallen; m. 1) Mary, da. Sir Nicholas Whyte, Leixlip, and Ursula, da. Garrett Moore, Lord Moore, and Anne, da. Adam Loftus, Lord Ely; 2) Ann. da. Sir William Pershall and Elizabeth, da. Lord Aston; she rem. Randal Plunkett, Lord Dunsany;  
2nd. Viscount Taaffe of Coren, 1642, Earl of Carlingford, 1661.

<sup>465</sup> *B.L. MS. Add 46926*, f. 120.

<sup>466</sup> Nicholas Sympson's deposition, *T.C.D. MS. 834*, ff 182r-5v; the remonstrance appears to have been a local one.

<sup>467</sup> Francis, the minister who was drowned by the rebels near Armagh c. 1642, may have been Nicholas's son. A Simpson was excluded from the 1624-5 commission for the peace in Monaghan. *T.C.D. MS. 672*, f. 185v.



Taaffe's father was a member of an old English family from Louth which acquired lands in Sligo in the sixteenth century. John was sheriff there in 1623-4; he had also received lands in Cavan in the plantation. Theobald inherited his father's property and his estates in Sligo alone were valued at over £390 annually. Through his mother, he was related to the Dillons\* in both houses. He was nephew of Sir James and Lucas Dillon\*, Ulick Burke\* and Farrell O'Gara;<sup>468</sup> he was also a cousin of Patrick Manning\*, Talbot\* and the Bellews\*. His first marriage made him Nicholas Whyte's\* brother-in-law and linked him to the extensive Moore\* network. His second wife was English. His brother Lucas (a major-general in the Confederate Army) married Stephenson's\* sister and his sister Ismay married Brian McDonagh of Sligo.<sup>469</sup> Five brothers and two sisters were members of religious orders. When the new Irish army was formed in 1640, he was a lieut. colonel in Sir Charles Coote's\* regiment with a daily salary of 15/-. Like other members of this regiment, he was made a freeman of Belfast in August 1640. When it appeared that this army would not be used, he received permission to take his troops to Spain. They did not leave Ireland, however, and although it appears that he was in London with Lord Dillon on the outbreak of the rebellion, he later joined the Confederate army and was granted command of troops in Connaught in 1644. He was one of those negotiating the peace and Ormond granted him a commission to fight in 1646, and he took Tulsk in Roscommon. He was granted a command of troops in Munster in the following year, but was imprisoned in Dublin that July, accused of plotting to take Dublin. He was released by the following November, when he was defeated at Knockenosse by Inchiquin. He was reconciled to Inchiquin in 1648 when they both declared for the king and their combined forces was estimated at 10,000 men. In 1649 he was master of the ordnance, fighting with Ormond at Baggotrath and at Drogheda. He was in Galway in June 1650. In 1651 Ormond sent him, Nicholas Plunkett\* and Geoffrey Browne to Brussels, Jersey and Paris to seek aid from the Duke of Lorraine; his negotiations (which included an agreement that Lorraine's illegitimate daughter should marry Prince James) did not endear him to Henrietta Maria. He was exempted from the general pardon by Cromwell, and he remained on the continent in the 1650s, staying in the Hague in 1658. He was

---

468 O'Gara was m.p. for Sligo County in 1634, and was the patron of the *Annals of the Four Masters*. B. Jennings, *Michael O Cleirigh, chief of the four masters and his associates*. (Dublin, Cork, 1936). pp 125-31, 142-148.

469 McDonagh was a member of one of the six most important Sligo families of Gaelic origin., and was m.p. for Sligo County in 1613. McGrath, 1613. p. 93.



restored to his lands by Charles, who also conferred an earldom<sup>470</sup> on him; he was a familiar and influential figure at the English court where he was on familiar terms with the royal family<sup>471</sup> and Charles sent him to the Emperor Leopold to solicit his support against the Netherlands in 1665. His influence in political matters declined after this embassy and he retired to Ballymote.

HENRY TALBOT, (d. 1661+) Newcastle

s. \_\_\_\_\_ Talbot, Templeogue; m. Margaret, da. Sir William Talbot, Carton, and Alison Netterville; at least 1 da.;

Kt. 1643;

The Talbots of Templeogue were a wealthy and influential family in south Dublin. Richard Talbot of Templeogue attended the general hosting at Tara in 1593, coming from the barony of Newcastle. Henry was Dungan\* and Sir Robert Talbot's brother-in-law. His father-in-law was a leader of the recusant faction in the 1613 parliament and Margaret connected him to Patrick Manning\*, Lord Baltimore and Peisley\*. He was also connected by marriage to the Cruise\* family. He held extensive lands in Dublin, especially in Newcastle barony, near Saggart and Swords, and near Dublin Castle; Strafford coveted the latter property and persuaded him to surrender it for 1,000 acres in the proposed plantation of Connaught. He was still trying to obtain lands in compensation in the 1660s.<sup>472</sup> In 1635 he petitioned the king for help in collecting the rents which he was owed in Dublin; he also held lands in Louth. On the outbreak of the rebellion he was granted a commission to exercise martial law in Dublin. In 1642 he went to England with Dungan\* to negotiate for the Irish; the lords justice alleged that he colluded with the rebels, although they later admitted that there was no proof of his involvement. He stayed in England and fought for Charles, being present at Worcester in 1643; with other Irish, as col. Sir Henry Talbot, he was taken prisoner at Chepstow in January 1644. He returned to Ireland in 1646, having raised a troop of horse. He was knighted by Ormond at Kilkenny in the same

---

470 He chose the title Earl of Carlingford, a town with which the Taaffes had long historical associations. One of the remaining tower houses in the town, to which a sixteenth century dwelling was added, is still called Taaffe's castle. P. Gosling, *Carlingford town: an antiquarian's guide*. (Carlingford, 1992). pp 51-4.

471 *Pepys MS. 488*, f. 32 records his gaming debts with Prince James.

472 This may have been the watercourse which was the subject of a lengthy dispute with Dublin Corporation. *C.A.R.*, III, p. 246.



year.<sup>473</sup> In September 1648 he was imprisoned, with his wife. He was transplanted to Roscommon, where he was assigned 2,500 acres; in 1660 he held lands there with Theobald Dillon. In the 1660s he was commended for his loyalty and an order issued for the restoration of his estates.

THOMAS TALLIS (TALLES, TALLY) (d. 1647+) Killybegs

m. \_\_\_\_\_;

M.P. Killybegs, 1634.

Talles came to Ireland by February 1630, when he corresponded with Falkland.<sup>474</sup> His signature appears on a Perceval document in 1632. In 1634 Peisley took a case in the court of castle chamber against him, although the subject of the proceedings is unclear. He was clerk of the munitions under Toby Caulfield before 1636. He signed the petition of protestant subjects to Charles. He lived at Golden Lane, Dublin and his son Philip was baptised in St. Bride's Church there in January 1644. He was commissary for the Irish forces in 1646, overseeing the mustering of troops in Waterford and, with Bryan Jones\* and Harman\*, negotiating with Darcy\* and Geoffrey Browne\* at Kilkenny. He was still attending the parliament in 1647. He was apparently a close associate of Rawdon\* and Conway\*; many of his letters to Rawdon\* were written from Dublin, one from Cadogan's\* house. He had no known connections with Killybegs, although he was in the north of Ireland in August 1639. The will (drafted in 1651) of Henry Tallis of Benton, Oxfordshire, left £20 to each of his brother Thomas's two sons, although this may not have been the same man.

EDWARD TARLETON (TORLETON, TORLETONE, THARLTON) Killybegs  
? s. Thomas Torleton, Hales Wood, Lancashire,<sup>475</sup> bapt. 1604; m. Anne, w. John

---

<sup>473</sup> He appears regularly on a list of those being cessed to pay the soldiers of Captain John Mayart at Dunsoghly, with other gentry; he is referred to as Henry Talbot until mid-November 1643, and thereafter as Sir Henry Talbot, so it seems strange that Ormond should repeat the dubbing. *N.L.I. MS. 2308*, pp 205-216.

<sup>474</sup> His Irish connections may date from considerably earlier, if he was related to Patrick Tallys, vicar of Ramoan, Connor, in 1614. *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, III, p. 367. If so, he may have been Scottish, as the name Patrick would have been very uncommon in England or Wales.

<sup>475</sup> If so he was related to another settler, Gilbert Tarlton of Moniguid, Queen's County, who was also a connection of the Digbies\*. *T.C.D. MS. 815*, f. 268; *Irish Memorials of the Dead*, X, pp 220-1.



Dutton, Cappeagh, Donegal;  
King's Inns, 1628, attorney;  
d. 1666+  
M.P. Lifford 1661.

Tarleton was English and settled in the Donegal / Derry area by 1628, when he appears on a rent roll in Derry. Between 1628 and 1631 he was a member of a number of commissions to inquire into the state of lands granted under the plantation of Ulster. He claimed lands in Cappeagh, Donegal in 1631, in his wife's right (her first husband was a settler and a tenant of Sir Ralph Bingley), and he was a tenant on episcopal lands.<sup>476</sup> By 1633 he was a householder in both Lifford and Londonderry and sheriff of Tyrone in the following year. Hunter describes him as a money-lender and cattle-dealer. In 1642, with Karnes, he was an agent from Londonderry to the lords justice, and sent on by them to represent the city's case to the lord lieutenant. Four years later he was named as a commissioner for Donegal by a committee of both houses. He became recorder of Lifford and in 1660 was a commissioner for the poll money ordnance in the town.

JOHN TAYLOR (d. 1678-80) Swords  
e.s. Michael Taylor, (1584-1620), Swords, and Joanna Russell, Drynham; m. Mary, da. John Fagan, Feltrim, Dublin;  
ed. Gray;s Inns, 1632, King's Inns, 1638.

The Taylors and Russells had long been prominent in Swords and north Dublin, and John was a connection of Peppard\*, Nangle\* and the Bysses\*. He inherited over 300 acres in Swords from his father, including the manor house there and other property in Drogheda. He was a member of various committees in the Commons, including that which drew up charges against Bramhall and Radcliffe\*. He was indicted for rebellion and his lands declared forfeit. His wife claimed that he had taken no part in the rebellion, describing him as "*wholly addicted to the law*", and declaring that he was, in consequence,

---

<sup>476</sup> The Dutton's property was extensive and valuable: Ann, wife of Captain Thomas Dutton claimed losses of 8 quarters of land in Kilmacrennan Barony, with an annual value of £300. *T.C.D. MS. 839*, ff 125v-126v,129r.



known as "*magna charta*". Maurice Eustace\* supported these statements, and her petition for the return of the lands, which were later restored.<sup>477</sup>

SIMON THOROUGHGOOD (TOOGOOD, THOROWGOOD)      Ennis  
d. 1641.

Simon lived in his constituency and the Thorogoods' connections with Ennis went back to at least 1612, when William Thoroughgood was one of its original burgesses.

ROBERT TRAVERS      Clonakilty  
e.s. John Travers (d. 1618) and Sarah Spencer; m. 1) Katherine Nangle; 2), 1638, Elizabeth (d. 1659+), da. Archbishop Richard Boyle, Tuam;  
Kt. 1625;  
d. 1647.  
M.P. Clonakilty, 1634.

Travers lived at Ballynamona and Rochfordstown. His parents were new English settlers and his uncle was the poet Edmund Spencer. His second marriage linked him to the whole Boyle\* network, including Crowe\*, Boyle\* and the Loftuses\*. Through his daughters' marriages to Robert Stannard, Kilmallock and William Meade, Ballintubber and Richard Aldworth, he was connected to other Munster settler families. He was granted the freedom of Cork in 1623. He became register of Cork diocese in 1628, a post formerly held by his father and in which he was succeeded by his brother Zachary, with whom he bought the lands at Ballymack and Rochfordstown (called Castle Travers) in Cork. Another brother, Joseph, became chancellor of Cloyne in 1635. He was a judge of the admiralty court in Munster by 1625, and was accused of taking bribes in this office. In 1625 he was a member of the Cork commission of the peace and two years later a commissioner to raise money in the county for the army. On the

---

<sup>477</sup> *Cal.S.P.Ire.*, 1660-2, pp 74,572-3; the depositions make no mention of any of his activities, apart from a letter from Robert Bysse\* to his brother, dated February 1642, giving a long account of the rebellion, and of the juries in Dublin, Meath and Kildare who were indicting rebels. Bysse\* notes that "*My uncle Taylor is not mentioned, but John and Robin are*". It is not clear whether this supports John's claim of innocence, or not. *T.C.D. MS. 840*, f. 9v.



outbreak of the rebellion he was in Cork and his castle at Rochfordstown was besieged by Muskerry and others at Easter 1642. His letter from Bandonbridge in May 1642 to a neighbour, James Finch, detailing events in Munster was published in London. He was a judge of martial causes in 1646 and in that August, with Bannister\*, Stoughton\*, Waller\*, Kingsmill\* and others, signed a letter of support for Inchiquin. He was killed at the battle of Knockenosse.

EDWARD TREVOR (d. 1643)

Down County<sup>478</sup>

e.s. John Trevor, Brynkynault, Wales, and Margaret, da. Richard ap Rhydherch, Myvvfian, Anglesey; m. 1) Anne or Agnes, (d. 1610), da. Nicholas Ball, Landerstown, Meath; 2) Rose (d. 1623), da. Archbishop Henry Ussher; 3) Margaret, da. William Lloyd, Hatchdyn, w. John Jeffreys, Acton, Shropshire; Kt. 1617;

M.P. Killyleagh, 1613, and Newtownards, 1634.

Trevor came to Ireland as a military adventurer and, like other families of Welsh or Shropshire origin, settled in east Ulster. His cousin, Sir Richard Trevor was governor of Newry 1606-26, and Edward was governor of Mourne, Newry and Iveagh from 1608 and collector of fines in Down from 1616. He was a member of various local commissions and sheriff of Down, and later Denbeigh (1622), an indication that not all his energies were channelled into his Irish concerns. He was a member of the 1624-5 Down commission of the peace and *custos rotullorum*, and in 1627 was a commissioner to raise money in Down for the army. While most of his interests were concentrated in east Ulster, he became a privy councillor in 1623. As a soldier (he fought with Essex), he used his army pension to build up estates in Armagh and Down, where he lived at Narrow Water and Rosstrevor.<sup>479</sup> His chief associates in land dealings were his cousin Charles Poyntz and Marmaduke Whitechurch.<sup>480</sup> His second wife connected him to her influential administration family and to many other m.p.s, including John\* and William\* Ussher, Philips\* and the Loftus\* network, and members of the house of Lords, including Archbishop James Ussher. He had large families by his first two marriages and his sons John\* and Marcus\* were

478 Edward was beaten by James Hamilton for the county seat, but Hamilton died before the parliament met and Trevor replaced him as knight.

479 The town of Rosstrevor was named after Edward's second wife.

480 Charles was Toby Poyntz's\* father; for Whitechurch see note under Faithful Fortescue\*.



both m.p.s; a third son Edward was returned in a by-election for Carlingford in 1643.<sup>481</sup> Although he was well-integrated into the settler community, he retained his links with Wales and Shropshire; his third wife was a connection of Poyntz\*, and four of his children married Welsh people living in Wales but with Irish connections; his other children married into the Medhop, Hamilton\*, Fitton and Folliott families, bringing connections with King\*, Mainwaring\* and Wingfield\*, among others. On the outbreak of the rebellion he was imprisoned by the rebels; he was released from Narrow Water Castle in May 1642 but died in prison in Newry.

JOHN TREVOR (1602-1642-4<sup>482</sup>) Newtownards

e.s. Edward Trevor\* and Anne or Agnes, (d. 1610), da. Nicholas Ball, Landerstown, Meath; m. Margaret, da. John Jeffreys, Acton, Shropshire and Margaret (rem. Edward Trevor\*) , da. William Lloyd, Hatchdyn; ed. Inner Temple, 1620. M.P. Carlingford, 1634.

John's 1634 return was unsurprising, as both he and his father had been named burgesses in the town's new charter of 1619, when he was only 17 years old. He married his step-mother's daughter, Poyntz's\* cousin; Margaret Jeffreys brought him property in Wales and he shared responsibility for the management of the family estates there and in Ireland with his father. He held a lease of lands at Ballyclander near Downpatrick and in 1638 was granted the wardship of Nicholas Bagnal, another Shropshire and Newry connection. He clearly concentrated his interests in Denbeigh where he was a j.p., and his brother Marcus\* concentrated on the family's Irish estates. His property in Denbeigh and Shropshire was valued at £400 annually in 1649. He and his connections in Wales were active on the royalist side in the civil war and in September 1642 he was appointed a commissioner for array in Denbeigh, to raise money and troops for the king's army. He died in Wales.

---

481 Carlingford was a short sea-journey along Carlingford Lough from Newry, Narrow Water and Rosstrevor, and had formerly returned Whitechurch and John Trevor\*; both John\* and Edward\* Trevor had been included in the town's charter of 1619, and Edward jr.'s return was not, therefore, surprising.

482 The precise date of his death is unclear. R. Kinaston's deposition of 9 May 1642 refers to the losses of Margaret, widow of John Trevor Esq., *T.C.D. MS. 837*, f. 8v, but his appointment, five months later, in Denbeigh indicates that he was still alive at that date. He certainly died by 1644.



MARCUS (MARK) TREVOR (1619-1670) Downpatrick  
y.s. Edward Trevor\* and Rose (d. 1623), da. Archbishop Henry Usher; m. 1) 1633,  
Frances, (d. 1656), da. Marmaduke Whitechurch, Loughbrickland; 2) Ann, da.  
John Lewis, Anglesey, w. John Owens, Pembroke;  
ed. Inner Temple, 1634;  
Baron Trevor of Rostrevor, Viscount Dungannon of Tyrone, 1662.  
M.P. Down 1661.

Marcus was born in Brynkynault, Wales, the eldest son of his father's second marriage. Unlike his half-brother, John\*, his land interests (in Dundalk, Carlingford and county Down) were mainly concentrated in Ireland. Frances Whitechurch was the daughter of his father's close associate and a cousin of Poyntz\*, Ormond and and McCarthy's\* wife. He was a member of the Downpatrick garrison in October 1641 and raised a company there; he retained his Irish command despite moving to England and Wales. At the outbreak of the civil war in Britain, he fought for Charles as a major in a regiment of horse. He was colonel of horse with Capel's army in 1643,<sup>483</sup> fought in Wales under Prince Rupert and Lord Byron at Montgomery in September, Newbury in October 1644 and as colonel of a regiment at Marston Moore, where he was said to have wounded Cromwel. He was governor of Ruthin Castle in north Wales. In 1645 he transferred to the Prince of Wales's lifeguards; he surrendered at Truro. In 1646 he was one of the commissioners appointed to negotiate terms with Fairfax, to whom he surrendered at Oxford. He returned to Ireland as commander of a troop of horse raised by the parliamentary side. Monck appointed him governor of Carlingford in 1647, despite the disapproval of the committee of both houses, which regarded him as "*too affected to the king.*" Their suspicions were justified, as he transferred his loyalty to Ormond in 1648 and fought at Dublin and Lisnegarvey. After the surrender to the Cromwellian troop in April 1650, he and others who had supported Ormond were likely to lose their estates in Ireland and Wales, which in his case were valued at £500 annually, with £1,500 in 'personality'. He reached a *modus vivendi* with the new administration, however, and even acquired lands in Louth and Kildare. He was added to the list

---

483 At the same time, his Irish troop of 60 horse was sent to attend the army sent out of Scotland in July 1643. *N.L.I. MS. 2308*, p. 27.



of commissioners in Louth dealing with collecting the money for the assessment for Ireland in early 1659. After Cromwell's death he worked for the restoration, was classed as a '49 officer and commended for his loyalty to the crown. He was commissioner for the poll money ordnance in Down in 1660, and there and in Louth in the following year. He was appointed privy councillor, governor of Ulster, ranger of the Phoenix Park and master of the game. Between 1667 and 1670 he was governor of the Irish army.

Thomas Molyneux, Chancellor of the Exchequer; unm.; ed. Lincoln's Inns 1634.

The Ussher family was immensely influential in 17th. century Ireland, both because of Sir William Ussher's position as clerk of the council from 1597 and his large family's extensive marriage connections. Sir William's first wife was Archbishop Adam Loftus's daughter Isabella, through whom he was connected to the whole Loftus\* network, including O'Hara\*, St. George\*, Francis Hamilton\*, Gifford\*, Harpole, the Blayney\*, Crosby\*, Crofton\*, Moore\*, Parsons\*, Ware\*, Boyle\* and Coote\* families. Ussher's children's marriages reinforced these links and supplied others. His grandsons John and William sons of his deceased eldest son Arthur, were cousins of all these families, and nephews of Meredith\* and Paul Davys\*, and had close connections with Phillips\* and the Osbornes\*, Stewarts\* and Percevals.

Edward Lambey, Clerk of the Council; unm.; ed. Lincoln's Inns 1634.

JOHN USSHER (1612+-c1643), Limavady

3 s. Arthur Ussher and Judith, da. Sir Robert Newcomen and Catherine, da. Thomas Molyneux, Chancellor of the Exchequer; unm.; ed. Lincoln's Inns 1634.

Richard Newcomen, Clerk of the Council; unm.; ed. Lincoln's Inns 1634.

John received a patent for the office of chief chamberlain of the exchequer in November 1635 (presumably facilitated by his uncle Meredith's\* position as chancellor) and was joint clerk of the council of Munster with Carr\* from 1637. He was a captain in the new Army in 1640. He and his brother William\* bought lands from Ormond, Comerford\*, Rothe\* and Wemys\* in July 1641. He was granted lands formerly owned by Edward Brabazon in Wicklow. Brabazon disputed this and was still petitioning the English parliament for restoration in the 1650s.<sup>484</sup> His connections with the Phillips\* family which

484 Brabazon, *Humble petition*.



founded and controlled Limavady, explain his return. His aunt, Alice, Phillips's\* step-mother, was instrumental in the return of another nephew, Arthur Newcomen in 1634.<sup>485</sup>

WILLIAM USSHER (c1610-1671), Wicklow County

e.s. Arthur Ussher and Judith, da. Sir Robert Newcomen and Catherine, da. Thomas Molyneux, Chancellor of the Exchequer; m. 1) 1633, Elizabeth, (d. 1636), da. Sir William Parsons\* and Elizabeth, da. Ald. John Lany, Dublin and Katherine Bostock, Dublin; 2) 1643, Ursula, da. Capt. George St. Barbe, Sligo; ed. Lincoln's Inns, 1628; Kt. 1636.

M.P. Wicklow, 1634, Dublin County 1661; Convention Wicklow County.

William and his family had significant Wicklow connections: his grandfather and namesake was constable of Wicklow from 1604 and represented the borough in 1613 after a disputed election in which Arthur Ussher had been imposed on the town as its portreeve in a new charter.<sup>486</sup> His father-in-law and fellow knight in 1640 also had substantial property in Wicklow. As the eldest son of the Ussher family, he was heir to extensive property; he held lands in Dublin (including Lambay Island, Portrane and 60 acres at Taney, valued at £35 p.a.), Down, Roscommon and Wicklow, where he lived at Castle of Grange.<sup>487</sup> He also had land deals in Tyrone and with Ormond, Comerford\*, Rothe\* and Wemys\*, and leased lands from the Archbishop of Dublin, a transaction which was the subject of a bill discussed in the Commons in June 1640.<sup>488</sup> He does not appear to have held any crown office until his appointment as pronotary of the King's bench in 1644. His marriages provided him with another network of powerful links. Through Elizabeth Parsons he was Sir William's\* son-in-law, brother-in-law of Richard\* and William\*, Paul Davys\*, Hoey\* and Richard

---

485 Arthur was the son of Sir Beverly Newcomen, officer in the Irish navy, and m.p. for Kilbeggan in 1613 and Tralee in 1634, and Margaret, da. Sir William Ussher; four members of the Newcomen family sat in the 1634 parliament, but the death of Beverly and Arthur, drowned in Waterford Harbour in 1637, seems to have temporarily reduced their importance, and they were absent from the commons between 1640 and 1642. *Baronetage*, I, p. 254, McGrath, 1613. pp 62-3.

486 McGrath, 1613. pp 66-7; *Cal.S.P.Ire.*, 1611-14, p. 443.

487 Castle of Grange was burnt down by rebels some time before November 1643. *T.C.D. MS. 810*, ff 8v,225r.

488 *C.J. (I.)*, 1 - 3 June, 1640.



Osborne\*, and William Fenton's cousin.<sup>489</sup> He remained in Dublin in the 1650s, jointly guaranteeing with Paul Davys\* a bond of his cousin George Phillips at the Dublin Staple in May 1653. He and Davys\* were executors of their cousin Philip Perceval's will and he was involved in the land deals which formed part of a Southwell / Perceval marriage settlement in 1656, when letters to John Perceval were addressed to Ussher's house in Dublin. He was one of those responsible for raising the contributions for the assessments for Ireland in Dublin City and county for the final quarter of 1654 and in Wicklow County in the second half of 1657. He was a commissioner for the Poll Money Ordinance in Dublin city and county and Wicklow in 1660 and 1661. On the restoration he was appointed commissioner of excise (1661) and first appeals commissioner (1662).

PATRICK VYNNES (VEN, VEYNE, VINE) Fethard  
d. 1663+

The Vine family settled in the Ormond lordship before 1349 and a Thomas Vynn is recorded as holding 110 acres near Fethard in the *Civil Survey*. Patrick was a burgess of the town. Under an agreement with Cromwell, the burgesses of Fethard retained their property; he had inherited 10 acres near the town from his cousin James in 1650, and benefited from this unique accord. He also inherited a stone house in Fethard which he still possessed in 1663.

RANDOLPH (RALPH) WADDINGTON (1590-1654-74), Enniscorthy<sup>490</sup>  
m. \_\_\_\_\_; at least 1 s.

Waddington was an English settler, living at St. John's and on his farm at Milltown (Ballamullan) near Enniscorthy; he also had property interests in Queen's County. He was a j.p. for Wexford. Like many other Wexford planters, he had catholic leanings, and although identified as a protestant at the time of his election, on the outbreak of the rebellion, like Ashe\*, he attended Mass, and was described as "*a fallen protestant and a justice of the peace and captain of 100 rebels*".<sup>491</sup> His wife was apparently a local woman and a kinswoman of David

489 m.p. for Tallow in 1634, and a close connection of the Boyles\*.

490 Waddington resigned his seat in June 1641, and was replaced by Esmond\*.

491 *T.C.D. MS. 818*, f. 11v.



and Pierce Synott of Cranbrodies, but she and their children remained protestant and were drowned crossing to England in July 1642. He was host to Preston and his family when they arrived from the continent in late 1642. His eldest son entered Trinity College in 1639. He was still living in Wexford in 1654 when he was examined about events in Wexford in the 1640s and gave evidence against Esmond\*; he signed a bond at the Dublin Staple in February 1654, when his address was still given as St. John's. His will was proved in 1674.

HARDRESS WALLER (?1604-1666) Limerick County

e.s. George Waller,<sup>492</sup> Groombridge, Kent, and Mary, da. Richard Hardress; m. 1629, Elizabeth, da. and coh. Sir John Dowdall, Kilfinney, Limerick; Kt. 1629

M.P. Askeaton, 1634, Kerry, Limerick and Clare 1654, 1656 and 1659.<sup>493</sup>

Hardress was an officer and, with his cousin, Sir William Waller, later a prominent parliamentary commander, was part of St. Leger's\* regiment in the 1625 Cadiz expedition which was washed up on the Irish coast. He settled in Ireland on his marriage, which provided him with a substantial income from an estate at Castletown, Limerick (which he was able to augment by purchases and leases of land) and also linked him to the most substantial families in the area.<sup>494</sup> Elizabeth's sisters married Redmond Roche\* and members of the Piggott\*, Dowdall\* and Casey\* families; the latter linked him to John Fox, a member of a local old English family, and m.p. for Kilmallock in 1634. He worked with Perceval to secure the wardship of his niece, Ann Casey, and, more importantly, to keep her other uncle Fox from any influence which might have led to her being brought up a catholic. At least one of the indentures he signed concerning Ann Casey was witnessed by Richard Fitzgerald\* and Richard Osbourne\*. One of his daughters married the son of Sir William Fenton, a close relative of Lord Cork, and later William Petty; another married Henry Ingoldsby, governor of

---

492 Waller's father's estate was estimated to be worth £800 p.a. in 1614. *H.M.C. Salisbury*, XXII (1612-1668). p. 13.

493 He was also elected for Kildare and Wicklow in 1656.

494 Elizabeth was the granddaughter of Lady Southwell, a member of a settler family based at Rathkeale, Limerick, and she was formerly contracted to John Browne\*. The marriage agreement, apparently negotiated in London in 1629, specified that she was to have a jointure of £200 annually from lands in Kent. Waller's acquaintance with Cork apparently dates from their meetings in London around the time of the marriage. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II, pp 312,327,329.



Limerick, 1653-9. Fynnes Waller, his cousin, married Wentworth's Yorkshire neighbour, Sir John Jackson.<sup>495</sup> Like his neighbour and relative by marriage, Sir Richard Southwell, he was also connected to the family of William Lenthal, speaker of the English commons. Apart from his lands in Limerick, which included over 2,300 acres worth £585, he leased more than 450 acres in Tipperary, valued at £101 annually, from Ormond, and held a mortgage on a further 120 acres, worth £30 p.a., an estate which helps explain his 1634 return.<sup>496</sup> He mortgaged lands to Cork for £1,000 but his deposition claimed losses of land and goods worth Stg.£11,443, and an annual rental income of £800.<sup>497</sup> His wife claimed losses of £5,083 and gave her jointure as £590. In April 1641, with Lynch\* and others, he signed a petition of the inhabitants of Connaught, Clare, Tipperary and Limerick, concerning composition rents there. He was an active m.p. and a member of the committee which brought the Remonstrance to England in December 1640. His house at Castletown was robbed twice in January 1642 and surrendered that May, after a siege of 6 weeks; by that time he had joined St. Leger\* at Cork, and was commanding 300 musqueteers and two troops of horse as the President's lieutenant colonel at Ballincollogh. St. Leger's\* letters contain fulsome praise of him, and he was made a member of the Munster council of war. Two months later he was Inchiquin's agent to solicit aid for the Munster army from the Irish commissioners; that winter, with Hill\*, Montgomery\* and Mervyn\*, he petitioned Charles for support for the army and he submitted a petition to the English house of lords for his arrears of pay and proposals for the relief of Ireland. His military career developed in both Ireland and England. He was a military commander in Munster in February 1644, governor of Cork in Inchiquin's absence and agent for the Munster protestants in England; by this time Ormond was describing him and Fenton as "roundheads". He remained in England, becoming one of Cromwell's associates and an officer of the New Model Army in 1645, while apparently retaining his commission in the Irish army; that December he was at Culhampton, when the prospect of his becoming a member of the English parliament was mooted. He was still in England in April 1646, when he was reported to be imprisoned in Plymouth, but

---

495 Possibly a relative of Jackson\*.

496 This may however, also be due to Boyle's influence, as he was extending his influence into that part of the country, and was regarded by Wentworth as having the nomination of the seat. Waller was collecting Boyle's rents in 1634, which may indicate a growing business, as well as a personal, relationship. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., IV, pp 13,38,68,80,124-5,143,145,152, 159,188.

497 His defence of his conduct, drawn up in October 1660, claimed an Irish estate of £1,500 p.a. in 1641. This may have included his wife's jointure. *B.L. MS. Eg. 2549*, f. 93.



by the following August he was back with his regiment in Cork, where, with Stoughton\*, Kingsmill\*, Bannister\*, Travers\* and others, he signed a letter of support for Inchiquin.

In the following March he was commanding a regiment in Munster, but in July he was in Reading negotiating the relief of Ireland with lords Nottingham and Wharton as commissioner of the army. Three months later Fairfax appointed him to a committee of 12 officers, including Cromwell and Ireton, to handle all matters concerning the army in Britain. He participated in the Putney debates and presented the *Remonstrance of the Army* to the parliamentary commissioners. In April 1648 he was appointed governor of Plymouth, although the town initially refused to admit him; around the same time, his attempts to quarter 600 parliamentary troops in Exeter provoked disquiet and he routed a party of insurgents in Cornwall, but was himself repulsed from Pendennis by Fortescue\*. In May he succeeded Cromwell in command and was active in Pride's Purge in December 1648. He was one of the army's representatives at Charles's trial and, with others, set the execution date. In May 1649 he was created M.A. by Oxford University. In November he was in Cork, but was prominent as an army man in controlling the south-west of England in 1649-50 and returned to Ireland in 1650. In the 1650s he was major-general of foot in Ireland and signed the articles of agreement at Limerick in April 1652. He was a commissioner for the administration of justice which sat at Dublin and Kilkenny. In the following year, Parliament granted him lands in recognition of his services. He was commissioner for raising the assessments for Ireland for the last quarter of 1654 in counties Kilkenny, Cork, Limerick, Clare and Dublin City and County, and in the capital in the second half of 1657. In that year, he, Rawdon\* and Coote\* collectively decided on debentures for arrears contracted before 1649. As a regicide and a committed supporter of the Commonwealth, he worked against the restoration, objecting to the attempt to bring back the secluded members of the Long Parliament. He staged a coup to take command of the army. He was taken prisoner by Coote\* and others in Dublin in February 1660 and was sent to England, but escaped to Jersey and France. On his return he was imprisoned, attainted as a regicide and his lands were forfeit. His petition for pardon claimed that he engaged in the war in England only after failing to relieve Ireland and being without subsistence for his



family, that he silenced calls to hurt the king during the Putney Debates; that his name was included in the trial without his knowledge, and that he went along with the trial because he could not prevent it, and that he had always regretted it. He furthermore asserted that he had kept Ireland quiet, and the army from bloodshed and obeyed all orders from England, and besides, had sought to make no-one else king.<sup>498</sup> He died in prison.

The Walsh (Welsh) family was descended from Philip the Welshman who came to Ireland in the 1170s with Robert FitzStephen. Philip's son Howell married a daughter of Raymond le Gros, and their estates in Waterford and Kilkenny were still in their descendants' hands in the 17th. century. Sir Patrick and Nicholas Walsh represented Waterford City in 1585, and Jacob Walsh in 1634, when James (Jacob) Walsh was Thomastown's burgess.

JOHN WALSH (1609-10-1670+)            Waterford  
e.s. David Walsh, Rathronan,<sup>499</sup> Tipperary; m. \_\_\_\_\_;  
ed. Grey's Inns, 1631; King's Inns, 1635;  
Kt. 1649.

John was a merchant in Waterford and a lawyer. He acted in a case involving Nicholas Whyte's\* father and Lord Cork in 1636.<sup>500</sup> He held lands in Tipperary and Kilkenny from Ormond at an annual rent of £32<sup>501</sup> and, with Waller\*, Robuck Lynch\*, Geoffrey Browne\* and others, signed the petition of the inhabitants of Connaught, Clare, Tipperary and Limerick concerning composition rents. He apparently also lived at Callan, as the deposition of Ambrose Aungier, chancellor of St. Patrick's Cathedral, claimed losses of £120 in household goods which he confided to his care at his dwelling there.<sup>502</sup> He had a

---

498     *B.L. MS. Eg. 2549*, f. 93.

499     John's father and brother-in-law, Thomas Prendergast, leased Rathronan parsonage from Boyle from November 1622. *Lismore Papers*, 1st. ser., II, pp 63,214. The depositions record the activities of a Captain Walsh, variously described as John or James, son and heir of David Walsh, as a rebel in 1642. *T.C.D. MSS 820*, ff 71r-2v,147r,154v; 821, f. 56r.

500     He was also advising Cork in January 1631, which suggests that he attended another legal establishment before Gray's Inns. *N.L.I. MS. 13,237* (11). A John Walsh was admitted to the Inner Temple in 1612, but this is improbably early for this man.

501     He may still have held those lands in 1644, as he sent Stg.£500, presumably rent, or another debt, to Ormond, *via* Comerford\*, in March of that year. *N.L.I. MS. 2308*, p. 357.

502     *T.C.D. MS. 809*, f. 291.



dispute with Davils\* in 1640. He was a member of the committee which brought the remonstrance to England in December 1640, and gave evidence about the tobacco monopoly at Strafford's trial. He was arranging the transport of soldiers to Spain in 1641. An active supporter of the Confederation, he signed the petition to Charles in October 1642 and that to Ormond in July 1643. With Sir Robert Talbot and Gormanston, he was an agent to meet Ormond at Trim, Castlemartin and Gigginstown, to negotiate the cessation, which he signed, in 1643. He negotiated with Inchiquin in the following year and at Dungarvan in 1648 and later acted with Geoffrey Browne\*. In 1644 he was elected to represent Clonmel in the General Assembly at Waterford,<sup>503</sup> and was a member of the fourth Supreme Council and the 1647 General Assembly. He was a member of the 1648 Munster provincial council - he was not elected, but acted as a substitute for his fellow Ormondist, Fennell, although both are included in a list of the 10th. Supreme Council (September 1648-January 1649). He was a crier of the Confederate Courts in 1646 and a judge by the following year. In February 1646 he brought letters to Kilkenny from Ormond and in October 1648 he met Taaffe\* and Sir Robert Talbot at Ballinakill to discuss the reorganisation of the army. He was mayor of Waterford in 1649, when Ormond knighted him. He attended Ormond in 1650 (he brought the declaration of the General Assembly at Loughrea to Ormond), when his father, who was in his eighties, and his sisters, were murdered on the Clonmel-Waterford road by Sir Anthony Morgan. His family was prominent in the defence of Clonmel and his wife died in the 1651 siege of Limerick. In February 1654 he was examined about Darcy's\* activities in Kilkenny in 1646, but he was living in Amsterdam later that year. He was living in Tipperary in 1660 and as John Walsh of Ballibeahan was working as Ormond's seneschal from 1660 to at least 1670.

WALTER WALSH (1601-c1652), Kilkenny County

e.s. Robert Walsh, (d. by 1606-7), Ballinegowne, and Eleanor, da. Sir John FitzEdmund Fitzgerald; m. 1625, Magdalen, da. Sir John Sheffield and Grizell, da. Sir Edmund Anderson, chief justice of the common pleas in England.

<sup>503</sup> *N.L.I. MS. 19171*, ff 346,350; his fellow members were Michael Walsh and Geoffrey Baron, m.p. for Clonmel in 1634. A. Clarke, '28 November 1634: a detail of Strafford's administration.' *J.R.S.A.I.*, xciii, (1963), pp 161-167.



Walter, also known as Walsh of the Mountain, was head of the senior branch of the Walshes, based at Castle Hoyle (Castlehowell) in Kilkenny and a grandson of the first Lord Mountgarrett. The Walshes were next to the Butlers\* and Graces in local importance. The Mountgarrett link connected him to Bellings\*, Piers Butler\* and others, and he was a cousin of Lord Upper Ossory and Maurice Eustace\*; one of Walter's brothers was a noted Gaelic poet. He became the ward of the catholic Michael Cowley in 1615 and succeeded his grandfather and namesake in the lands of Castlehoyle (over 3,200 acres) and Wexford in 1619 (he received livery of the estates in 1623). He was excluded from the 1624-5 Kilkenny commission of the peace, possibly because he was absent in England, arranging his marriage. Through his wife, he acquired lands in England and a connection with Lionel Cranfield, whose daughter married Magdalen's brother. As a prominent member of the Kilkenny gentry and a family connection, he carried a banner at the funeral of the Countess of Ormond in 1633. He was admitted a freeman of Waterford in 1637. He joined the new Irish army in 1640<sup>504</sup> and was a captain in Lord Castleconnell's regiment in the Confederate army in 1642 - he took part in Castlehaven's expedition to Ulster in 1644 - and accepted the cess in 1643, the 1646 peace, the Oath of Association in 1648 and contributed to Ormond's costs. He is believed to have died at New Ross c1652, the year he surrendered to Waller\*. His lands were declared forfeit but restored to his son. He was close to Ormond, being connected through his own family and through his wife: Magdalen's grandfather was Lady Ormond's guardian and her brother witnessed the Ormonds' marriage settlement. He is described as Walter Ormond's servant in a 1633 indenture.

CHRISTOPHER WANDESFORD (1592-1640) Kildare

e. s. George Wandesford, Kirklington, Yorkshire, and Catherine, da. Ralph Hansby; he rem. Mary, da. Robert Pamplyn, London; m. 1) \_\_\_\_\_, da. William Ramsden, Longley, Yorkshire; 2), 1614, Alice, da. Sir Hewitt Osborne, Kiveton, Yorkshire;  
ed. Clare College, Oxford, (1607); Grey's Inns, (1612);

504 He was owed £9 2/- for his service in the army for one year to Easter 1641. *N.L.I. MS. 2306*, p. 295.



bur. Christ Church, Dublin.

M.P. Aldborough (1621, 1624), Richmond (1624), Thirsk (1628).<sup>505</sup>

Christopher was George's\* father, John's\* brother and William's\* half-brother; he later became Maude's\* father-in-law. A cousin and close friend of Wentworth and Radcliffe\* since their schooldays, he preceded the new Lord Deputy to Ireland in January 1633 with the office of master of the rolls and was made a privy councillor. He had a long history of working with Strafford, having acted as his vice-president in the Council of the North. Like Wentworth, he was associated with the anti-Buckingham faction in the 1620s and proposed the Remonstrance. He was the lord deputy's right hand man; their personal closeness is shown by Strafford's being godfather to Christopher's eldest son and their daughters' being educated together. In 1635 he bought lands at Gigginstown, Naas, from Lord Kildare, which he resold to Wentworth and he made arrangements for alterations to Kildare Castle. Two years later he obtained the Brennans' lands at Castlecomber and Idough, Kilkenny for over £20,000, and this became his principal Irish estate, consisting of over 10,000 acres. John Davies's deposition on behalf of the Wandesfords claimed losses to an estate of £7,000, including leases, goods and debts in Kilkenny, Kildare, Cavan and Fermanagh.<sup>506</sup> He received power of attorney to act for Ormond in land deals with the Cootes\* and Lucas Dillon\* in 1635-6. He became a close friend of Ormond during his time in Ireland, when he was his neighbour in Kilkenny and his colleague on the privy council.<sup>507</sup> In Wentworth's absence, he was appointed lord deputy but was unable to maintain the power of the administration and prorogued parliament in November 1640. His death in the following month was ascribed to distress at Wentworth's misfortunes. He owed his position in Ireland to Wentworth but his English connections, the Hewitts and Osbornes, were important Yorkshire families with influence in the Council of the North and London merchant circles, including the Levant Company. This link explains John Wandesford's\* appointment in Aleppo. Their step-mother's family, the Pamplins, were also wealthy London merchants.

<sup>505</sup> He stood unsuccessfully for Richmond in 1627, when he was beaten by James Howell, secretary to Lord Scrope, then president of the North. The positions of influence were reversed in 1639, when Howell came to Ireland to solicit advancement from Wentworth. J. Howell, *Espistolae hovelianae*. (London, 1645). pp 199-201.

<sup>506</sup> John Davies's deposition for Wandesford, 2 April 1642. *T.C.D. MS. 812*, ff 195-6.

<sup>507</sup> The correspondence between Wandesford and Ormond traces their increasing business and personal friendship. *N.L.I. MSS 2304*, pp 285-302, 319, 329; 2305, passim.



GEORGE WANDESFORD, (1623-1651) Clogher

e.s.s. Christopher Wandesford\* and Alice, da. Hewit Osborne, Kiveton, Yorkshire; unnm.

ed. Trinity College, Dublin, 1638.

George's election was due to his father's position. His godfathers were Strafford and Sir George Calvert. He was John\* and William\* Wandesfords' nephew, and presumably related also to the m.p. for Thomastown, and cousin of the Radcliffes\* and Wentworth\*; he later became Maude's\* brother-in-law. Like the rest of his family, he left Ireland after his father's death in December 1640 and spent much of the rest of his life in England. He was drowned in the Swale in March 1651.

JOHN WANDESFORD (1593-1653-60?) Innistiogue

2 s. George Wandesford, Kirklington, Yorkshire, and Catherine, da. Ralph Hansby; he rem. Mary, da. Robert Pamplyn, London; unnm.; o.s.p.;

ed. Grey's Inns, 1613, Oxford, D.C.L., 1642;

M.P. Richmond, 1624, Hythe (Short Parliament).

Despite his election, there is no evidence that John attended the Parliament, or, indeed, that he ever came to Ireland. He was Christopher's\* brother, William's\* half-brother and George's\* uncle; he was presumably related to the burgess for Thomastown. He spent much of his time out of England, serving as consul for the English merchants at Aleppo between 1629 and 1639.<sup>508</sup> The terms of his appointment suggest that, despite his legal education, he was a merchant; his position with the Levant Company was presumably due to the influence of the Osbornes, his sister-in-law's family, who were founder members

---

508 Aleppo became an important centre for the trade in spices, silks, glass, cotton and dried fruits after the decline of importance of Venice as a trading centre in the sixteenth century, and the English colony in Aleppo was large enough to warrant a full-time consul. John's appointment by the Levant Company was supported by a letter of introduction to the Sultan from Charles. *B.L. MS. Add. 36,271A*; for the history of the Levant Company, and John's activities as consul, see M. Epstein, *The English Levant Company: its foundation and its history to 1640*. (London, 1908), pp 9,59-63,98, 215-6; and R.C. Temple (ed.), *The Travels of Peter Munby in Europe and Asia, 1608-1667*. (Cambridge, 1907). I, pp 158-65.



of the Company and continued to be involved in its operations. This appointment also provided another influential contact for him, through Peter Wyche, who was ambassador to the Ottoman Empire during his time in Aleppo: he returned to England around the time that Wyche also returned (in 1639 to become comptroller of the royal household). He was active on the royalist side throughout the 1640s, taking part in the engagement at Oxford, lending money for the king's service in 1647, bringing letters from Cottington to the Prince of Wales in September 1648 and buying powder in Amsterdam for the royalists in the following November. He was friendly with other exiled royalists from 1649 and lived on the continent under the name Anthony Browne, first in Venice, and, by November 1652, in Paris, where he was close to Ormond. He is reported to have been plotting to oust Hyde in July 1653. In 1660 William\* claimed debts due to him from the crown, citing John's 14 years' exile as the cause of much of his poverty. He was a close friend of the Hon. Charles Seymour.

#### MICHAEL WANDESFORD

Thomastown

This m.p. is variously listed as Michael or Nicholas Wandesford. Christopher's\* brother Michael was a clergyman who died in 1639 and there is no record of a Nicholas in the family papers. His precise identity remains obscure.

#### WILLIAM WANDESFORD (1605-1690), Lifford / Ballinakill<sup>509</sup>

y.s. Sir George Wandesford, Kirkington, Yorkshire, and Mary Pamplyn; m. 1632, Rebecca, da. Wilson Reade, Canterbury.

William was Christopher\* and John's\* half-brother, and George's\* uncle. The Pamplyns were wealthy London merchants and there was a double Pamplyn / Wandesford connection, as Mary's sister married Sir George's brother. William was a woollen draper in London, where he served his apprenticeship; his London lodgings were used for transmitting letters between Thomas Wentworth and Christopher Wandesford\* in 1627. With his mother, he

---

<sup>509</sup> Both of William's returns were presumably due to official influence, and he opted to represent Lifford; it is possible, however, that he did have some connections with Ballinakill, as he is reported to have distrained and impounded cattle in Queen's County in 1641-2.



received a grant of lands in Hampshire in 1628. He received an annuity of £20 from Christopher\* in 1637 but was clearly not close to his half-brothers until his arrival in Ireland, through Drogheda, in 1638, when he stayed in the Dublin residence of Wentworth's protege and fellow Yorkshireman, Dr. Margetson, dean of Derry. Relations improved and he was executor of Christopher's will in 1640, under which he received £30 *per annum*. An undated letter to Dr. Hall affirms his adherence to Wentworth. He held a mortgage of £200 on Maude's\* Yorkshire property before 1639. He also received a legacy of £20 for plate under the will of a cousin, Sir Rowland Wandesford. He raised men for the Irish army in 1640-1 and was reported to be helping English protestants at Castlecomber in December 1641. He was with the king at Oxford but, in his statement on his compounding in April 1646, denied that he ever bore arms against the parliament. He was presumably the Captain Wandesford of the garrisons of Athboy and Navan in 1646. In 1660 he claimed debts due to his brother John\* from the crown. He was made a gentleman pensioner by Charles II.

The Ware family settled in Ireland when Sir James Ware came from Staffordshire in 1588 as secretary to Lord Deputy Fitzwilliam. He held a number of crown positions, including auditor of accounts and was m.p. for Mallow in 1613. He married Mary Briden of Bury St. Edmunds, and two of their sons and a number of sons-in-law, sat in the 1634 and 1640 parliaments. The family interests were mainly in Dublin, Longford, and Leitrim.<sup>510</sup>

JAMES WARE (1594-1666)

Trinity College Dublin

e.s. Sir James Ware (d. 1632) and Mary Briden; m. 1620, Elizabeth, da. Ald. John Newman, Dublin;

ed. Trinity College Dublin, 1610, M.A. 1616; King's Inns, 1626; Bar;<sup>511</sup>  
Kt. 1629.

bur. St. Werburg's, Dublin.

M.P. Trinity College, 1634, 1661.<sup>512</sup> Convention, Johnstown.

<sup>510</sup> for Sir James, see McGrath, 1613. pp 73-4, and Jackson, *Intermarriage*, pp 22-3.

<sup>511</sup> This implies attendance at the Inns of Court, although his name does not appear in any of the published registers.

<sup>512</sup> He was nominated by Wentworth in 1634, who assured the College that James would serve without wages.



James's connections with the College were not merely as a graduate and m.p. - like his father he was tenant on part of the College's Munster property. He also held lands in Kildare and Dublin. His brother John\*, their brothers-in-law Dudley Loftus\* and Humphrey Reynolds\*, and nephew by marriage, Schout, were also m.p.s. Another brother-in-law, Emanuel Downing, was an active new English settler in the midlands. James was a close associate of Perceval, and godfather to one of his daughters. He became a friend of James Ussher while a student in Trinity College and shared the future archbishop's intellectual interests, becoming a noted antiquarian and scholar.<sup>513</sup> Despite his strong protestantism, he was an intimate friend of the franciscan, Thomas Strange.<sup>514</sup> As auditor general, he was a valued member of the administration, described by Wentworth as "*a very honest and able officer*;"<sup>515</sup> he was a commissioner for defective titles from 1636 and named by Strafford as a possible delegate to hear appeals from ecclesiastical courts in Ireland in 1638. He became a privy councillor in the following year. He was a commissioner to examine witnesses in the case between Lord Cork and the attorney general in the court of castle chamber in October 1635, was involved as an official in the lengthy Loftus\*-Gifford\* case and was a witness in Mountnorris's case against Strafford, and against Strafford at his trial. He stood security for government loans in 1641 and two years later assisted Ormond in negotiations with the Confederates at Kilcullen and Castlemartin. He took examinations concerning Monro's campaign in June 1644 and was one of the agents to Charles in Oxford in 1644-5, where he was created doctor of common laws. On their return journey the agents were captured and jettisoned their papers overboard; they were imprisoned in London for a year and released only when exchanged for other prisoners. He opposed the 1646 peace and was again sent to London in 1647, this time as a hostage for Dublin, after its surrender to parliamentary forces. He returned to Dublin, but was expelled in 1649 and went into exile in Normandy

---

513 His published works include *De Archiepiscoporum Casselliensium Tuamensium Vitae* (1626), *De Praesulibus Lageniae* (1628), *De Scriptoribus Hiberniae* (1639, dedicated to Wentworth; *De Hibernia et Antiquitatibus ejus disquisitiones* (1654), *Notae ad opuscula S. Patricio adscripta* (1656), *Rerum Hibernicarum Henrico Octavo, regnante annales* (1662), *Annotationes ad epistolas duas, etc., Bedae* (1664), *Notae ad dialogum Egberti, archiepiscopi Eboracensis, de institutione ecclesiastica* (1664) and *De Praesulibus Hiberniae commentarius* (1665).

514 Thomas Strange to Thomas Wadding, 5 August 1628 and 30 May 1631. I.M.C., *Wadding Papers*, pp 269,524.

515 Knowler, p. 191.



and Paris, but was able to settle in London and returned to Dublin under the Commonwealth. He was not involved in the general administration of Ireland and does not appear in the lists of those administering justice or collecting the assessments for Ireland, although, with Maurice Eustace\* and Barnabas Bryan, he was a member of a committee planning a new college of the University of Dublin 1658-9. He lived in Castle Street, Dublin, on lands rented from St. Tulloch's Chapel, Oxmantown Parish, for 19s 8d. *per annum*. He was restored to the office of auditor in 1660 and made commissioner for the settlement of Ireland in 1661, and for appeals in the following year.

JOHN WARE (1595+-1649)

Johnstown

2 s. Sir James Ware (d. 1632) and Mary Briden; m. Elizabeth, da. Sir Henry Piers, and Jane, da. Archbishop Thomas Jones and Margaret Purdon; M.P. Johnstown, 1634.

Johnstown was a Ware borough, the family having acquired lands in Longford before its incorporation in 1628, when his father was one of the original burgesses. Sir James was a member of the 1624-5 Longford commission of the peace and commissioner to raise money there for the army two years later. These connections explain John's returns for the borough and James's\* seat in the Convention. He was James's\* brother and his wife connected him to the Jones\* and Loftus\* families.<sup>516</sup> He was a brother-in-law of Dudley Loftus\* (with whom he had land deals in Meath in 1629), Schout and Humphrey Reynolds\*. Another brother-in-law, Emanuel Downing, was granted lands in the Longford and Leitrim plantations. John was included in his father's 1610 re-grant of the office of auditor of foreign accounts and was trained to succeed to that office from at least 1624. He should not be confused with the John Ware of Moylogh, Meath, who was indicted for rebellion in March 1642.

JOHN WARREN (d. 1647-66)

Kilbeggan

s. Thomas Warren, Cullduff and Lucy, da. Nicholas Gaynor, Blackcastle, Co. Westmeath; m. Mary, da. Richard Long; 5 s.

---

<sup>516</sup> John's father-in-law was a former secretary of lord deputy Chichester, who later settled in Cavan. He was m.p. for Baltimore in 1613. McGrath, 1613. p. 74.



John Warren lived at Cullduff, Dublin. In 1633 he leased lands in Dublin from the Bellings\* for 101 years and his younger son William leased other lands there from Lord Inchiquin in 1620. He may have been the Dublin tallow-chandler, who will was proved in 1666, or the tailor who was buried in St. John's, Dublin, in November of that year.<sup>517</sup> His mother provided his Westmeath connections: Walter Dowdall, presumably of Portlemon, Westmeath, lodged a complaint against him in the Commons in June 1640, and the deposition of Philip Taylor of Roscommon, a connection of the Jephsons, claimed debts from diverse protestants, including a Mr. Willson of Kilbeggan, and a John Warren.<sup>518</sup> He sat on at least two committees in the House, both nominated in November 1640, but was clearly no longer a member by 9 April 1647, when the Commons ordered a writ for his replacement. He was presumably the John Warren who was a commissioner to raise the assessments for Ireland for the last quarter of 1654 in King's County.

PATRICK WEMYS (WEEMES, WEAMES) Gowran

s. \_\_\_\_\_ Wemys,<sup>519</sup> Scotland, and Elizabeth Preston (who also m. \_\_\_\_\_ Christy of Scotland); m. Mary, da. Jonah Wheeler, Bishop of Ossory; Kt. 1641;

d. 1661; bur. St. Audeon's, Dublin.

Convention, Kilkenny County, M.P. Knocktopher, 1661.

Wemys was a Scotsman, a cousin of Elizabeth Preston, Lady Ormond, and a very close associate of her husband from the 1620s, when both men lived in London; he was credited with having introduced the couple and, with Smyth\*, witnessed their marriage settlement. He came to Ireland with Ormond (Walter Ormond granted him lands at Danesfort and Bennettsbridge in 1629, and he was a commissioner to sell and lease lands for Elizabeth Preston; William

<sup>517</sup> This may have been the man of that name who was living in St. John's Lane in February 1622, when he was cessed at 4s. *St. John's Parish Register*, p. 141; *St. Michan's Parish register* notes the burial in September 1664 of Elizabeth White, wife of John Warren. pp 61,92.

<sup>518</sup> Deposition of Philip Taylor, 7 March 1643. *T.C.D. MS. 830*, f. 8r.

<sup>519</sup> Patrick's father's name is unknown; the identity of his mother is taken from *H.M.C. Ormond*, N.S., II, p. 355; Sir W. Frazer, *Memorials of the family of Wemyss of Wemyss*. 3 vols., (Edinburgh, 1888) includes information on many Patricks, but none who could be identified with this m.p., nor any who married Elizabeth Preston. Douglas, *Peerage of Scotland*, I, pp 413-7, (Dingwall) provides no clues to this mystery.



Smyth\* and Comerford\* were witnesses to the deed). They had many land deals in Kilkenny, Tipperary and Carlow, and he was a frequent party to or witness of Ormond's deeds. He was made a freeman of Waterford in 1633 and was a member of the 1634 Kilkenny commission of the peace and sheriff from 1631-5, which explains his absence from the 1634 parliament. He lived at Danesfort. His wife provided other local connections; through her he was connected to Archbishop Barlow of Tuam, Francis Hamilton\* and the judge, James Donnellan. He is also described as Maule's\* cousin and thus linked to Crowe\*. His son Henry married George Blundell's\* daughter Elizabeth. He went to Scotland in 1639, acting as messenger between Ormond and Charles, and was Ormond's lieutenant in 1640, although he also held the rank of captain in the new Irish army.<sup>520</sup> He returned from Edinburgh in November 1641 and fought at Julianstown, commanding 50 of Ormond's troops, and at Mellifont and Drogheda in 1641-2. He commanded Ormond's troops at Kilrush in 1642, when his horse was shot from under him. In the following year he acted as messenger to bring Ormond the King's letter authorising him to negotiate a cessation with the Confederates and he fought with Birrone\* and Borlace\* at Portlester. His foot company, still part of Ormond's regiment, was quartered in High Street, Dublin, between October and December 1643 at least. In December 1644 and January 1645 he was involved with Henry Moore's\* mother and others in a plot to capture Drogheda and hand it over to the Scots, for which he was imprisoned; it is at this time that he seems to have had a break with Ormond. He wrote to King\* and Francis Hamilton\* from prison, appealing for their help and indicating that he had Charles's support for his actions; in letters to his cousin Col. Wemys in London and Major Crawford he stressed his Scottish origins, which he blamed for his victimisation.<sup>521</sup> By August 1645 it was reported that "*Sir P.W. is out upon bond to procure Sir Henry Tichbourne within 3 months to be exchanged for him*",<sup>522</sup> and he travelled from Dublin to Belfast, receiving praise from King\* for his activities in Ireland.<sup>523</sup> In August 1646 he was with his regiment in Ulster, where, with Montgomery\*, he received saddles from John Davies\*; during the same month he received an order to raise and transport a troop of

---

520 N.L.I. MS. 2306, p. 295 notes that he was owed £25 for 6 months wages as captain at Easter 1641.

521 \_\_\_\_\_, *A Declaration set forth by the Lord Lieutenant and councill ...* (Dublin, 1645), pp 6-8.

522 N.L.I. MS. 2541, f. 143; Carr\* to Cadogan\*, 28 August 1645.

523 This, and his other activities suggests that he was motivated by a strong presbyterianism.



horses from England to Ireland for parliamentary service, and a commission as captain of the troop. Five months later he was in Belfast and in the following year was colonel of a regiment of horse in Ireland, where he received a letter from Sterling soliciting support for a remonstrance from the Irish army to the Westminster Parliament; with Phillips\* and the Hamiltons\* and Montgomeries\* he was stationed with his troops in Ulster in May 1647. He fought on the parliamentary side at Dunganstown. In March 1651 he was in Kilkenny, where he had contact with the imprisoned Hugh Montgomery\*. He remained in Ireland during the 1650s, giving evidence on behalf of Thomas Arthur in 1652, witnessing a deed for Francis Bolton of Queen's County in April 1654 and certifying George Peppard's good conduct in July 1655. He was a commissioner to raise the assessments for Ireland for the last quarter of 1654 and second half of 1657 in Kilkenny, where he was an alderman. He was commissioner for the poll money ordnance in Kilkenny in 1660-1. He held no military commission in the 1650s, but regained his command on the restoration and held it at his death.

PHILIP WENMAN (1610-1686), Belfast

2 s. Richard, first Lord Wenman of Kilmainham and Tuam, and Agnes, da. Sir George Fermor, Northants.; m. 1643+, Elizabeth, da. Henry O'Brien, Lord Thomond, and Mary, da. Lord Brereton of Leighlin; w. Lord Gerard of Gerard's Bromley; o.s.p.m.;

3rd. Viscount Wenman of Kilmainham and Tuam, 1665.

A soldier who served in the Palatinate and was recommended for service in Ireland in 1625 by the Prince of Bohemia, Philip succeeded his uncle Sir Thomas Wenman<sup>524</sup> as governor of the fort at Cork and was captain of a foot company in 1638. In the following year he was involved at Carlisle in the first Bishops' War and held the rank of lieutenant colonel in St. Leger's\* regiment in 1640, at a daily salary of 15/-. He saw service with Tichbourne and Borlace\* at Drogheda in November 1641 and Dundalk in the following March. By April 1642 he was a lieutenant colonel in Lord Moore's regiment, and his company was mustered that December. He still had a company in 1646 and was in Reading in August of that year. He lost his command in 1649 and petitioned for restoration in 1661. He was arrested in Liverpool in 1651, committed to the Tower for

---

524 m.p. Mallow, 1634.



treason between that May and September, and then released on bail of £2,000. His estate was seized in that year and he wrote from Ashton, Lancashire, to petition for its restoration, in his wife's right. His marriage connected him with the O'Briens\*, St. Legers\* and Ogle\* and he also had family links with Birrone\* through the Delawares. Almost all of his Irish connections were with Munster and his personal relations developed after this parliament. His election was somewhat surprising, as his links with Belfast were tenuous - his sister-in-law was the daughter of Sir Edward Villiers, former President of Munster, and niece by marriage of the Duchess of Buckingham, wife of the Earl of Antrim. Like Gethings\* and William Smyth\*, he was admitted a freeman on 4 June 1641 after his election as m.p. He first appears as a member of a parliamentary committee on 21 June 1641.

GEORGE WENTWORTH (1609-1666?), Kildare

y.s. Sir William Wentworth, Wentworth Woodhouse, Yorkshire, and Anne, da. Sir Robert Atkinson, Stowell, Gloucestershire; m. 1636, Anne, da. Sir Francis Rushe and Lady Jephson;

ed. Oxford, 1626; Inner Temple; King's Inns, 1640;

Kt. 1633.

M.P. Bandon, 1634, Pontefract (Short and Long Parliaments).<sup>525</sup>

George was close to his brother, for whom he acted as confidential messenger, and he came to Dublin to prepare accommodation and other matters for Thomas before his arrival as lord deputy. Strafford promoted his interests, knighting him and making him a privy councillor in 1640. He was made a freeman of Waterford in 1636. The Wentworths were connected to the Wandesfords\*, Radcliffes\* and Whartons\* and his marriage to Robert Loftus's\* sister-in-law linked him to Gifford\* and the Loftuses\*, St. Georges\* and Dillons\*. His connections with Kildare were through his brother's purchase of lands at Gigginstown, near Naas. He was a soldier and a member of the 1635 council of war which court martialled Mountnorris. He was serjeant major of the Lord General's regiment in 1640 and provost-marshal of Leinster 1640-7; he was stationed in Meath in 1641 and fought with Harman\* at Tipper and with Coote\*

---

<sup>525</sup> He was nominated for Bandon by his brother, who was also responsible for Pontefract's restoration as a parliamentary borough.



and Harman\* at Kilrush in 1642. In February 1642 he successfully resisted an attempt in the English Commons to deprive him of his regiment in Ireland and three months later took depositions in Kildare. His regiment was still based in Ireland in 1647. A deposition made on his behalf in May 1643 listed losses of £2,956 2/-, including horses, damage to his houses, including his property at Moyglare, Meath, and arrears of rent; his lands were estimated to have an annual value of £486 11/-. This deposition may not have included his property at Dunsink, County Dublin. His estate was sequestered in 1649, for non-payment of his assessment, although he was discharged that December, in recognition of his heavy debts. He signed the Yorkshire engagement in the following year. He returned to Ireland in July 1654, although he was back in London two years later, when he intervened on behalf of Thomas Edmunds, a fellow Yorkshireman and former secretary to Strafford, with the Percevals, who owed Edmunds money.<sup>526</sup> He was restored to the privy council in 1660 and was a commissioner for the Poll Money Ordinance in Meath in the following year. He purchased an estate worth £60 p.a. in Upper Cudworth, Nottinghamshire.

THOMAS WHARTON (1614-5-1684) Callan

2 s. Sir Thomas Wharton (d. 1622) and Lady Philadelphia Cary, da. Lord Monmouth; m. 1) 1645, Lady Mary Cary, da. Lord Devon; 2) Jane (1639-1714), da. Rowland Dand, Mansfield, Nottinghamshire, and Margaret Saville, Copley, Yorkshire; w. Leonard Robinson, Kikby Ravensworth, Yorkshire; ed. Eton; Oxford, and Lincoln's Inns; Kt. of the Bath, 1626.

m.p. Richmond 1624,<sup>527</sup> Westmoreland, 1660.<sup>528</sup>

Wharton was elected through the influence of his close friend, Ormond, but he resigned the seat in March 1640 and returned to England. He had close Yorkshire connections: his father had been at school with Wentworth and Christopher Wandesford\* at Wells, and his sister-in-law, Elizabeth Wandesford, was a cousin of both men. He was created a knight of the Bath at the coronation of Charles, and three years later received a licence to travel abroad

<sup>526</sup> Edmunds was m.p. for Castlebar in 1634.

<sup>527</sup> Wharton's father controlled Richmond in the 1621 election.

<sup>528</sup> He canvassed voters for the Westmorland seat in 1681.



for three years with his brother, who was a volunteer with the Prince of Orange. He was in Scotland in summer 1635, by which time he was already a close friend of Lord Cork. He was a younger brother of Lord Philip Wharton (father-in-law of one of Robert Dillon's\* wives), who was active in the English upper house with Lord Saye and Sele, and later became leader of the republican faction in England and an active member of the committee on Irish affairs. Thomas was himself also to incline to republicanism, although he was returned for Westmoreland in the Restoration Parliament. His family background was deeply Calvinist. His first wife was also his cousin. He became a soldier, and treated for a company in 1636. In 1640 he commanded a regiment of the first brigade, was Ormond's lieutenant colonel of foot until 1644, bringing a letter from Charles to Ormond in December 1641, and fought with Ormond at the battles of Ross and Balibeg in 1643. In that year he was Ormond's envoy to the Westminster Parliament and was also employed by the Irish privy council to deliver letters to the Speaker of the English parliament and to request supplies for the Irish army. His foot company was quartered in Nicholas Street, Dublin in that October and December. In the following year he wrote to Ormond as a supporter of the parliament and was a messenger between Inchiquin and the Parliament; he was captain of a troop under Broghil between July 1644 and February 1647. Despite their political differences, his connection with Ormond continued and it was Ormond who insisted on his arrears being paid, because he had covered his Irish regiment's costs for one year out of his own pocket. In 1646-7 he was a parliamentary commissioner to treat with Ormond. In April 1655, Adam\* and Arthur\* Loftus signed a certificate supporting his claims of service in Ireland; later that year he appointed Somers\* and Bishop Henry Jones his attorneys to claim his arrears of pay, a convenient arrangement, as he was in London at the time. He also combined with Maurice Eustace\* to buy lands in County Down from Lord Clandeboy as his second wife's jointure. He was named as an adventurer in the 1657 *Act for the Settlement ... of Ireland*, and in that capacity acquired lands in Meath. He was active for the restoration and was rewarded with the reversion of the office of warden of the mint; he finally received the post twenty years later. He retained his earlier religious sympathies, however, as he recommended a Mr. Heardman, presumably a presbyterian, for promotion in the Irish church in 1660. He also purchased lands in Yorkshire and Westmoreland from 1662 and sold his captaincy for Stg.£500 in 1663.



Dr. DOMINIC WHYTE

Limerick

m. -1625, Christina, da. Thomas Bourke;

ed. ? \_\_\_\_, D.C.L.;

d. 1659+

M.P. Limerick 1634.

White was a merchant and alderman of Limerick and held lands worth £46 in the city and other property worth £64 in the county. He was fined 50s. in the court of Castle Chamber in 1618 for contempt. It is unclear from which institution he received his doctorate of civil laws. He was proclaimed a rebel when, with Creagh\* and other townsmen, he opposed Lord Castleconnell's entry to the city with his troops; he accused Castleconnell of stealing his goods, although the viscount denied this. Castleconnell was related to Dominic's wife. He played an active role in the Confederation, supported the 1646 peace and was a commissioner to administer the Confederate oath in 1648, the year in which he was mayor of Limerick. He was hostage for the treaty negotiations when Limerick surrendered to Ireton in October 1651 and, with Donnough O'Brien\* and Nicholas Haley, negotiated the articles of agreement. He was transplanted, but was still living in Limerick City in 1660. He should not be confused with Alderman Sir Dominick White, also of Limerick.

NICHOLAS WHITE (1586-1644)

Maryborough

e.s. Isaac White, Maryborough (d. 1598);

ed. Trinity College Dublin;

White was apparently not related to his namesake and the Catholic family of Leixlip. Isaac White lived in Maryborough from at least 1589, and Nicholas inherited his property there before 1608, when his wardship was granted to John\* Piggott's father. He was granted livery of his estates in January 1621, surprisingly late, as he would have reached his majority in the year in which his wardship was granted. His property was at Rathelege, Ballegoile, Collikepperroe and Clonea, and in the town of Maryborough itself. His house at



Balliboy (Balleboy), King's County, was a refuge for local protestants up to January 1644 at least. He died later that year.

NICHOLAS WHYTE

Kildare

e.s. Sir Nicholas Whyte (1586-1655), Leixlip, Kildare, and Ursula, da. Garrett Moore, first Lord Moore, and Mary, da. Sir Henry Colley, and Anne Loftus; she rem. Charles Wilmot, Lord Wilmot of Athlone; ????? m. Anne, da. John Cusack, Cussington, and Alison, da. William Weasley, Dangan, Meath; d. 31 December 1664; bur. Leixlip Church.

Nicholas's father was county member for Kildare in 1634, and his great-grandfather, also Sir Nicholas White, master of the Rolls, was m.p. for County Kilkenny in 1560 and, through his wife, provided links also with Brereton\* and Harpole\*. His great-aunt Mary married the 21st. Lord Howth. Through his mother, he was a cousin of Henry\* and John\* Moore and Chichester\* Fortescue, and Faithful Fortescue's\* nephew. The Moore\* connection also linked him to the Boyle\*, Blayney\*, King\*, Montgomery\* and Loftus\* families. His brother Arthur was elected m.p. for Swords in 1642, although his election was declared void two years later, his return suggests that he was a protestant. Like his father, he had close links with the new English community,<sup>529</sup> standing godfather to Philip Perceval's son, and forming part of the funeral procession of his cousin, Sir Thomas Moore, in 1623. His connections with the catholic community were also strong, however; his sisters Frances married Thomas, Lord Dillon of Costello-Gallen, (relative of James\* and Lucas\* Dillon), Eleanor married Aston, governor of Drogheda, and secondly, before 1651, Edward Butler, Lord Galmoy (father of Pierce\*), and Mary married Taaffe\*. If he married a Cusack\*, she would have provided a link with Hollywood\*. He was one of the many men who held the position of secretary to Falkland in 1625-6. He was presumably also the Captain White, Sir Nicholas's son, who, with Robert Stewart\*, was licensed to recruit men for Swedish service in 1637; if so he already had military experience in Germany. He was able to use that experience in his own country in the 1640s.

529 Sir Nicholas's close connections with the protestant establishment may be inferred from the fact that he was, with Sir Adam Loftus\* and others, overseer of the first Lord Caulfield's will in 1627. Lodge, *Peerage*, III, p 135; he also had some role in the execution of the will of Sir R. Osbaldstone, Sir George Radcliffe's\* cousin and brother-in-law, a piece of business which dragged on to at least November 1652, when both Nicholases, still described as of Leixlip, were signing bonds on the Dublin Staple with Sir G. Lowther, *B.L. MS. Add. 19843*, ff 127v-128v.



He was heir to his father's extensive property in Kildare (where he held nearly 5,000 acres, and lived in Leixlip Castle), Kilkenny, Tipperary, Wicklow, Carlow and Dublin. Sir Nicholas bought up lands in Tipperary very cheaply in 1634, speculating on the proposed plantation of Ormond. He signed bonds at the Dublin Staple, including one for £3,000 with Crowe\* and William Anderson in 1639 and another with Patrick Barnwall\* of Kilbrew in March 1641. He borrowed £350 from Perceval four months later. His father was one of the most able 'trimmers' of his generation, managing to remain on good terms with all sides of the Irish political community, even in the 1640s and 1650s. Both father and son submitted to the administration on the outbreak of the rebellion, when he commanded one of the companies raised to defend Kildare from the rebels, and was provided with arms by the administration for that purpose. On 2 December 1641, however, "*the whole company of Mr. Nicholas White ... did run away with their Armes to the Rebels*",<sup>530</sup> and shortly afterwards, as Sutton's\* company prepared to take Leixlip Castle, Sir Nicholas sent a message that: "*the servants of the said Sir Nicholas would shoote all them the said rebells onelie to make show that the castle of leslipp aforesaid was not delivered willinglie into their handes and by that meanes theire said Mr. [Nicholas] & Ladie [Whyte] might be free from blame, but withall told them the same rebells that they would be sure not to hurt any of them by theire so shooting.*"<sup>531</sup> This strategy was unsuccessful in the short term, and both father and son were imprisoned with Patrick Barnwall\*, the Dowdalls and others: "*Sir Nicholas White and his eldest son are for treason in the Castle, he is a great and leading man in the County of Kildare ... the offence, that he stood on his castle at Lexis (sic), where the poore English were Pillaged, and that some of the Pillage found there, his son at the Nase with the Rebels.*"<sup>532</sup> Nicholas jr. was soon released, writing to Perceval from Chester as "*good gossip*"<sup>533</sup> on 12 March; he was reported to be fighting at Naas in the following June. He appears to have supported the financial and administrative work of the Confederation, collecting contributions for its support in 1646-7. The Whytes feature in the lists of those whose lands were confiscated, but their credit remained high, as they were able to borrow £400 from Meredith\* through the

530 \_\_\_\_\_, *False and scandalous remonstrance of the inhumane and bloody rebells in Ireland ...* (London, 1644), p. 79.

531 Deposition of 21 March 1642, *T.C.D. MS. 813*, f. 19v; further information is provided in ff 39v-40.

532 R. Parsons, *Two famous battels fought in Ireland ...* (London, 1642), pp 2-3.

533 Whyte to Perceval, 12 March 1642. *B.L. MS. Add. 46926*, f. 42.



Dublin Staple in July 1654, and father and son still held lands in Dublin in 1655, which they tried to sell to pay some debts. He is listed in the 1660 census as living in Leixlip and was ordered to be restored to his father's estates in 1661. He lent Lord Antrim money after 1660. It is difficult to distinguish between the two Nicholas Whites in the Commons, but the records of nominations to committees imply that both attended the house regularly.

MAURICE WILLIAMS (?1588-1658), Askeaton

s. Lewis Williams, London; m. 1) 1638, Mary Gostick, London; 2) 1655, Jane Mawhood, Holborn;

ed. St. John's College, Oxford, 1616, B.A., 1619; Fellow, Oriel College, 1620; M.A. 1624; Padua, D.C.L., D. Med. (incorp. Oxford 1628);

Kt. 1638.

M.P. Askeaton, 1634.<sup>534</sup>

Williams had an impressive range of medical qualifications; he became a fellow of the College of Surgeons in 1633. He came to Ireland as Wentworth's physician and lived in Dublin Castle. His first marriage linked him even more closely to the fashionable medical world, as Mary Gostick's stepfather, Sir Matthew Lister, was successively physician to Anne of Denmark and to Charles. The marriage took place in London and he received a licence to import plate into Ireland at the same time. He was included in the army establishment of 1640 as a physician, at a salary of 6s. 8d. *per diem*. He made a proposal to the lord deputy to discover concealed grants and alienations for old established hospitals and leper houses.<sup>535</sup> He had some connections with Philip Perceval (who owed him £100 in 1641-2), and this may have facilitated his return, as he had no known connection with the borough; Perceval certainly arranged his replacement by Dobbins\* in 1641. He was still in Ireland in June 1641, when he guaranteed a bond of William Sacheverell of Fethard, Wexford, before the Dublin Staple, and the following month when he signed a Perceval deed. He returned to Oxford in 1642-3, and was there when Charles established his court in that city. He succeeded his step-father-in-law as the king's physician. He compounded in

<sup>534</sup> Wentworth requested Boyle to have him returned.

<sup>535</sup> *B.L. MS. Sl. 2681*, f. 268; this document is undated, but it was presumably submitted some time in the late 1630s. see also John Walley to Cork, 28 September 1639. *N.L.I. MS. 13,237* (24).



September 1646, taking the national covenant and paying a fine of £20. He was anatomy reader in Oxford in 1648 and censor of the College of Surgeons from then until at least 1655. He was still regarded as a delinquent in 1649, when his bonds for £500 were sequestered.

ANDREW WILLSON (-1618-1642-1656) Donegal

y.s. William Willson, Aghagalla, Donegal; m. February 1641, Elizabeth, da. Henry Dowcra and Anne Vaughan; o.s.p.; she rem. Henry Brook, Donegal; ed. Trinity College Dublin, sch. 1629;

Willson's father, a settler with 2,000 acres at Aghagalla (Willson's Fort) was a member of Donegal's 1624-5 commission of the peace. William's lands were inherited by his eldest son, Sir John, and his wife, Martha, daughter of Sir Thomas Butler\*; on John's death in 1636, his daughter Ann inherited the property and on her death, three years later, the lands passed to Andrew. He was described as of Kilinure, Donegal. Through his marriage, which took place in St. Michan's, Dublin, he strengthened his links with other Donegal settlers. He also had links with the Hamiltons, as his nephew Andrew Hamilton inherited his estate of 2,632 acres in Raphoe. He was a soldier in the 1640s, with the ranks of captain and lieutenant colonel, and Willsonsfort was one of the chief garrisons in Donegal, under William Stewart's\* overall command.

RICHARD WINGFIELD (1620-1644-5), Boyle

e.s. Sir Edward Wingfield, Powerscourt, Wicklow, and Anne, da. Lord Cromwell; m. May 1640, Elizabeth, (she rem. Edward, s. of Sir Edward Trevor\*), da. Henry Lord Folliott (d. 1622) and Anne, da. Sir William Strode (she rem. Robert Dillon\*); 1s., 1 da.;

The Wingfields had been involved in Ireland since the mid-sixteenth century, when the soldier Sir Jacques Wingfield came from England. Jacques's soldier nephew, Richard, also came to Ireland and was m.p. for Downpatrick in 1613;<sup>536</sup> when he died childless in 1634, his cousin Sir Edward inherited his lands in Wicklow, Wexford and Benburb. Richard inherited these and lands in

---

536 McGrath, 1613. p. 108.



England, and a house in Butter Lane, Dublin, in 1638. Sir Edward left a horse to George Wentworth\* in his will. Part of the lands at Powerscourt were rented to William Cooke for £200 annually. He was born in December 1620 and was therefore underage at the time of his election; his return is explained by his impending marriage to King's\* sister-in-law. He had strong links with other m.p.s, partly through the Foliotts, who linked him to Robert\* and James\* Dillon and Burnell\*; his brother Lewis married Gore's\* sister Sidney. In 1641 he was appointed captain in Ormond's regiment and granted a commission to raise 60 men in Wicklow for the suppression of the rebellion. He was lieutenant colonel and captain of a foot company based in Powerscourt in 1641-2 and captain of Kildare's company in 1643. His house at Powerscourt was burnt by the rebels by November 1643.

WILLIAM WRAY (WREY) (1600-1645), Belfast

e.s. Sir William Wray, Treblich, Cornwall, and Elizabeth Courtney; m. 1624, Elizabeth, da. Edward, Lord Chichester, and Anne, da. John Copplestone; Kt. 1634; 2nd. Bart., 1636.

Wray was not the first member of his family to come to Ireland - his uncle, George Courtney, a settler in Limerick, was closely connected to the Croftons\* and to the Boyles\* through his cousin William Courtney.<sup>537</sup> His connection with his constituency was through his marriage to the Chichesters'\* sister; Lord Chichester was sovereign, and therefore returning officer, of Belfast in 1629-40. He was thus also connected to the Fortescues\*. He acted for his father-in-law in negotiations with Wentworth for the composition of the title of Belfast in 1640; he was made a freeman of the Belfast staple in April 1640, after his return.<sup>538</sup> He had another influential Ulster connection, as the Duchess of Buckingham's (Lady Antrim's) second cousin, whose first marriage connected her to his replacement, Wenman\*.

---

<sup>537</sup> The Cornish Wrays should not be confused with the Lincolnshire family, also baronets; the two branches are not known to have been connected. Some Wrays are included in a Derry rental of 1617, but it is not clear to which family they owed their origins.

<sup>538</sup> William was succeeded by his son, Chichester Fortescue, whose estate was said to be worth £700 annually.















